

$\frac{d/u}{y/-}$

9

THE HEBREW NATION
AND
ITS LITERATURE.

WORKS BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

- THE HEBREW SCRIPTURES translated, being a revision of the Authorized English Old Testament ; in 3 vols. ; second edition.
- SHORT NOTES to accompany a revised translation of the Hebrew Scriptures.
- THE NEW TESTAMENT translated from Griesbach's text ; seventh edition.
- THE CHRONOLOGY OF THE BIBLE.
- TEXTS FROM THE HOLY BIBLE explained by the help of the ancient monuments ; second edition.
- CRITICAL NOTES on the Authorized English Version of the New Testament ; second edition.
- THE HISTORY OF EGYPT from the earliest times to the conquest by the Arabs in A.D. 640 ; fifth edition.
- ALEXANDRIAN CHRONOLOGY.
- EGYPTIAN INSCRIPTIONS from the British Museum and other sources ; 216 plates in folio.
- EGYPTIAN HIEROGLYPHICS, being an attempt to explain their nature, origin, and meaning ; with a Vocabulary.
- EGYPTIAN ANTIQUITIES IN THE BRITISH MUSEUM described.
- EGYPTIAN MYTHOLOGY AND EGYPTIAN CHRISTIANITY, with their influence on the opinions of Modern Christendom.
- THE DECREE OF CANOPUS, in Hieroglyphics and Greek, with translations and an explanation of the hieroglyphical characters.
- THE ROSETTA STONE in Hieroglyphics and Greek, with translations and an explanation of the hieroglyphical characters, and followed by an appendix of kings' names.

Jews.
\$532.5h

THE HISTORY
OF
THE HEBREW NATION,
AND
ITS LITERATURE;

THIRD EDITION, ENLARGED;
WITH AN APPENDIX ON THE JOURNEYS AND
EPISTLES OF THE APOSTLE PAUL.

BY
SAMUEL SHARPE,
AUTHOR OF THE "HISTORY OF EGYPT."



112395
26/5/11

LONDON:
JOHN RUSSELL SMITH,
36, SOHO SQUARE.
1876.

P R E F A C E.

THE History of the Hebrew nation must be carefully studied if we would understand the Bible. The Hebrew writings are the well-spring of our religious thoughts ; they furnish the key to the Christian Scriptures, and they are the Ark which during so many centuries has held safe from the attacks of Paganism that great religious truth that the Almighty Creator of the world is One, simple and undivided. But these writings have come down to our time in a very confused condition ; that part of the Bible called the Old Testament contains writings, some of which must be dated in every one of the eleven centuries before the Christian Era. Not only are they put together with very little regard to date, but the writers in many cases did not scruple to weave their new matter into the old fabric. Writings which have been handed down in manuscript, at the mercy of every scribe who made a new copy, were naturally altered from time to time, both by receiving additions, and by suffering curtailment, and again by having two pieces joined into one, or one piece cut into two. It is easy to show cases of all the alterations. Thus the Pentateuch, of which the earliest part may have belonged to David's or Solomon's reign, received additions long after the fall of the monarchy. The Books of Ezra and Nehemiah seem both to have been curtailed of matter that they once contained. The Prophecies of Isaiah cannot have been the work of fewer than six authors living at as many different times ; nor can the short Book of Zechariah be otherwise than made up of writings belonging to three different centuries. Prophecies written after the events have been added to the writings of Jeremiah and others ; they are blots which it is

the critic's business to remove by pointing out. The Psalms belong to every century from David's reign to that of Antiochus Epiphanes. Such being the confused state in which the Hebrew Scriptures have reached us, no commentary on them can be so valuable as the attempt to determine the date of each part. In this way the contradictions in the Laws may be explained by showing that they were written in different ages.

These writings, though religious, are most of them also political, and they speak of the events of the day as if well known to the reader, and without adding such explanation as is now needed. Hence often arises an obscurity which can only be removed by our inquiring into the history of the times. Moreover, they are often purposely obscure; because a writer, living under the tyranny of the Assyrian, or Babylonian, or Greco-Syrian conqueror of his country, wrote always guardedly, and indeed often enigmatically, as when Joel and Amos speak of the Assyrian army under the name of destroying Locusts, and as when Jeremiah gives the name of Sheshak to Babylon, and as when Ezekiel denounces the king of Babylon under the name of the barbarian Gog of the land of Magog. The need of rightly determining the dates of these writings for the benefit of political history may be shown by the Author now having to acknowledge that in his History of Egypt he has quoted Isaiah xix., relating to the civil war and the Jewish altar in that country, as if it were written in the time of the prophet Isaiah.

In determining the age of a Book, the style alone must not be relied upon, because in passing from copier to copier the old form of words may easily have been made more modern. Indeed, it is only on the supposition that such liberty has been very much used by the copier, that we can understand how there is so little difference in the language between the oldest and the latest books. It is by the help of the numerous copies, and of the numerous printed copies in particular, that modern languages are kept from changing more than they do; but the change in the English language during the four hundred years that printing has been in use is greater than that which now appears between the language of the oldest of the Hebrew books and that of the newest. Their age therefore must be determined by their contents

compared with the History ; and of their contents the English reader, if he had a correct translation, could judge almost as well as the Hebrew scholar. For this reason, the Author has woven his description of the Books into a slight history of the Nation ; and in the history he has dwelt chiefly on those facts which throw light on the Literature. He has rarely enlarged on the motives and characters of the kings ; he has rather tried to show the motives of the writers, and thereby to determine the age of their writings. There are some of the Books so wholly free from any mention of events, that it would be rash to try to fix their date within two or three centuries ; such are Solomon's Song, the Book of Jonah, many of the Psalms, and parts of the Pentateuch. But for the larger number of the Books the attempt to say when they were written is by no means hopeless ; and the Author has here done his best to give to each its place in history. In doing this he may often have been mistaken ; and if he has written with an appearance of too great positiveness, it has only been to spare the reader from the ever-needed words of "perhaps" and "it is probable."

We have now no Hebrew manuscript of the Bible older than A.D. 900. About that time a revision of the text was made, and it was so generally accepted as to cause the older copies to be destroyed for the sake of the parchment on which they were written ; as the accepted revision of the Greek Bible in the fifth century was the cause of our losing the older Greek copies.

It is in the Pentateuch that we meet with the greatest difficulty in giving a date to each part, because it has been woven into one continued narrative, and has been put before us as if wholly written before the Israelites entered the land of Canaan. But, as the Levitical Law was unknown to Saul, David, and Solomon, we look to the events of the following reigns for the occasions which may have caused each part to be written ; and there are certain deep lines drawn across the history of the nation which may be traced in these Books, and which enable us to say of many parts, with some certainty, to what period they belong. Such are the deposition of Queen Athaliah by the high priest, the Assyrian invasion, the Captivity in Babylon, and Return from Captivity, and the rebuilding of the Temple. Moreover, it may be safely granted that among the Israelites, as in every

other nation, laws were not written until the occasion for them had arisen. When the king's preparations for the Passover were not finished in time for the fourteenth day of the first month, then, and not before, was the Mosaic law made that, under such circumstances, the feast might be celebrated in the second month. When the priest was authorized by the king to sit as judge, and declare the Judgments of Jehovah, then were those Judgments written into the Law, in continuation of the Ten Commandments. When it was found that the free-will heave offering did not bring in money enough for the support of the Temple and priests in Jerusalem, and that it was necessary to levy a poll-tax, for that express purpose, a law was naturally made to authorize its collection. These laws, indeed, are all said to have been delivered by Jehovah to the Israelites on their march out of Egypt; but this was only the priestly manner of saying that these laws were agreeable to the will of God.

Many of the narratives also seem to have been written for a controversial purpose. Thus, when the northern king set up two golden calves for his people to worship, his conduct is blamed by means of the story of Aaron's golden calf. So when the southern king set up a copper serpent within the Temple-yard of Jerusalem, his conduct is justified by the story of Moses's copper serpent.

Relying upon these and other historic landmarks, the Author has endeavoured to put many of the principal portions of the Pentateuch into chronological order, and has mentioned each portion at the time when it seems to have been written. It is this part of his book for which he must claim most indulgence, as it by no means can be supported with the same certainty as the dates given to the other Books of the Bible.

The larger part of the Books were, no doubt, written in Jerusalem; but not all of them. We shall see reasons, in the course of our History, for thinking that the account of the Garden of Eden in Genesis ii. 4—iv. may have been written in Hebron; the Book of Judges in the land of Ephraim; some part of Joshua in Shechem; some of the Psalms in Babylon, where also the Books of Kings may have been put together; Esther and Daniel i. in Persia; Jeremiah xlv.—xlix., by Baruch, in Egypt; Ezekiel xxvi.—xxvii. and xxix.—xxxii. in Tyre, or one of its dependencies;

Ecclesiastes in Antioch, on the Orontes; and the Book of Job by one who had lived in the desert of Uz, but had returned to Judea after a journey to Egypt and Nubia.

A critical examination of the earlier of the Hebrew writings shows us how very much the writers allowed their imagination to help them in their attempts to reduce tradition into the form of history. When they would speak of the origin of a tribe, they created for it a founder or forefather; and to him they gave the name of the tribe or nation, and joined him, as well as they could, to the tradition which had come down to them. Thus, for every one of the twelve tribes of Israelites, or, with the Levites, of the thirteen tribes, they created a father or patriarch. These are said to be the sons of Israel, as the father of the collected nation must be named Israel. In order to join this on to the tradition, Jacob is declared to be Israel; and as he had a well-known and celebrated son named Joseph, eleven of these patriarchs are called Joseph's brothers, and two of them Joseph's sons. So, as the Edomites are closely related to the Israelites, Edom, their imaginary father, is said to be the same person as Esau, Jacob's brother. The names of Jacob, Esau, and Joseph had come down to them by tradition, more or less trustworthy; but the names of Israel, Edom, Ephraim, Judah, and the rest, are the names of tribes, not of single men. So, from the word *Rechab*, a *chariot*, the Arabs who drove the chariots were called Sons of Rechab, and Rechab became the name of their forefather; and the word *Aron*, an *ark*, seems to have given to the priests who carried the ark the name of the Sons of Aaron. Many names in the early genealogies seem to have been formed in this way.

The great value of the Hebrew books arises, first, from the writers' firm belief in one God as the creator and governor of the world, and from the readiness with which they acknowledge his will as the cause of everything that befalls the nation; and, secondly, from their belief that the voice of conscience was the voice of God, speaking from within, and hence their strong hatred, according to such knowledge as they possessed, of all that they thought evil. Their misfortunes are treated as God's punishment for their sins; their blessings are his rewards for obedience to his laws. The nation's hopeful trust in God appears, with few excep-

tions, in every Book of the Bible. When ruin came upon their country, the Jews never faltered in their trust that they should be taken care of, and that the monarchy would be restored. When on the return from Captivity they met with very little of the expected outward prosperity, their hopes and wishes were turned towards a time when peace and righteousness should reign upon earth. When they were disappointed also in this, they turned their thoughts to a future life of happiness after death. They always looked forward. Devout hope and humble trust in God never failed them. So strong was their trust in God's guidance that they thought that not only conscience but reason also spoke his direct commands. The prophet whose zeal in the cause of justice and religion raised him to become a teacher of his countrymen, claimed to have a message from Jehovah; and the priest who gave answers to the questions that were brought before him, whether of moral duty or of civil justice, spoke in the name of Jehovah. When Jeremiah thinks it well to purchase a field, he says that he does it by command of Jehovah. It is this strong religious feeling which gives to the Hebrew books their value. But as nothing human is free from faults, so even the Bible must be read with judgment and discrimination. The voice of blind passion and of violent selfishness is often mistaken for the voice of conscience; and in these cases also the Hebrews thought, and their writers sometimes tell us, that they spoke the command of God. Thus, when they spoiled the Egyptians, seized upon the lands of the Amorites and Canaanites, and slaughtered the Amalekites, they said that they were obeying the will of Jehovah. But whether they were acting right or wrong, their writings everywhere remind us that we are living under an all-powerful governor. In the earlier writings he is for the most part a God to be feared, and in some a God of the Hebrew nation only; but with the improved views of religion which were gradually opening upon the nation, he becomes, before the fall of the monarchy, a God also to be loved, and a God of all the nations of the world. Hence these writings, not only those of them that are devotional, but those also that are historical and political, have had a most remarkable influence upon the world for good; and have by no means lost their value since the rise of Christianity. Indeed, the New Tes-

tament cannot be properly understood without the previous study of the Hebrew Scriptures.

“Whoever shall understand this had better keep silence.” Such are the words of Aben Ezra in his commentary on the Pentateuch, when coming on one of those passages which, if properly explained, would prove the Book to be more modern than had been usually thought. Such also has been the rule usually followed by commentators, whether Jewish or Christian, who are bound to some standard of orthodoxy. Hence the reader need not be surprised at meeting with much that may be new to him in the following pages. He, however, who would understand the Bible properly, and form a sound opinion about the age of the books, must either go to the original Hebrew or use some translation more correct than the English authorized version. King James’s translators were thinking of theology, not of antiquarian peculiarities; and they wished to make their work readable by the many, rather than instructive to the historic inquirer. Their translation thus conceals from us many interesting particulars, such as that Deuteronomy (i. 1) uses the language of Jerusalem, and says that Moab was “beyond” the Jordan; that the Book of Kings (I. iv. 24) uses the language of Babylon, and says that Solomon’s dominions were “beyond” the river Euphrates; that David’s sons were “priests” (2 Sam. viii. 18); that the heave offering, which was a freewill offering in Exodus xxv. 2, became at a later time, in xxx. 13—15, the fixed tax of half a shekel; and that the Court of the Priests (2 Chron. iv. 9) was a terrace, or raised platform. These instances are enough to show the necessity for a more exact translation of the Bible for those who would understand its contents critically; and if in some few cases the authorized version in the passages referred to in this History seems not wholly to support the statements advanced, these instances of false renderings will plead a possible excuse. The Author usually quotes from his own translation, Second Edition, 1871.

The Author first published his opinion of the age of the several parts of the Bible in his *Historic Notes*, 1854. In that work he described the books nearly in the order in which they stand in the Bible. But further study has led him to change some opinions, and also to believe that the grounds upon which he forms his opinions can be best shown

to the reader by describing the Writings together with the events of history in the order of time, as he has done in this volume.

The Appendix on the Journeys and Epistles of the Apostle Paul is an attempt to place the Epistles in the order in which they may have been written, by comparing them with one another, and with the Acts of the Apostle, as the Hebrew Books are here compared with the History. The smallness of its size must be the apology for adding it to this volume.

32, Highbury Place, *June*, 1875.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

B.C.	PAGE
The early migration of Israel into Canaan - -	1
The escape from lower Egypt - - -	2
Conquest of the Amorites - - -	4
<i>Numb. xxi. 21—30. Poem on Sihon's Conquest of Moab</i>	4
The book of Joshua misleading - - -	5
War with the Syrians - - -	7
The Calebites migrate northward. - - -	7
War with the Moabites, Anmonites, and Amalekites -	7
„ the Philistines - - -	7
„ the Canaanites in Galilee - - -	8
<i>Judges v. Deborah's Song</i> - - -	9
War with the Midianites - - -	10
Gideon, Judge - - -	10
Baal a name of God - - -	11
Tola, Jair, and Jephthah, Judges - - -	11
The tradition of the Flight from Egypt - - -	12
Jephthah's vow - - -	13
Ibzan, Ajalon, Abdon, Judges - - -	14
Judah not independent ; its civilization - - -	14
Hebron the early seat of Levitical learning - - -	15
Religious rites in the South and in the North - -	15
Samson's war against the Philistines - - -	16
1200 Invasion by Rameses II., King of Egypt - - -	16
Emigration of the Danites northward - - -	17
The young Levite chosen for a priest - - -	18
Civil war against the Benjamites - - -	19
State of the country under the Judges - - -	20
The neighbouring tribes - - -	21
The Philistines, Caphtorites, Hyksos, or Shepherds -	21
Edomites, Midianites, and Amalekites not idolaters -	23
ELI Judge at Shiloh in Ephraim - - -	23
The Philistines seize the Ark - - -	24
SAMUEL Judge at Mizpeh in Benjamin - - -	24

B.C.		PAGE
	The Ark is brought back to the City of Jearim -	24
	The improbability of the story ; the name of Jehovah not used in Samuel's towns - -	25
	The City of Jearim, Gibeah of Judah, and the Ark -	26
	<i>Exodus</i> xx. 1—17. <i>The Ten Commandments</i> -	26
	The tribes ask for a king - - -	28
1035	SAUL king of Israel ; to B.C. 1017 - -	28
	He defeats the Ammonites - - -	29
	Is made king at Gilgal - - -	29
	He defeats the Philistines - - -	30
	He sets up an altar to Jehovah on being joined by Judah - - -	31
	The name of Jehovah belongs to Judah - -	31
	<i>The Book of Judges</i> , iii. 7—xii. and xvii. xviii. -	32
	The art of writing not new ; the letters - -	33
	<i>The March out of Egypt, in Exodus and Numbers</i> -	33
	<i>Og king of Bashan, his history</i> - - -	35
	<i>Numb.</i> xxi. 14, 15. <i>The Book of the Wars</i> , the Pen- tateuch - - -	36
	Saul losing favour ; David's rise - - -	37
	Saul jealous of David, Jonathan befriends him -	38
	David flees to Nob, and then to the Philistines -	39
	Saul slays the priests of Jehovah at Nob or Gibeah -	40
	David retreats to the desert - - -	40
	He again joins the Philistines - - -	41
	Saul consults a wise woman with a speaking bottle -	42
	He is defeated and slain by the Philistines - -	43
	Baal, not Jehovah, Saul's name for God - -	43
1016	DAVID king of Judah, at Hebron, to B.C. 975 -	44
1016	ISHBOSHETH king of Israel, at Mahanaim, to B.C. 1014	44
	Israel is defeated by Judah at Gibeon - -	45
	The civil war, Abner's treachery - - -	45
1014	Ishbosheth slain, Israel without a head - -	46
1008	David king of Israel and Judah, to B.C. 975 -	47
	He seizes Jerusalem for his capital - - -	47
	His numerous wives - - -	48
	Saul's family put to death - - -	48
	A Philistine invasion defeated - - -	49
	The Ark of Jehovah brought from Gibeon to Jeru- salem - - -	49
	David takes the Philistine city of Gath - -	50
	He makes Moab, Syria of Damascus, and Edom, tributary - - -	50
	His officers of state ; his sons are priests - -	51
	The people numbered for taxation ; the twelve tribes	52
	The king's sources of income - - -	53
	The Altar to Jehovah at Jerusalem - - -	54

B.C.		PAGE
	He defeats the Ammonites, and takes the city of Rabbah - - - - -	55
	He causes the death of Uriah in order to obtain his wife - - - - -	56
	Absalom kills a brother, and flees to Syria - - - - -	56
	He is allowed to return to Jerusalem - - - - -	56
	He rebels against David - - - - -	57
	David escapes to Mahanaim in Gilead - - - - -	58
	Absalom pursues ; is defeated and slain - - - - -	59
	David's grief for his son - - - - -	60
	He is recalled to Jerusalem - - - - -	60
	Sheba rebels, and is defeated - - - - -	61
	Solomon joint king ; David's death - - - - -	62
	<i>The lost Books of Nathan, Gad, part of our Samuel I.</i> - - - - -	63
	<i>The Book of Psalms</i> - - - - -	64
	<i>2 Sam. i. 19—27, The Book of Jasher</i> - - - - -	65
	<i>Genesis xxxvii. 2—1. ; the Life of Joseph, Elohistic-</i> - - - - -	66
	<i>Genesis xxv. 19—xxxvi. 8 ; the Lives of Isaac, Jacob and Esau</i> - - - - -	68
	<i>The names of the Patriarchs</i> - - - - -	68
	<i>The origin of the Twelve Tribes explained</i> - - - - -	69
	<i>An Elohistic Life of Abraham, Gen. xvii.</i> - - - - -	71
	<i>Exodus vi. 2—9. God reveals his name of Jehovah</i> - - - - -	71
	<i>Genesis ii. 4—iv. Creation by Jehovah, Garden of Eden</i> - - - - -	71
	<i>Genesis xii.—xxv. 11 ; the Jehovistic Life of Abraham</i> - - - - -	72
	<i>Traditions respecting the tribe of Judah</i> - - - - -	74
	<i>Genesis xlix. 29—32, and l. 13 ; Jacob buried near Hebron</i> - - - - -	75
	<i>The later sanction given to the rival altars</i> - - - - -	75
	<i>Psalms cx. ; David advised not to go out to battle</i> - - - - -	75
	The Phenicians of Tyre and Sidon - - - - -	76
976	SOLOMON, king, to B.C. 937 - - - - -	77
	He puts to death Adonijah, Joab, and Shimei - - - - -	78
973	He builds the Temple on Mount Moriah - - - - -	79
	The ark brought in ; the dedication - - - - -	80
	Solomon acts as priest - - - - -	80
	He builds the altar on David's site - - - - -	81
	<i>Exodus xx. 24—26, describes the altar</i> - - - - -	81
	The growth of priestly power - - - - -	82
	The genealogy of the high priest from Eli - - - - -	83
966	The Palace built ; the House of the Forest of Lebanon - - - - -	84
	The castle and wall of Jerusalem - - - - -	84
	Solomon's Egyptian queen ; her dower and palace - - - - -	85
	The trade to Ophir ; the Nubian mines - - - - -	86
	Hiram's reward for his help - - - - -	87

B.C.		PAGE
	Hebrew colonies in Hadramout and Abyssinia	- 87
	Egyptian arts and fashions introduced	- 87
	Solomon's expenses and taxes, his officers	- 88
	The queen of Sheba's visit	- 89
	Solomon's acts of idolatry to please the natives	- 90
	Edom and Damascus rebel ; Solomon's death	- 91
	<i>The Book of Nathan the Prophet</i>	- 92
	<i>The Prophecy of Ahijah of Shiloh</i>	- 92
	<i>The Visions of Iddo the Seer, his Genealogies</i>	- 92
	<i>Genesis i.—ii. 3 ; the Creation by Elohim ; v.—xi. the descent of nations, to Abraham</i>	- 9
	<i>Compared to the Genealogies of Acusilaus and Hecataeus</i>	94
	<i>The Proverbs of Solomon, x.—xxii. 16</i>	- 94
	<i>The Words of the Wise Men, xxii. 17—xxiv.</i>	- 95
	<i>Psalms lxxii., in praise of Solomon</i>	- 95
	<i>Psalms xlv., on Solomon's marriage</i>	- 96
	<i>Psalms ii., Discontent of the subject tribes</i>	- 96
	<i>Genesis xxxvi. 9—43, the Edomites and their kings</i>	- 97
	<i>Genesis xxvii. 40, the revolt of Edom</i>	- 97
	The growth of the Book of Exodus	- 98
	<i>Exodus xii. 1—8 and 43—51, the Passover</i>	- 98
	„ iii.—xi. <i>Aaron and the plagues of Egypt</i>	- 98
	<i>Genesis vi. 1—8, Sons of God and Daughters of Men</i>	- 98
	<i>The Book of Samuel, part of our 1 Sam.</i>	- 99
	<i>Deuteronomy xvii. 14—20, The manner of the Kingdom</i>	99
	<i>Deuteronomy xx. Laws for War</i>	- 100
936	REHOBOAM king of Judah, to B.C. 920	- 100
	His tribute-collector slain in Israel	- 101
932	Shishak king of Egypt plunders Jerusalem	- 101
	The Levites are a strength to Rehoboam	- 102
919	ABIJAH king of Judah, to B.C. 918	- 103
	The king's mother is queen	- 103
	Israel defeated and Beth-el taken	- 104
<hr/>		
936	JEROBOAM king of Israel, to B.C. 916	- 104
	His mother Zeruah	- 104
	Joppa his port, Shechem and Penuel his capitals	- 105
	His golden calves ; the Levites driven away	- 105
	His loss of Beth-el	- 106
	<i>Exodus xxxii.—xxxiv. 9, Aaron's golden calf</i>	- 106
916	NADAB king of Israel, to B.C. 915	- 107
	While fighting against the Philistines he is slain by	-
	Baasha	- 107
915	BAASHA king of Israel, to B.C. 893	- 108
	He regains part of Benjamin	- 108
	Removes his capital to Tirzah	- 108
	Is attacked by Ben-hadad ; Naphtali is lost	- 108

B. C.		PAGE
917	ASA king of Judah, to B.C. 878 - -	- 109
	He is governed by the priests, who rise in power -	- 109
907	The invasion by the Egyptians under Zerah defeated	110
901	Baasha takes the town of Ramah - -	- 110
	Asa sends to Ben-hadad for help - -	- 110
	Asa repairs the altar - - -	- 111
	Physicians are blamed by the priests - -	- 112
	Seers are henceforward called Prophets - -	- 112
<hr/>		
892	ELAH king of Israel, to B.C. 891 - -	- 112
	He attacks the Philistines, is slain by Zimri -	- 112
891	ZIMRI king of Israel, reigns seven days -	- 113
891	OMRI and TIBNI kings of Israel, to B.C. 887 -	- 113
	Omri holds Ephraim and Mannasseh ; Tibni perhaps	
	Penuel and the east of the Jordan - -	- 113
866	OMRI king of Israel, to B.C. 881 - -	- 113
	He removes his capital to Samaria - -	- 113
880	AHAB king of Israel, to B.C. 861 - -	- 114
	He marries Jezebel of Tyre, and worships Baal -	- 114
	He puts to death the prophets of Jehovah, after the	
	decree of Omri - - -	- 114
	Ben-hadad II. attacks him, and is defeated -	- 115
	Jericho is fortified by Ahab against Judah -	- 116
871	Ahab's alliance with Jehoshaphat - -	- 117
	Ahab's sons' names ; the worship of Jehovah allowed	118
	The death of Eth-baal - - -	- 118
	Ahab is slain in battle by the Syrians - -	- 119
	Table of queen Jezebel's family - -	- 119
861	AHAZIAH king of Israel ; the Moabites revolt -	- 119
860	JEHORAM king of Israel, to B.C. 850 - -	- 120
	He wars against Moab - - -	- 120
	The Syrian invasion stopped by a noise in heaven -	- 121
	The Levites and the worship of Jehovah restored -	- 121
	Jehoram and the king of Judah slain by Jehu -	- 122
<hr/>		
877	JEHOSHAPHAT king of Judah, to B.C. 853 - -	- 122
	His ships on the Red Sea broken up - -	- 123
875	The Levites teach the worship of Jehovah through-	
	out Judah - - -	- 123
	The priests act as judges, the Levites are their	
	servants - - -	- 123
	Jehoram, his son, reigns with him - -	- 124
	<i>The lost Book of Jehu, the son of Hanani</i> - -	- 124
	<i>Psalm lxxviii., the defeat of the Syrians on mount</i>	
	<i>Zalmon</i> - - -	- 124
	The name of Jah used for Jehovah - -	- 125

B.C.		PAGE
	<i>Exodus xviii., Moses joins to himself judges</i> -	126
	<i>Exodus xxi.—xxiii. 19, the judgments of Jehovah</i> -	126
	„ <i>xxiii. 20—33, the condition of the Canaanites</i> -	127
	<i>Exodus xv., the song of Moses</i> -	127
856	JEHORAM king of Judah. He reigns jointly with his father, and then four years alone -	128
	Edom and Libnah in the South Country revolt -	128
849	AHAZIAH king of Judah -	128
	He is killed by Jehu -	129
849	ATHALIAH queen of Judah, to B.C. 844 -	129
	She slays her step-sons and makes herself queen -	129
	She is slain by order of the priest -	130
843	JEHOASH king of Judah, to B.C. 805 -	130
	His coronation ; the Tables of the Law -	130
	He is governed by Jehoiada the priest -	130
	A poll-tax levied for the temple -	130
	Tithes may have been collected by the priests -	131
	Zechariah the next priest is slain -	132
	Hazael of Syria is bought off from invading -	132
	Jehoash is slain -	132
	<i>Exodus xxv.—xl.—The Heave offerings</i> -	132
	„ <i>xxx. 11—16, the poll-tax of half a shekel</i> -	133
	„ <i>xxvii. 20—xxix.—Aaron and his sons are priests</i> -	133
	„ <i>xxxv. 4—xl., the tabernacle described</i> -	133
	<i>Leviticus i.—xi. and xxi., xxii., the ceremonial laws for Aaron and his sons ; the corban, or gift</i> -	134
	<i>The history of the Pentateuch</i> -	135
	<i>Numbers i.—xxi., the ceremonial laws ; priests superior to Levites</i> -	136
	„ <i>xvi.—xvii. The Levites' rank ; the tithes</i> -	136
	<i>Sins of ignorance in Numbers xv. 22—31.</i> -	137
<hr/>		
849	JEHU king of Israel, to B.C. 822 -	138
	He kills the priests of Baal -	139
	The Syrians overrun Israel, and hold all on the east of Jordan -	139
	Jezebel's great niece Dido founds Carthage -	139
	<i>Genesis xii. 7, altar to Jehovah at Shechem</i> -	139
	<i>Judges vi.—The altar to Baal destroyed</i> -	140
	<i>Genesis vii. 1—5, and viii. 20—22, Noah's sacrifice</i> -	140
821	JEHOAHAAZ king of Israel, to B.C. 805 -	140
	He in part defeats the Syrians -	140
807	JEHOASH king of Israel, to B.C. 793 -	141
	He recovers some of his territory -	141
	He renews the war with Judah, and plunders Jerusalem -	141
804	JEROBOAM II. king of Israel, to B.C. 765 -	141
	He recovers his northern territory -	141

B.C.		PAGE
	The population of the two kingdoms - - -	141
764	ZACHARIAH king of Israel ; he is murdered by Shallum	142
	Jonah the prophet lives - - -	142
<hr/>		
806	AMAZIAH king of Judah, to B.C. 778 - - -	142
	He conquers the city of Petra ; he renews the war with Israel - - -	142
	Is taken prisoner by Jehoash ; the wall of Jerusalem is broken down - - -	143
801	AZARIAH or UZZIAH king of Judah, to B.C. 750 - - -	143
	He is guided by Zechariah the prophet - - -	143
	He defeats the Philistines, and rebuilds the wall of Jerusalem - - -	143
	He enters the Holy of Holies, and is deposed as a leper	144
	<i>Leviticus xii.—xv. The Law of Leprosy</i> - - -	145
<hr/>		
763	SHALLUM king of Israel - - -	145
	He is killed in Samaria by Menahem - - -	145
763	MENAHM king of Israel, to B.C. 753 - - -	145
	The rise of the Assyrians, they conquer Syria - - -	146
	Pul king of Assyria is bought off from invading Israel	146
	The Chaldees are removed to the Persian Gulf - - -	146
	<i>Zechariah xi.—Three shepherds of Israel cut off</i> - - -	147
752	PEKAHIAH king of Israel, to B.C. 751 - - -	147
	He is killed by Pekah - - -	147
750	PEKAH king of Israel, to B.C. 731 - - -	147
	He joins the Syrians against Judah - - -	148
	The Assyrians conquer Galilee and Gilead, and carry away their captives - - -	148
	<i>Genesis xix. 29—38 against Moab and Ammon</i> - - -	149
731	Pekah is killed by Hoshea - - -	149
<hr/>		
749	JOTHAM king of Judah, to B.C. 734 - - -	149
	He strengthens Jerusalem, and defeats the Ammonites	149
	<i>Psalms xviii.—His thanksgiving for victory</i> - - -	381
741	AHAZ king of Judah, to B.C. 726 - - -	150
	He is attacked by Israel and Syria, and also by the Edomites and the Philistines - - -	150
	He invites the Assyrians to help him - - -	150
	His new Ariel-altar on Mount Moriah - - -	151
	He makes his son pass through the fire - - -	151
	He erects a sun-dial in Jerusalem - - -	152
	The inexact division of time, the months - - -	152
	The copper serpent, the Nehushtan - - -	152
	<i>Numbers xxi. 5—9. Moses's Serpent</i> - - -	153
	<i>The Prophet Joel against the Assyrians</i> - - -	153
	The writings of the prophets - - -	155
	<i>Psalms lxi. and lxiii. written by captives</i> - - -	156
	<i>Isaiah i.—x. 4, his visions</i> - - -	157

B.C.		PAGE
	Cheaper materials for writing, the papyrus -	158
730	HOSHEA king of Israel, to B.C. 722 -	159
	He rebels against Assyria, and asks help of Egypt -	160
722	Israel is conquered, and carried into captivity -	161
	The Assyrians allow the worship of Jehovah at Beth-el -	161
	The population that remain -	162
	<i>The prophet Amos; Pekah nicknamed Jeroboam</i> -	162
	<i>Tithes received by the priests of Beth-el every third year</i> -	163
	<i>Genesis xxviii. 10—22, Jacob vows tithes to Jehovah at Beth-el</i> -	163
	<i>Genesis xii. 8, Abraham's altar to Jehovah at Beth-el</i> -	163
	Enigmatical names used in prudence -	164
	The land of Canaan open to invaders -	165
727	HEZEKIAH king of Judah, to B.C. 699 -	165
	The High Places put down -	166
	The purification of the Temple -	166
	Passover in the second month -	167
	The Simeonites attack the Mæonites and the Amalekites -	167
	Hezekiah routs the Philistines -	168
714	Sennacherib invades Judea -	168
	His line of march; he threatens captivity -	168
	Hezekiah's walls; his pool -	170
	Hezekiah had fled from Jerusalem -	170
	Sennacherib's army retreats from Pelusium -	171
	Moab is plundered by the Assyrians -	172
	Israelites flee to the southern desert and Egypt -	172
	Hezekiah's illness; Isaiah promises his recovery -	173
	Levites and priests made equal -	173
	The rise of Babylon -	174
	<i>Leviticus xvi. Purification of the Sanctuary; the Scapegoat</i> -	175
	„ xvii. <i>The High Places forbidden</i> -	176
	<i>Psalms lxxxiii., the enemies of Judah</i> -	176
	<i>Psalms xli., Hezekiah's pool and conduit</i> -	176
	<i>Psalms xlviii., the Assyrians retreat from the city</i> -	177
	<i>Psalms lxxvi., Sennacherib's army routed at Pelusium</i> -	177
	<i>Psalms lxxviii., Ephraim in captivity</i> -	177
	<i>Isaiah xxiii., on Tyre, Sidon, and Tarsus</i> -	178
	<i>Isaiah xxviii., against Ephraim</i> -	178
	<i>Isaiah xxix., mentions the Ariel-altar</i> -	178
	<i>Isaiah x. 5—34, against the Assyrians</i> -	178
	<i>Isaiah xiv. 24—xvii., against the neighbouring nations</i> -	179
	<i>Isaiah xxii., addressed to Jerusalem</i> -	179
	<i>Isaiah xxx., xxxi., against fleeing to Egypt</i> -	179

B.C.

PAGE

	<i>Isaiah xxxvi.—xxxix., historical</i>	-	-	-	179
	<i>Genesis x. 22—xi. 9, corrections to the Descent of Nations</i>	-	-	-	180
	<i>Genesis xxv. 1—6, and 12—18, the Arab children of Abraham</i>	-	-	-	181
	<i>Numbers xxxiii. The journeys of the Israelites</i>	-	-	-	182
	<i>Genesis xx. xxi. Abraham at Beer-sheba</i>	-	-	-	182
	<i>„ xiv. 1—16. Abraham defeats the four kings</i>	-	-	-	182
	<i>Numbers ix. 1—14, the Passover in the second month</i>	-	-	-	183
	<i>„ vii., viii., the gifts to the altar</i>	-	-	-	183
	<i>„ xvi. Korah the Levite punished</i>	-	-	-	183
	<i>The reformation proposed by Amos and Isaiah</i>	-	-	-	184
	<i>Numbers xxii.—xxiii. 26, Balaam and Balak</i>	-	-	-	184
	<i>Psalms lxxxvii. calls Egypt the Boaster</i>	-	-	-	184
	<i>The nation called Jacob rather than Israel</i>	-	-	-	184
	<i>Proverbs xxv.—xxix., written for Hezekiah</i>	-	-	-	185
	<i>The Prophet Micah, except iv.—v. and vii.</i>	-	-	-	186
	<i>Zechariah, chap. ix.—x., against Assyria</i>	-	-	-	186
	<i>The Prophet Hosea, against Israel and Beth-el</i>	-	-	-	187
	<i>Genesis xii. 10—xiii. 4, Abraham visits Egypt</i>	-	-	-	188
	<i>Genesis xxvi. Isaac at Beer-sheba</i>	-	-	-	188
698	MANASSEH king of Judah, to B.C. 644	-	-	-	188
	He allows the High Places	-	-	-	189
	Is taken captive to Babylon by the king of Assyria	-	-	-	189
	On his return he stops the idolatry	-	-	-	190
	The lofty wall to the Temple-yard	-	-	-	190
	<i>Isaiah vii. 8, a further destruction of Ephraim</i>	-	-	-	190
643	AMON king of Judah, to B.C. 642	-	-	-	192
	He is put to death by his servants	-	-	-	192
641	Josiah king of Judah, to B.C. 611	-	-	-	192
630	The High Places forbidden	-	-	-	192
624	The House of Jehovah repaired ; the new Ark	-	-	-	193
	The Book of the Law found	-	-	-	194
	The independence of Babylon ; the southern Chaldeans	-	-	-	196
	The inroads of the Scythians	-	-	-	197
	<i>Described in Jeremiah iv. and v., and Deut. xxviii.</i>	-	-	-	197
	The rise of the Medes	-	-	-	198
612	Nineveh conquered by Babylon ; Judea free from tribute	-	-	-	199
	The Egyptian invasion ; Josiah slain	-	-	-	199
	<i>Deuteronomy iv. 44—xviii. 8, its improved moral law</i>	-	-	-	200
	<i>„ xxviii.—xxx., the blessings and the curses</i>	-	-	-	202
	<i>xxix. 33, Admah and Zebim destroyed</i>	-	-	-	202
	<i>Numbers xxviii. xxix., National celebration of the feasts</i>	-	-	-	203
	<i>Some weeks have eight days</i>	-	-	-	203

B.C.		PAG
	<i>Numb. xxvi. 4—62, The noble families registered</i>	- 204
	<i>The Book of Nahum, Nineveh destroyed</i>	- 205
610	JEHOAHAZ king of Judah	- 206
	He is carried prisoner to Egypt, <i>Deut. xxviii. 68</i>	- 206
610	JEHOIAKIM king of Judah, to B.C. 601 ; tribute to Egypt	- 207
607	The Babylonians defeat the Egyptians and gain Judea	207
	Jeremiah rebukes the people	- 208
603	Jehoiakim rebels, and is put to death	- 209
	Achbor made Babylonian Pasha of Moab	- 210
	<i>Joshua vii., Achor steals a Babylonian robe</i>	- 210
	<i>Genesis xxxviii., The base birth of Pharez and Zarah</i>	210
	<i>The Book of Habakkuk</i>	- 211
	<i>Ezekiel xix., a lament for Jehohaz and Jehoiakim</i>	- 212
	<i>Zephaniah i. and ii.</i>	- 212
600	JEHOIACHIN king of Judah	- 212
	Nebuchadnezzar carries the Jews into captivity	- 213
	The 8th of Nebuchadnezzar called the 1st of Captivity	213
	<i>Zechariah xii.—xiv., on the death of Josiah</i>	- 213
599	ZEDEKIAH is made king by Nebuchadnezzar, to B.C. 589	- 214
	The temple service conducted by the elders	- 215
596	Zedekiah visits Babylon	- 215
591	He rebels, is besieged in Jerusalem	- 215
	Nebuchadnezzar's line of march	- 216
	Zedekiah gives freedom to the bond-servants	- 216
	The Egyptians unable to relieve him	- 217
589	The city taken, the monarchy ended	- 217
	<i>Deuteronomy xxviii.—xxx. added to</i>	- 218
	„ xiv. 22—29, a correction of xii. 18	- 218
	„ xv. 1—18, bond-servants to be released	- 218
	„ xxxi. 9—13, close of the Book	- 381
	The state of parties among the Jews	- 219
	<i>The Book of Joshua</i>	- 220
	<i>Ezekiel i—xii., his visions</i>	- 222
	„ xiii.—xiv. 11, against the prophets	- 223
	„ xv., xvi., against Jerusalem and Judea	- 223
	„ xx.—xxv. The nation is threatened	- 223
	„ xxix. 1—13., against Egypt for not helping the Jews	- 223
	„ xxxii. 17—32, against Egypt : hell is described	223
	„ xxxiii. 21, 22. The city is destroyed	- 224
	<i>Jeremiah i.—xvii. 18 ; under Josiah and Jehoiakim</i>	- 224
	„ xxvi. ; xviii.—xx ; xxxv.—xxxvi., under Jehoiakim	- 225
	„ xxii., under Zedekiah	- 225

	PAGE
<i>Jeremiah</i> xxvii.—xxix.; xxiii. 9—xxiv.; xxxiv.; xxi.; xxxii. 1—35; xxxvii., xxxviii.; xxxix.—xliii.	226
„ lli., <i>the same as 2 Kings</i> xxiv. 18—xxv.; <i>of Zedekiah</i>	227
<i>Psalms</i> xxxi., <i>perhaps by Jeremiah</i> - - -	228
<i>The Lamentations</i> i.—iii. - - -	228
NEBUCHADNEZZAR, king of Babylon, reigns over Judea	229
590 Jerusalem destroyed by the Chaldees - - -	229
589 Gedaliah made governor; he is slain - - -	229
A remnant, with Jeremiah, flee to Egypt - - -	230
585 More captives sent to Babylon - - -	230
Edomites, Moabites, and Philistines plunder - - -	230
<i>The Book of Obadiah against Edom</i> - - -	231
The Jewish school in Heliopolis - - -	232
<i>Jeremiah</i> xlv.—xlix. 33., <i>written by Baruch</i> - - -	232
THE JEWS IN CAPTIVITY - - -	233
The new fast days - - -	233
<i>Psalms</i> xiv., liii., and lxxxix. <i>by captives</i> - - -	234
<i>Psalms</i> xlii., xliii., lxxx., <i>with recurring burdens</i> - - -	235
<i>Psalms</i> xxxix., xxxviii., <i>during the captivity</i> - - -	235
<i>Ezekiel</i> xxvi. and xxix.—xxxii. 16. <i>Tyre and Egypt to</i> <i>be conquered by Nebuchadnezzar</i> - - -	235
„ xxvii., <i>The trade of Tyre</i> - - -	236
564 EVIL-MERODACH, king of Babylon - - -	237
The captives better treated - - -	237
<i>Psalms</i> cvi. <i>God had made the captives to be pitied</i> - - -	237
<i>Jeremiah</i> xliv. <i>The Jews in Egypt blamed</i> - - -	238
THE WAR OF MEDES AND PERSIANS AGAINST BABYLON - - -	238
<i>Jeremiah</i> xxv. 15—38. <i>The nations threatened</i> - - -	238
Elam conquered by Persia from Babylon - - -	239
<i>First Isaiah of the Captivity</i> , xiii.—xiv. 23 - - -	240
<i>The mythology of Hell</i> - - -	240
<i>Second Isaiah of the Captivity</i> , xxxii.—xxxv. - - -	241
<i>Joel</i> iii. 18—21, <i>threatens Egypt and Edom</i> - - -	241
<i>Ezekiel</i> xxxviii. xxxix. <i>Gog is threatened</i> - - -	241
<i>Zephaniah</i> iii. <i>The return hoped for</i> - - -	242
538 The Medes and Persians under Cyrus conquer Babylon - - -	242
<i>Jeremiah</i> xlix. 34—li. <i>against Elam and on the fall</i> <i>of Babylon</i> - - -	243
<i>Jeremiah</i> xxx. <i>promises a king of the line of David</i> - - -	244
<i>Isaiah</i> xxi. and xxiv.—xxvii. <i>on the fall of Babylon</i> - - -	244
<i>Isaiah of the Return Home</i> xi., xii. <i>peace and happi-</i> <i>ness promised</i> - - -	245
<i>Psalms</i> cxxxvii. <i>Babylon conquered, Edom threatened</i> - - -	245
<i>Lamentation</i> iv. <i>Edom overrun by an enemy</i> - - -	246
THE RETURN FROM CAPTIVITY - - -	246

B.C.		PAGE
537	Prince ZERUBBABEL leads home the captives from Babylon ; Jeshua high priest - - -	247
	Those from Syria have no genealogies - - -	248
	The state of the country ; Israel lost in Judah - - -	248
	The captives on their return - - -	249
	The altar is rebuilt - - -	251
	Jealousy between the Captives and the inhabitants stops the building of the temple - - -	251
	<i>Isaiah of the Return Home</i> , xl.—lv. - - -	253
	<i>Zerubbabel the Servant of Jehovah</i> - - -	254
	<i>Psalm lxxxiv.</i> , joy on their journey home - - -	255
	<i>Psalm cxxvi.</i> , joy on the return, a song of the steps - - -	255
	Prophecies written after the events - - -	256
	<i>Jeremiah</i> xvi. 14—15 ; xxvii. 7, on the return - - -	256
	xxiii. 1—8 ; xxxii. 36—xxxiii. a Branch raised up - - -	256
	xxv. 1—14 ; xxix. 10—14, the Seventy weeks - - -	256
	<i>Joel</i> ii. 28—iii. 8. the captives brought home - - -	257
	<i>Amos</i> ix. 11—15, the temple shall be built - - -	257
	<i>Micah</i> iv. v., a ruler out of Bethlehem - - -	257
	<i>Isaiah</i> ii. 1—4, copied from <i>Micah</i> iv. 1—3 - - -	257
	<i>Isaiah</i> iv. 2—6, a Branch raised up - - -	257
	<i>Psalm cii.</i> , while the city is in ruins] - - -	258
	<i>Psalm lxix.</i> , Zion will be rebuilt - - -	258
	Mythology gained from Babylon ; hell - - -	259
	Disappointment after the return - - -	260
	<i>Psalm cxx.</i> , discomfort in Jerusalem - - -	261
	<i>Isaiah</i> xvii. 4—11. Jacob is made thin - - -	261
	<i>Isaiah</i> xviii. The Jews in Abyssinia - - -	261
	<i>Psalms</i> xl., xxxv., lxx. - - -	262
	The Alphabetical <i>Psalms</i> xxv., xxxiv., xxxvii., cxi., cxii., cxix., and cxlv. - - -	262
	<i>Psalm</i> xix. 7—14, like cxix. - - -	263
	<i>Proverbs</i> i.—ix., the Introduction ; wisdom personi- fied - - -	263
	The Book of Job, to justify the Ways of God to man - - -	264
	Its knowledge of modern arts ; the writer's travels - - -	266
	Its borrowing from other writers - - -	268
	The belief in Satan - - -	270
	God works in the north - - -	271
	The Jews in Persia - - -	271
	Zoroaster reforms the Persian religion - - -	272
	<i>Daniel</i> i. His life in Babylon - - -	272
521	Darius king of Persia - - -	273
520	The building of the temple begun - - -	273
	<i>Ezekiel</i> xiv. 12—23 ; xvii., xviii. Improved moral views - - -	274

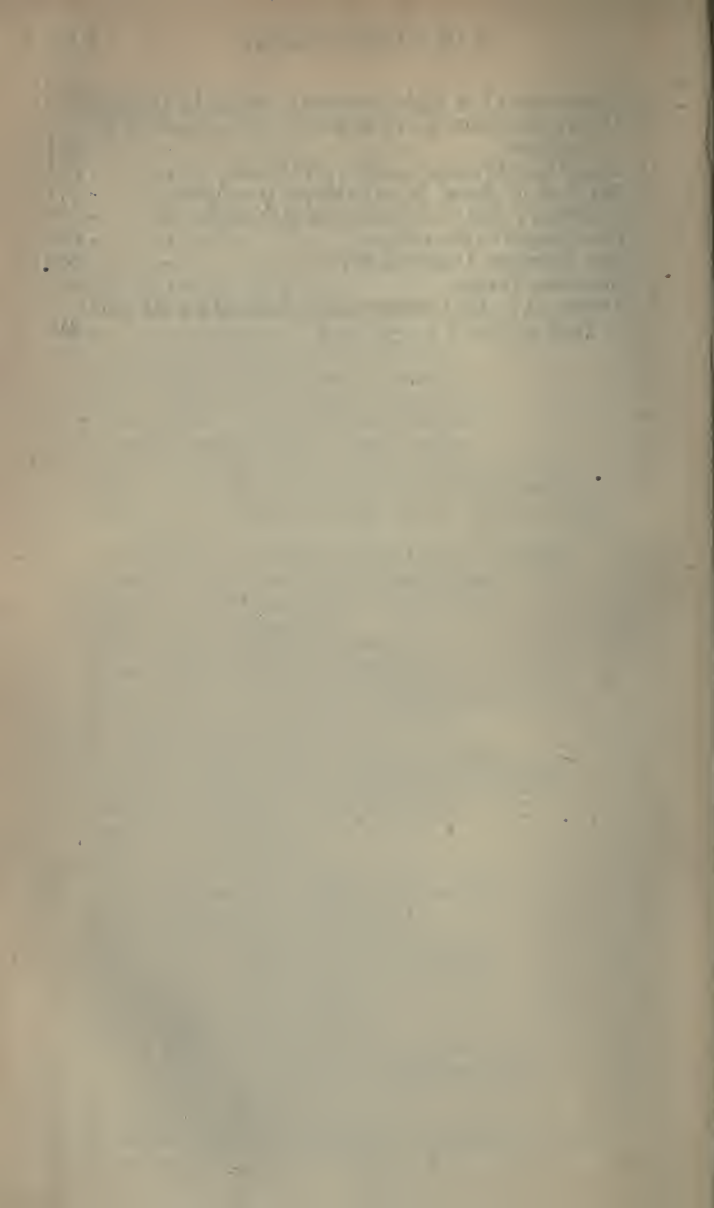
B.C.		PAGE
	Ezekiel xxviii. <i>Tyre and Sidon to be conquered by the Persians</i> - - - -	275
	„ xxxiii.—xxxvii. <i>The dry bones of the nation to come to life</i> - - - -	275
	„ xl.—xliv., <i>the form of the temple</i> - - - -	277
	„ xlv.—xlvi., <i>proposed division of land</i> - - - -	279
	<i>Psalm cxxvii., on building the temple</i> - - - -	280
	<i>Psalm cxvi., praise to Jehovah</i> - - - -	280
	<i>Psalm cxxxii., the ark placed in the temple</i> - - - -	280
	<i>Psalm xxiv. 7—10. The ark is brought into the temple</i> - - - -	281
	<i>Psalm cxxxvi., at the dedication</i> - - - -	281
	<i>Zechariah i.—viii., Zerubbabel the Branch</i> - - - -	281
	<i>The origin of the title “The Branch”</i> - - - -	282
	<i>The prophecy of Haggai, on rebuilding the temple</i> - - - -	283
	<i>Psalm cix. borrows from Haggai</i> - - - -	283
489?	<i>The death of Zerubbabel ; and of Jeshua</i> - - - -	283
	<i>Isaiah lvi. 9—lix. the righteous man hath perished, there is no intercessor</i> - - - -	283
	<i>Micah vii. The godly man hath perished</i> - - - -	284
479	<i>EZRA, high priest and governor of Judea</i> - - - -	285
	<i>He brings back more of the captives</i> - - - -	286
	<i>Foreign wives divorced</i> - - - -	286
	<i>The Law read and explained to the people</i> - - - -	287
	<i>Ezra’s son marries an Egyptian princess</i> - - - -	288
	<i>The Book of Ezra, the letters of the Persian kings</i> - - - -	288
	<i>1 and 2 Samuel ; 1 and 2 Kings</i> - - - -	289
	<i>The word “Bless” used for “Curse”</i> - - - -	290
	<i>The word Naham, an inspired speech</i> - - - -	291
	<i>Numbers xxiii. 27—xxiv. 14. Balaam’s Inspired Speech</i> - - - -	292
	<i>Proverbs xxx.—xxxi. 9, the words of Agar and Lemuel</i> - - - -	292
	<i>Psalm xxxvi., the word Naham</i> - - - -	292
	<i>Deut. xviii. 9—xxvii. Improved moral views</i> - - - -	293
	<i>The condition of women</i> - - - -	294
	<i>Deut. xxxiii. Moses’s poetical blessing</i> - - - -	295
	„ xxxi. 16—20 and 30—xxxii. 44, <i>the Song of Moses</i> - - - -	296
	<i>Proverbs xxxi. 10—31, praise of a virtuous woman</i> - - - -	296
	<i>The Book of Esther ; she persuades the king to favour the Jews</i> - - - -	297
	<i>Jeremiah xxxi., a woman persuades a man</i> - - - -	298
468	<i>Eliashib chief priest ; a blank in the history</i> - - - -	299
445	<i>NEHEMIAH, governor of Judea</i> - - - -	299
	<i>He obtains leave to build the wall of Jerusalem</i> - - - -	300

B.C.		PAGE
	The Samaritans oppose ; the wall is built - -	300
	Bond-servants released - - - -	301
	The Law read to the people - - - -	302
	The Levites have the tithes ; the Temple has the tithe of the tithes and poll-tax of a third of a shekel - - - - -	302
	The Sanhedrim of priests, Levites, and nobles -	303
433	Nehemiah returns to Susa - - - -	303
	The mildness of the Persian despotism - -	304
	The Levites hold land - - - -	305
	<i>Leviticus xviii.—xx., xxiii.—xxvii., bond-servants to be released ; tithes to be paid to Jehovah. The week has seven days exactly - - - -</i>	305
	<i>Exodus xvi. 16—30 ; xxxi. 12—17 ; xxxv. 1—3. The Sabbath to be kept - - - -</i>	307
	<i>Numbers xxxiv.—xxxvi., the Levitical cities - -</i>	307
	<i>Joshua xv. 2—4, the boundaries of the land - -</i>	307
	<i>Joshua xiv. and xv. 13—19, Caleb the son of Jeph- unneh - - - -</i>	308
	<i>Joshua xx.—xxii., the Levitical cities ; the altar of Gilgal - - - -</i>	308
	<i>Judges ii. 6—iii., in continuation of Joshua - -</i>	308
	<i>Deuteronomy i.—iv. 43, the introduction - -</i>	309
	PORTION, a title of God - - - -	309
	1 and 2 Chronicles - - - -	310
	<i>The Books therein quoted, the genealogies - -</i>	310
	<i>The Book of Nehemiah - - - -</i>	313
	<i>Exodus xxiv. 1—11, the seventy elders - -</i>	314
	<i>Numbers xi. 16—30, seventy elders - -</i>	314
	„ xv. 32—36. <i>The Sabbath to be kept - -</i>	314
	<i>Jeremiah xvii. 19—27, the sabbath to be kept - -</i>	314
	<i>Micah vii. 11—13, the walls to be rebuilt - -</i>	314
	<i>Isaiah lx.—lxii., the walls are rebuilt - -</i>	315
	<i>Isaiah lvi. 1—8, the sabbath to be kept - -</i>	315
	<i>Isaiah lxiii. 1—6, Edomites slaughtered - -</i>	315
	<i>The history of Elijah and Elisha - - - -</i>	316
	The man of God ; the perfect religious life - -	318
	<i>The Book of Malachi forbids divorce - - - -</i>	319
	The history of tithes - - - -	320
	<i>Psalms li. 18—19, the building of the walls - -</i>	321
	<i>Psalms cxlvii. on the walls of Jerusalem - -</i>	322
	<i>Psalms cxviii., cxv., cxxxv., distinguish between Jews and devout men - - - -</i>	322
	<i>Psalms lxii. iv. ; lxvi., xxxvi., xlix., Deut. xxxii. 8 ; sons of Adam distinguished from sons of men - -</i>	323
	<i>Psalms xlix. and xvi., on a future life - - - -</i>	324
	The schools of learning - - - -	325
	The Books collected by Nehemiah - - - -	326

B.C.		PAGE
433	Nehemiah in Susa - - -	327
	Eliashib's grandson marries a Samaritan -	327
	<i>Numb. xii. 1—15. Moses's foreign marriage</i> -	327
	<i>The Book of Ruth, David descended from a Moabite</i> -	327
	<i>The Book of Jonah, Nineveh spared</i> -	328
420?	Nehemiah is governor of Judea a second time -	329
	<i>Nehemiah xiii., and other passages added</i> -	330
	The Hebrew books edited ; the characters -	330
	Eliashib's grandson banished - - -	332
408	The Samaritan temple built - - -	333
	<i>The Samaritan Pentateuch and Alphabet</i> -	333
	The controversy about mount Ebal and mount Gerizim - - -	334
	<i>Deuteronomy xxvii. 4, altered in jealousy</i> -	335
	<i>Joshua viii. 30—35, justifies the alteration</i> -	335
	<i>Samaritan additions to support their reading</i> -	336
372	The high priest Jonathan kills his brother -	336
332	Alexander the Great at Tyre - - -	337
	<i>Nehemiah xii., the genealogy of the priests</i> -	337
323	The Jews fall under Syria and Egypt -	338
	<i>Genesis ix. 26, 27, Japheth in the tents of Shem</i> -	338
	The succession of the chief priests -	339
	<i>The Septuagint, the Greek Bible; its peculiarities</i> -	339
	The chief priests ; they farm the taxes -	342
220	<i>The Book of Ecclesiastes, Epicurean philosophy</i> -	343
	<i>Psalm xxxii. a penitential hymn</i> -	345
	<i>Jeremiah x. 1—16, against idolatry</i> -	345
	<i>Psalm cxliv., with borrowed lines</i> -	345
202	Antiochus the Great gains Palestine -	346
	Joseph farmer of the taxes ; Hyrcanus in Heshbon -	346
	<i>The Song of Solomon ; its versification</i> -	347
	<i>The wisdom of Jesus the son of Sirach, in Greek</i> -	348
175	ANTIOCHUS EPIPHANES, his tyranny -	349
	Greek manners forced upon the Jews -	349
170	Antiochus conquers Egypt - - -	350
	Civil war between rival high priests -	350
169	Antiochus plunders the temple of Jerusalem -	350
	<i>Isaiah xx. Egypt under Antiochus</i> -	351
167	The daily sacrifices stopped - - -	351
	The Jews ordered to eat swine's flesh ; the Books of the Law burnt - - -	351
167	Jews flee to Egypt - - -	352
	<i>Greek additions to the Book of Esther</i> -	352
	<i>Daniel ii.—vi., Nebuchadnezzar's dreams, Elohistic</i> -	352
	„ vii., in Chaldee ; <i>Daniel's vision. Elohistic</i> -	353
	„ vii. 9—14., <i>a Christian addition</i> -	354
	„ viii., <i>Daniel's vision in Susa. Elohistic</i> -	354
	„ x.—xii., <i>vision in Cyrus's reign. Elohistic</i> -	354

B.C.		PAGE
	<i>Daniel</i> ii.—vi., originally Greek - - -	355
	<i>Psalms</i> lxxiv., on the destruction of the temple - -	355
	<i>Psalms</i> lxxix., on the city in ruins - - -	356
	<i>Psalms</i> lxxxv., after the captivity ; prays for relief from oppression - - - - -	356
	<i>Isaiah</i> lxiii. 7—lxvi., on eating swine's flesh - -	357
	<i>Lamentations</i> v. - - - - -	358
166	THE REVOLT ; JUDAS THE MACCABEE - - -	358
	The Syrians defeated - - - - -	359
	Judas takes Jerusalem, but not the castle - -	359
	The Temple cleansed ; the Feast of Dedication -	360
	The Sacred Books collected and edited - - -	360
	The Edomites hold the south country- - -	361
	Galilee and men from Gilead join Judas - -	361
	Judas makes a treaty with the Romans - - -	362
	Maccabee, perhaps from Cocab, a Star - - -	363
	<i>Numbers</i> xxiv. 14—19, a star to rise out of Jacob -	363
	<i>Numbers</i> xxiv. 21—22, Kenites wasted by Asshur -	364
	<i>Numbers</i> xxiv. 23—24, ships from Chittim afflict Asshur - - - - -	364
	1 <i>Chronicles</i> v. 1, 2, the birthright given to Joseph -	364
	<i>Psalms</i> lxxv. the recovery of Jerusalem hoped for -	364
	<i>Psalms</i> lx. and cviii., during the struggle - -	365
	<i>Psalms</i> xliv., in complaint - - - - -	366
	<i>Psalms</i> xxii., against the Syrians - - - - -	366
	<i>Psalms</i> lxxxi. Joseph spelt Jeho-seph - - -	366
	<i>Zechariah</i> ix. 11—17, against the Greeks of Syria -	367
	JONATHAN succeeds Judas as leader - - -	367
152	He obtains peace from Syria - - - - -	367
	Parts of Galilee and of Samaria join Judea - -	367
149	The deposed Onias IV. builds a temple in Egypt -	367
	Jonathan slain, Simon succeeds him - - -	368
	<i>Psalms</i> x. a complaint - - - - -	368
	<i>Psalms</i> ix. more hopeful - - - - -	368
142	THE JEWS INDEPENDENT - - - - -	369
	SIMON, high priest and leader of the Jews - -	369
	He takes the castle of Jerusalem - - - -	369
	His coinage with Samaritan writing - - - -	370
	<i>Isaiah</i> xviii. 7, Abyssinia will send tribute - -	371
	<i>Isaiah</i> xix. 16—25, independence asserted - -	371
135	JOHN HYRCANUS chief priest - - - - -	373
	The Pharisees and Sadducees - - - - -	373
106	JUDAS ARISTOBULUS king of the Jews - - -	373
105	ALEXANDER JANNÆUS, his son, succeeds him - -	373
76	ALEXANDRA, his widow, to B.C. 69 - - - -	373
69	HYRCANUS II., her son, king - - - - -	373
65	ARISTOBULUS II., her younger son, and his son, ALEX- ANDER II., also claim the throne - - - -	373

B.C.		PAGE
63	Aristobulus II. is taken prisoner to Rome by Pompey	374
	AN ARISTOCRACY set up in place of the monarchy by	
	Gabinus - - - - -	374
51	<i>Daniel ix., the seventy weeks ; Jehovistic</i> -	374
	<i>The Book of Enoch, in an Ethiopic translation</i> -	377
	<i>Additions to the Septuagint, the Apocrypha</i> -	378
	The changes in the religion - - -	379
	THE HEBREW CHRONOLOGY - - -	383
	BIBLICAL INDEX - - - - -	408
	APPENDIX on the journeys and Epistles of the Apostle	
	Paul - - - - -	415



THE HISTORY

OF THE

HEBREW NATION AND ITS LITERATURE.

THE migration of a tribe or number of families from one country to another is usually caused by its possessing a higher civilization than its neighbours ; and the history of most countries begins with an account of the arrival of such a tribe, and of its settlement peaceably or forcibly among the less civilized inhabitants of whose yet earlier settlement no tradition remains. The Books placed at the beginning of the Bible contain three early traditions of the arrival of the Israelites in the land of Canaan.

One tradition, contained in the Life of Abraham, relates that a family, or tribe, from Chaldea, at the sources of the river Euphrates, moved first southward into Syria of the Rivers, the plains where the several streams unite to form that great river ; and then again moved into Southern Canaan, and settled near Hebron, as servants rather than as masters of the Hittites, who were there already.

A second tradition tells us of a migration of Israelites from Syria, who, on reaching the east bank of the Jordan, divided into two parties, one of which, under Jacob, settled in Northern Canaan, near to Shechem, and the other, under his brother Esau, went further southward, beyond Hebron, and settled at Seir, in Edom. Here we meet with a difficulty. Had Jacob been allowed to be Northern Israel, then his elder brother Esau, would naturally have been Southern

Israel, or Judea. But when Jacob, in the history, was said to be all 'Israel, then his brother Esau was said to be Edom.

A third tradition tells us that a body of Israelites, a part of those who had settled in the north, went yet further southward into Lower Egypt, and settled on the east bank of the Nile. There they found a people more civilized than themselves; and hence had no choice but to remain as servants.* But what they lost in freedom they gained in knowledge; and after a time their descendants escaped from Egypt, conquered the Amorites on the east bank of the Jordan, and then crossed that river into Northern Canaan, and made their countrymen, who had before settled there, to become masters of the Canaanites, rather than servants, as perhaps they had hitherto been.

These three traditions relating to the two tribes of Southern and Northern Israelites, the later writers united into one continued narrative, giving the greater importance to the last, as being the one which relates how the wandering herdsmen became a settled independent nation.

We have no knowledge of when the Israelites first committed to writing this tradition that the forefathers, or rather the founders of their nation, had at one time been in bondage in Lower Egypt. But the belief was so firmly held by them, that there can be no reason to doubt it, although the histories which record it were written long after the events. The Israelites from Egypt may have left that country some time between 1600 and 1300 years before the Christian Era. Both from the tradition that we shall repeatedly meet with, and from what we learn from the name of the nation, we see that they at first settled on the eastern side of the Jordan; and hence, as the language and its expressions come to us from Judea, we find them called the *Beyond-men*, or the Hebrews.* Moreover, on that bank of the river was a village, or rather a district, called Ije-Abarim, or the *Mounds of the Hebrews*,† and the mountains in the neighbourhood were called the Mountains of the Hebrews.‡ Hence we can understand that, when, at a later time, the descendants of the Egyptian bondsmen crossed the Jordan, and conquered the country between

* Jerem. xxii. 20.

† Numb. xxi. 11, and xxxiii. 44.

‡ Numb. xxxiii. 47.

that river and the Mediterranean Sea, they carried with them into Canaan this name of Hebrews, which, however, by no means displaced the more fixed name of Israelites. But the name of Israel, though it was never given up, yet, after a time, in part received a new meaning. Having once meant the whole of the nation, it was used, after the division of the kingdom, by the northern tribes only; while the southern kingdom, consisting of Judah, Simeon, and part of Benjamin, was called the kingdom of Judah. And thus, throughout the whole of the Historic Books after the death of Solomon, and throughout the whole of the Prophets, the reader of the Bible is left in doubt whether the name of Israel includes both kingdoms, or only the northern kingdom. In the same way, the name of Jew has had two meanings; at first it belonged to the tribe of Judah only, but now is used by every one who claims descent from Jacob. For this reason, it is more convenient to call our history that of the Hebrew nation, which includes all Israelites and Jews, whatever meaning may be given to those words.

The history of their flight out of Egypt under Moses, and of their conquest of Canaan under the generalship of Joshua, is related in the Pentateuch and the Book of Joshua. But those books are so far modern, that we find it difficult to determine what portion of historic truth they contain. The name of Moses, their leader, must, in Isaiah lxiii. 11, be translated the *Raiser-up*, as if so named because he raised up the nation; and the unhistoric character of the narrative of the march out of Egypt is further shown by the speeches on the occasion, which contain the whole body of the Jewish ecclesiastical law, with much civil law. These laws belong not to one age; but they were the growth of the centuries during which the nation lived under its monarchs; and the priestly legislators from time to time put them into the form of commands from God to Moses in order to gain for them a religious sanctity.

We naturally try to link the traditional history of the Israelites' flight out of Egypt with the better known history of that more civilised country, and thus to gain a knowledge of when it took place. But the hints in the Book of Exodus are too slight and too uncertain to be of much use. Possibly Thothmosis III., as he was the first

Theban king who ruled over the Lower country, may have been "the king who knew not Joseph," had not heard of his services, and who thus began to ill-treat the Israelites. He reformed the Egyptian calendar in the year B.C. 1322. His successor, Amunothph II., may thus have been the Pharaoh from whom the Israelites escaped.

According to the Book of Judges, which seems to be the oldest book in the Bible, the Israelites, on arriving on the east bank of the Jordan, having been refused a passage through the lands of the Edomites and Moabites, defeated Sihon, king of the Amorites, who dwelt between the rivers Arnon and Jabbok, and then seized his country, and Heshbon his capital city, and dwelt there for three hundred years, before crossing the Jordan.* This would place the flight out of Egypt about B.C. 1600. The Book of Numbers also mentions the Israelites seizing Heshbon and the land of the Amorites; but it differs from the Book of Judges in supposing that, without more delay than was necessary, they at once crossed the Jordan into Canaan. This would place the flight out of Egypt about B.C. 1300. If the Israelites who had escaped from Egypt crossed the Jordan at once, there may have been others who had dwelt between the Arnon and the Jabbok ever since they first went down into Egypt; for the nation could hardly have gained the name of the Hebrews, or the *Beyond-People*, unless they had dwelt for two or three generations beyond, or on the east of the Jordan.

The Book of Numbers also tells us something of the history of the people who lived on the east of the Jordan before the Israelites arrived there; namely, that Sihon, king of the Amorites, had gained his country from the Moabites; and for its authority it quotes the following very ancient piece of historic poetry:—

Come unto Heshbon, let it be built,
And let the city of Sihon be prepared;
For a fire is gone out of Heshbon,
And a flame out of the city of Sihon;
It hath consumed Ar of Moab,
And the lords of Bamoth on the Arnon.

Alas for thee, O Moab!
Thou art undone, O people of [the god] Chemosh!

* Judges xi. 15—27.

He hath given his sons into flight,
 And his daughters into captivity,
 Unto Sihon, king of the Amorites.
 And their sown fields hath Heshbon destroyed unto Dibon,
 And their waste fields unto Nophah, which is by Medeba.*

Perhaps this may claim to be the earliest remaining piece of Hebrew poetry. It is quoted a second time in Jeremiah xlviii.

The Book of Joshua, which describes the crossing over the Jordan, and the defeat of the native inhabitants by the Israelites or Hebrews, is of about the same age as the Book of Deuteronomy, and was written or compiled by some unknown author, during the last few years of the Monarchy. It is the most misleading book in the Bible. It takes no notice of the two earlier settlements of the Israelites in Canaan, one of which is hinted at in the Life of Abraham, and the other in the Life of Jacob. It describes those who had fled from Egypt as at once crossing the Jordan and conquering the land to which they were strangers, and in which they had no friends to receive them. It is true that when we overlook this book, we have only a very meagre account in the Book of Judges of the Eastern Israelites crossing the Jordan to free their brethren from the yoke of the Canaanites; and we have to wait until the reign of Saul before we hear of any attempt on the part of the men of Judah to become free. But if we rely upon that slender narrative only, we shall go less astray than if we attend to the Book of Joshua. As a history, it is of no authority; but as a work on the geography of Palestine, it is of great value; since, when it describes the division of the land among the twelve tribes, it gives us a faithful picture of the country at the time when the survey was made. The name of the Israelite leader, Jehoshua or Joshua, may be translated *Jehovah saves*; Oshea, as it was first written, is simply the *Saviour*.

Thus, passing by for the present the Pentateuch and the Book of Joshua, we keep to the Book of Judges; and from this we gain the earliest authentic glimpses of the Israelites in the land of Canaan. This is in the thirteenth century before the Christian Era. They were at that time broken into a number of scattered tribes or families. These several

* Numb. xxi. 21—30.

tribes were formed of a population far more numerous than the small body of men who could have been living in the land of Goshen in Lower Egypt, or even than that larger body which afterwards crossed the Jordan to attempt to gain land in Canaan. Those who entered the country with arms in their hands were no doubt welcomed by others whose families had never been in Egypt. It would seem as if some parts of Canaan had been for a long time previous quietly inhabited by men of the Hebrew race. This remark particularly applies to parts of Judah, to the neighbourhood of Hebron, where we hear of no wars between the new comers and the old inhabitants.

Our earliest knowledge of the country is limited to the middle and northern parts. Here the Israelites were in continual warfare with the native inhabitants, among whom they had settled, and whom they were striving to dispossess from their lands and houses. These were known under various names, some of which merely describe their habits, or manner of life. Such were the Hivites and Avites or *villagers*, the Perizzites or *country people*, the Amorites, or *mountaineers*, and the Anakites or *giants*. The better marked tribes on the west of the Jordan were the Canaanites in the middle of the land, the Jebusites of Jerusalem, the Sidonians near Mount Lebanon, and the Hittites in the south, and Philistines of the south-west country. On the east of the Jordan the enemies of Israel were the Midianites, the Ammonites, and the Moabites. Of these tribes the Moabites were the most quiet and settled, and the Philistines the most warlike and troublesome. The neighbours with whom they had frequent wars, but whose more barren territory they did not attempt to gain, were the Edomites on the south, and the Amalekites on the south-west. But the name of Edomite, like that of Israelite, has two meanings. It sometimes means the less civilized people of the desert, called also Kenites; and sometimes a more civilized people, touching on the Calebites of the Negib, or south country of Judah. These latter Edomites, like the tribe of Judah, worshipped God under the name of Jehovah.* The others were more wandering and more allied to the Amalekites. But though we place the seat of the Midianites in the eastern desert, and that of the Amalekites in the desert between

* Amos ix. 12.

Egypt and the Philistines, yet we sometimes meet with Midianites in the south, and Amalekites in the east ; as these Arab tribes, like the Ishmaelites, were very little fixed to one spot. To the north of the land of Canaan dwelt the Syrians, who were divided into three or four tribes, and who were too strong to be conquered by the Israelites.

The first war mentioned in the days of the Judges is with the Syrians, at a time when the Israelites, or a northern portion of them, were held in servitude for eight years by a king whose name, Cushan-rishathaim, which may be translated the *Most Wicked Negress*, seems to place him in the region of imaginary tradition rather than of history. He was defeated by a body of Calebites from Southern Judah, who may very possibly have been driven to migrate northwards by the heavy hand of the Philistines, which pressed upon them in their own country.* In the north these Calebites may have formed the tribes of Issachar and Zebulun, as those tribes were connected with Judah ; and when the later historian reduced the tribes into one family, those two were said to be sons of the same mother with Judah. This servitude under the Syrians, like the other misfortunes in the time of the Judges, the historian, or rather the later editor of the book, devoutly says, befell them because they had done evil in the sight of Jehovah.

There was, about the same time, another migration of Calebites northward from Hebron, to the City of Jearim and to Beth-lehem. This we learn from the genealogies in 1 Chron. ii. ; and it explains much that we shall soon meet with, as to the agreement between those three towns in religion and political feeling, when we find the Ark of Jehovah in the City of Jeairm.

The next war mentioned was an invasion by the Moabites, who, being joined with a body of Ammonites and Amalekites, harassed the Israelites of the neighbourhood of Gilgal and Jericho. This tribe of Israelites were named Jaminites, or Ben-jaminites, a name which may be connected with that of their enemies, the Children of Ammon, or Beni-ammon, who seem to have had a settlement in that spot. After a servitude of eighteen years under the Moabites, Ehud, a Benjamite, found an opportunity of stabbing Eglon, the king of Moab ; and shortly afterwards the Benjamites were

* Judges iii. 7.

relieved by a body of their neighbours from the hill country of Ephraim. The Israelites then defeated the Moabites, and seized the fords of the Jordan to stop their retreat, and slew them all to a man.*

While this war was going on on one side of the land, the Philistines from the south were harassing those of the Israelites who were nearest to their country. From this trouble the Israelites were for a time released by Shamgar.† From the after mention of Shamgar, it seems probable that he dwelt in the land of Ephraim, and that the Philistines were invading some part of that country, not that Shamgar was attempting to free any part of Judah from their iron rule.

The history then carries us back to the northern Israelites, and we hear of their struggle with the Canaanites of that part of the country which was afterwards called Galilee. These Canaanites were under a king named Jabin, who had nine hundred chariots of iron; and they cruelly oppressed the men of Naphtali and Zebulun, who were among the most northerly of the Israelites. After a suffering of twenty years, the two tribes of Zebulun and Naphtali, under the leadership of Barak, rallied against their oppressors, and called to their help their stronger neighbours, the men of Ephraim. The tribe of Ephraim was the most settled portion of the Israelites, and they had adopted some form of government, while the other tribes were stragglers scattered over the land, every man doing what was right in his own eyes. The Ephraimites were at that time governed, or, in their own language, judged, by a brave woman of the name of Deborah, who rose to that post by the wants of society at the time. Laws there were none; but a member of a tribe who had the courage and the honesty to give a fair opinion on right and wrong, when a difficulty arose, and whose good sense so far gained the approval of the others that they were willing to act upon it, became Judge of the tribe. Evil-doers were then punished by their neighbours according to the award of the judge.

Deborah, after quieting her own tribe as a judge, was also called to act as a general; and she led her followers, together with some of the Benjamites, to the assistance of Barak, the leader of Zebulun and Naphtali; and, at the foot of Mount

* Judges iii. 13.—30.

† Judges iii. 31.

Tabor, near the brook Kishon, their united forces defeated Sisera, the general of the Canaanites. Sisera fled, and was murdered by Jael, a woman in whose tent he had sought for refuge.

On the occasion of this victory over the Canaanites, we have a very remarkable poem attributed to Deborah, the leader and judge of the Ephraimites, who was a prophetess or poet. It is a spirited triumphal shout of an early date, but its enumeration of the tribes shows that in its present form it belongs to a time after David had surveyed and divided the land. In particular the three lines which mention Zebulun a second time, with Asher and Naphtali, may have been added after David's division of the country into its well-known twelve districts. It was natural that a popular song should receive changes as time goes on.

It gives glory to Jehovah for the nation's success :—

For the leaders undertaking to lead in Israel,
For the self-devotion of the people, bless ye Jehovah.

We have some thoughts relating to the march out of Egypt, which we do not find in our books of Exodus and Numbers, as when the writer says,

O Jehovah, when thou wentest out from Seir,
When thou marchedst out of the field of Edom,
The earth trembled.

The poem describes the desolate and disturbed state of the country previous to Deborah's rule, and the sad want of weapons among her brave troops :—

In the days of Shamgar the son of Anath,
In the days of Jael, the highways were unoccupied,
And the travellers on foot journeyed through by-paths.
Rulers of villages had ceased in Israel, they had ceased,
Until I Deborah arose, I arose a mother in Israel,
They had chosen new gods ;
Then there was war at the city gates.
Was there a shield seen, or a spear,
Among forty thousand in Israel ?
My heart is toward the lawgivers of Israel,
That devoted themselves for the people.
Bless ye Jehovah.

In the same noble strain it relates that the men of Ephraim, Benjamin, Machir or Manasseh, Zebulun, Issachar, and Naphtali united their forces against the common enemy ;

but that the men of Reuben and those of Gilead or Gad, on the east of the Jordan, and the men of Dan and of Asher on the coast of the Mediterranean, did not join their brethren in the struggle. They were too far removed from the danger. Thus ten of the tribes are mentioned by name. The eleventh and twelfth, the men of Judah, and Simeon, may be those called Jehovah's people, of whom only a small number came with the others ;

Then came down a remnant of the mighty ones,
Jehovah's people came down for me against the warriors.

Perhaps at this time the hand of the Philistines was too heavy upon them for a larger body to be able to help their northern brethren ;* or perhaps they had few feelings in common with them ; as we see that the eastern tribes also did not cross the Jordan to make common cause against the Canaanites.

The next war that we are told of is an invasion by the Midianites and Amalekites and Children of the East. They crossed the Jordan to attack the men of Manasseh, who were at the same time struggling with the Amorites, the natives who dwelt amongst them. Gideon, the leader of Manasseh, called together the fighting men of his own tribe, together with those of Asher, Zebulun, and Naphtali. The men of Gilead, who had come over to help him, seem to have deserted him. Gideon, however, routed his enemies, and then he summoned the Ephraimites to guard the fords of the Jordan, and to cut off the fugitives. This they did, and they gained an amount of booty that reconciled them to the affront of not having been summoned sooner. The release from the invasion by the Midianites was long remembered with feelings of thankfulness proportioned to the danger felt. Five centuries later the prophet Isaiah compared Judah's escape from the joint invasion by Israel and Syria, to the "day of Midian."

This victory of Gideon, or Jerubbaal, as he was also named, marked him out as a man fit to be the ruler of Israel, and to save them from the troubles that arose from the want of a single head to lead them against the enemies that surrounded them and dwelt among them. Accordingly, he obtained the rank of chief of all the northern Israelites.† His name,

* Judges iv. v.

† Judges vi. vii. viii.

Jerubbaal, tells us that he worshipped God under the name of Baal, although the later editor of the book of Judges has added a story, with a wish to give to Gideon's second name the opposite meaning.

Gideon had dwelt at Ophrah in the land of Manasseh, on the east side of the Jordan; but his son Abimelech, who succeeded him in his high post, was born in Shechem, in the land of Ephraim, and had thus gained the friendship of some of that tribe. Abimelech put to death all but one of his brethren, the other sons of Gideon, and got himself made king at Shechem; and he was the first who bore that title among the Israelites. Shechem, his capital, was a place of some religious importance. It stood at the foot of two hills, upon one of which the son of Jerubbaal, who worshipped God under the name of Baal, or *Lord*, may possibly have had an altar; as the hill at a later time bore the name of Ebal, or *the ruins of Baal*. The other hill was called Gerizim. Near the town was a sacred grove, or oak, called the Oak of the Cloud-observers, or soothsayers, and also the Oak of Moreh, or *teaching*, because the will of God was there taught by the priests.* Shechem was for a long time the capital of the northern tribes. The men of Shechem used also in worship the name of Baal-berith, *Lord of the Covenant*, and El-berith, *God of the Covenant*. This shows that, before the present Levitical law was published, they believed that they were living under a divine covenant, that as long as they were obedient to God, they would receive in return his guardian care.†

Abimelech's thus violently seizing upon the power was the cause of a civil war between Ephraim and Manasseh, which ended in the death of the usurper Abimelech, and the transfer for the time of the chieftainship to another tribe.‡ Tola, a man of Issachar, was then made Judge, or ruler of the northern tribes. He fixed his residence, not within the limits of his own less important people, but at the town of Shamir, afterwards called Samaria, in the land of Manasseh, though at that time said to be in the land of Ephraim.§ The commonly received division of the land was probably not made until David's reign.

After Tola, says the historian, Jair of Gilead judged Israel,

* Gen. xii. 6.

† Judges viii. 33; ix. 46.

‡ Judges ix.

§ Judges x. 1.

as if the seat of government had been removed from one part of the country to the other. But we may more reasonably suppose that here the narrative changes to the east of the Jordan, shortly to return again to the successors of Tola. Jair and his successors may have ruled in the east at the same time that Deborah and Gideon and their successors were ruling or struggling against their oppressors in the west.*

Jephthah of Gilead is the next great captain mentioned. He is called the son of Gilead, after the Hebrew peculiar use of the word Son, and according to the not unusual custom with the Hebrew writers of creating a father for any man, or class of men, out of a descriptive adjective. He was called to his post by the necessity felt among the people of finding a leader who could unite their scattered forces against the enemy. The Ammonites, who dwelt in the more desert country to the east of Gilead, had made a serious incursion on the Israelites on both sides of the Jordan; and the men of Gilead, in their distress, sent for Jephthah, who was then living at Tob, in Syria, whither he had fled from a quarrel with his brethren. When he arrived, they made him their captain at Mizpeh, in the land which is sometimes described as that of the eastern half-tribe of Manasseh, but which then may have been part of Gilead.

It seems that the Ammonites invaded Gilead on the plea that they had possessed that land before the Israelites arrived there, to which Jephthah answered that the Israelites had dispossessed the Amorites under Sihon, king of Heshbon, and that the Ammonites had not dwelt in that part of the country; and he gives the history, which we have already quoted, of the Israelites' arrival on the banks of the Jordan. On coming out of Lower Egypt, they crossed the desert to the Red Sea, and then came to Kadesh. From thence they asked leave of the Edomites and Moabites to pass through their territory; but, being refused, they went round Moab till they came to the northern bank of the river Arnon, an eastern tributary of the Jordan. There they were attacked by Sihon king of the Amorites; and on defeating him they seized his territory, which lay between the Arnon and the Jabbok. There the Israelites had dwelt quietly for three hundred years, without fighting against either the Moabites or the

* Judges x. 3.

Ammonites, who were both too strong to be attacked. This is a most interesting narrative, both for what it tells and for what it omits, as compared with the longer narrative in the Pentateuch. It tells us that the Israelites had asked, and been refused a passage by the Moabites, and that they had dwelt for three hundred years between the Arnon and the Jabbok, before crossing the Jordan; and it explains how the Amorites, whom we find on the west of the Jordan, had been driven there when dispossessed of their own land. It omits all mention of the delivery of the Law, and of the Ark, and of any supernatural events as having happened on the march, and of the fighting with Og, king of Bashan, of whom we shall read in the Book of Numbers.

To return to our history. Jephthah defeated the Ammonites, but before the battle he made a vow to Jehovah that he would offer up as a burnt offering whatever first met him from out of the doors of his house. On his return home his daughter, his only child, came out with music to greet him after his victory. And he accordingly performed his so-called religious vow, after allowing her two months to wander on the mountains and bewail her fate in dying unmarried. The writer, as if to prove the truth of the story, adds that the young unmarried women of Israel celebrated a lament for Jephthah's daughter for four days every year. But this goes rather to disprove the tradition, as it tells us that the writer lived long after the event; and it makes it probable that the sad story was invented to give a reason for the yearly custom. The story, however, tells us that the custom of human sacrifices was not wholly unknown.

After Jephthah's victory over the Ammonites, a body of the Ephraimites crossed over the Jordan to help him, or rather to claim a share of the booty for which they had not fought; and he then had to fight against his allies. But he defeated them, and slew a large number of them on their retreat homewards at the fords of the Jordan. The Ephraimites, when they wished to cross the river, were known by their pronunciation. The two tribes gave a different sound to the letter S; the men of Gilead called upon the fugitives to say the word Shibboleth, and when they said Sibboleth they slew them.*

* Judges x. 6—xii. 7.

The narrative now returns to the western tribes; and we are told of Ibzan in Bethlehem of Zebulun, who judged Israel for seven years; then of Ajalon, a second Zebulunite, who judged for ten years; and then of Abdon, an Ephraimite, who judged for eight years.* We shall often, in later times, have to note a want of union among the northern tribes of Israel, and shall see that Issachar and Zebulun yielded the leadership of the north very unwillingly to their greater neighbours, Ephraim and Manasseh. This may perhaps explain why, in these early days, the judgeship of northern Israel was shifted about from Zebulun to Ephraim.

Hitherto we have hardly met with the name of the great tribe of Judah, which afterwards plays so forward a part in our history. But we now learn that part or all of Judah was held in quiet servitude by the Philistines; and this indeed we only learn, as if by accident, in the history of Samson of the tribe of Dan. So complete was the servitude at least of some parts of Judah, and so little hope had they then of freedom, that they were alarmed at Samson's rashness in attacking the Philistines, which they feared might increase the severity of the bondage under which they were suffering.† The rout of a small body of Philistines by Shamgar, as before mentioned, seems not to have been followed by any attempt of the tribe of Judah to shake off the bondage of those powerful and warlike neighbours. This continued superiority of the Philistines over the Israelites is easily explained by their possession of iron for weapons of war, an advantage which the Israelites were without.‡ The Philistines probably received their iron from the island of Cyprus by means of the Phenician traders. But over how large a part of Judah the Philistine power reached, cannot be determined, because we have no history of that important tribe at this time.

The tribe of Judah is almost unknown to us before the time of David. But, though not yet independent, its later history leads us to think that it was not less advanced in civilization than the northern Israelites. Its chief city, Hebron, was the seat of the Levites,§ and, no doubt, of Levitical learning. Near it was the sacred grove of Mamre, and an altar to Jehovah, said to have been built by Abra-

* Judges xii. 8—15.

† Judges xv. 11.

‡ 1 Sam. xiii. 19.

§ Josh. xxi. 13.

ham.* This was the chief spot for the worship of Jehovah before the Ark was moved to the City of Jearim, and before Jerusalem robbed both those towns of that honour.† Near, also, to Hebron, was a town called Debir, *the Oracle*, a name afterwards given to the Holy of Holies in Solomon's temple, when the voice of Jehovah was thought to be heard there. This town of Debir was also called the city of Sepher, or *Writing*,‡ from which we judge that learning was there cultivated; and perhaps we shall not be wrong in giving to it the credit of those Jehovistic writings which were written before Jerusalem became the capital. The lost Book of the Wars, quoted in Numbers xxi., was a Jehovistic poem, as was Deborah's noble song already described. Both of these may have come from the city of Sepher. The Ten Commandments, in Exodus xx., which are Jehovistic, and have been grafted on to the Elohist narrative; and the Jehovistic history of the creation in Genesis ii. 4—iv., which we shall speak of presently as older than the narrative into which it is inserted,—both of these may have come from the City of Sepher. These early hints explain the high rank which the tribe of Judah took among the other tribes, as soon as it became independent of the Philistines and Hittites.

The difference in religion was probably very slight, between the northern tribes who worshipped God under the name of El, and its plural, Elohim, and Baal, *Lord*; and the southern tribes, who used the name of Jehovah, a word which perhaps meant *He that is*. They both employed the sacrifice of animals as a mode of worship, and had High Places where the sacrifices were performed, and where the will of God was to be enquired for; but the southern tribe had a sacred Ark, or box, containing the Tables of the Law, a movable oracle, as Jehovah was thought to be always present with it. The northern tribes usually had a house, or temple, near the altar of sacrifice; while the Ark of the southern tribes had always lived under a tent until the reign of Solomon.§ The northern people had no regular body of priests; among them any man might be appointed to the priesthood, as in the case of Samuel; and a man might act as his own priest in the house near the altar.|| They claimed to be a holy nation, a kingdom of priests.¶ But the southern people had the Levites as a class of priests; and their cere-

* Gen. xiii. 18.

§ 2 Sam. vii. 6.

† 2 Sam. xv. 7.

|| 2 Kings xvii. 32.

‡ Judges i. 11.

¶ Exod. xix. 6.

monies were, at a later time, embodied in the Levitical law, while the clanship of these priests gave a steadiness to society, which was much needed in the north. The rite of circumcision belonged at first to the northern people, they may have brought it out of Egypt;* but the observance of the seventh day, and the distinction between clean and unclean animals, belonged more particularly to the south. As the national feasts were regulated by the harvest and the crops, the northern people kept their chief feast a month later than it was kept in the south.† These outward differences between the north and south continued until the fall of the two monarchies.

The story of Samson is too fabulous, and perhaps too modern, to throw much light upon these early times. He was an Israelite of the tribe of Dan, living among the Philistines, from whom his countrymen had not been able to wrest the possession of the soil. His mother brought him up as a Nazarite, or *one set apart* unto God, who was neither to drink wine nor ever have his hair cut. As long as he conformed to this rule, he possessed a strength more than human; and, among other heroic deeds, he routed the Philistines at a hill called Lehi, *a cheek*, so called, perhaps, from its form; from which name seems to have arisen the story that Samson's weapon was the cheek-bone of an ass. After a time, Samson disclosed to his wife the secret of his strength, and she cut his hair off in his sleep, and then the Philistines took him prisoner, put out his eyes, and carried him to Gaza. There, as his hair grew, he recovered his strength, and he pulled down upon the heads of the assembled Philistines the temple of their fish-god Dagon.‡

At this time, while the Israelites were living in huts or tents, without a settled form of government, Egypt was the greatest kingdom in the world. It had lately been united under one sceptre. Thebes, its capital, enriched by the Nubian gold-mines, had been ornamented with massive temples, covered with sculpture, and surrounded by colossal statues. Its kings could keep large armies in their pay; and they enjoyed the power of invading even distant countries. It was about the year B.C. 1200 that Rameses II., one of the greatest of the Egyptian kings, on marching through Palestine, carved his boastful monument on the

* Exod. iv. 25; Josh. v. 5; Herodotus ii. 104. † 1 Kings xii: 32.

‡ Judges xiii:—xvi:

face of the rock at Beyrout, on the coast of the Mediterranean Sea, a few miles to the north of Sidon. He had travelled more than a thousand miles from his capital ; he had brought his army through the desert and Palestine, more than five hundred miles from his frontier city, overthrowing every resistance that he met with on his route. The Philistines, through whose country he crossed, must have been great sufferers ; and very possibly the Israelites may have felt a relief by the check given to their enemies' power. How much farther northward the Egyptians marched and conquered, we are not told. Nor are we told that the Phenicians carried supplies for them in their ships ; but the Egyptian trade was too profitable to the cities of Tyre and Sidon to allow us for a moment to suppose that they were otherwise than friendly to Rameses II.

We have no means of learning very exactly when the wars which we have been reading of within the land of Canaan took place ; but the reign of Rameses II. in Egypt must, at any rate, fall within the time when the Israelites were ruled by their Judges. It is important to notice in our history that this great invasion of the land of Canaan is not mentioned by the Hebrew writers. This circumstance, however, is explained by remarking how small a portion of the country the Israelites had yet occupied. They had not advanced to the west of the hill-country ; even two or three centuries later the strong cities of Gath and Gezer were both held by their enemies ; and between these cities and the Mediterranean Sea there was ample width of country for the Egyptians to march and pillage the weaker inhabitants without their inroad gaining the notice of the Hebrew writers.

In those days, before there was a king in Israel, and when every man did what was right in his own eyes, some of the Danites, who had not succeeded in winning an inheritance for themselves from their strong neighbours the Philistines, among whom, or near whom, they had settled, determined to look for it elsewhere, where the owners of the soil might be weaker and not so well armed. They had learned, by means of spies, that there was a Laish, near the sources of the Jordan, on the eastern slope of Anti-libanus, or Hermon, a small tribe, perhaps Canaanites, or perhaps Syrians, allies or subjects of Sidon, who were weak and unprepared for de-

fence, and too far from their friends the Sidonians to receive immediate help from them. Accordingly, the Danites set off, six hundred in number, and well armed, to see if land could not be seized more easily there than in the south. In order to gain a religious sanctity for their violent undertaking, they began by robbing an Ephraimite named Micah, near whose house they passed, of his wooden Teraphs, or household idols, of his silver images, and of his Ephod, or priestly garment, and they carried them off together with their owner's priest, a young Levite, of the family of Judah, who was willing to be the priest of a tribe rather than of one man. They then marched northward, they put the unoffending men of Laish to the sword, and built there their new town of Dan, which in more modern times has been known by the names of Paneas and Cæsarea Philippi. Micah's graven image remained an object of worship in Dan as long as the House of God was in Shiloh; that is, until all sacrifices out of Jerusalem were forbidden, by the authority of the Sons of Aaron, in that city. The descendants of Micah's Levite remained priests there until the northern tribes were carried away captive in the year B.C. 722.* This migration of the Danites is the third migration from south to north, all caused as we may suppose by a wish to escape the Philistine oppression, and on learning the success of the northern Israelites in gaining their independence.

Here we have, for the first time, met with the Levites, who seem to have been a humble, wandering class of men, like the Preaching Friars among the Catholics, whose poverty may have added to their character for holiness. They were not yet classed into a tribe apart from the tribe of Judah. At least, this Levite was of the family of Judah. Micah, the Ephraimite above spoken of, had made for himself, out of eleven hundred pieces of silver, a molten image and a graven image. In addition to these, he had some Teraphs, perhaps wooden household gods, and an Ephod, perhaps a priestly dress, which gave a religious character to the wearer. He had, moreover, appointed one of his sons to be his family priest, and placed in his hands the offerings which were to be burnt before these images. This "filling a man's hands" with the offerings was at all times, among the Israelites, the act of consecration to the priesthood. With these arrange-

* Judges xvii., xviii.

ments, Micah's religious establishment seemed complete ; but when the young Levite passed by, Micah thought that he should do still better if he could gain his services ; and upon the promise of his victuals and a suit of clothes and ten pieces of silver by the year as his wages, the Levite agreed to remain with him as his priest. This he did till, as we have seen, he deserted him for what seemed a better lot.

The last narrative in the Book of Judges is of a very modern character. Upon the occasion of a gross and wicked outrage committed by the inhabitants of Gibeah in Benjamin, the whole of Israel, from Dan to Beersheba, were summoned together to revenge it. They met before the altar of Jehovah at Mizpeh, in Benjamin, in number 400,000 armed men. They then went to ask counsel of God at Beth-el, where, at that time, was the Ark of the Covenant, under the charge of Phinehas, the grandson of Aaron. There they were told that Judah was to begin the battle. After a first and a second repulse, they slew of Benjamin 25,000, leaving only 600 out of the tribe alive. They burnt their cities, and, as it would seem, slew all the women and children. But, after a time, the conquerors repented of their severity, and more particularly of a vow that they had made that no one should ever give a daughter to a Benjamite to wife, a vow which points to an early belief that the tribe of Benjamin were part of the children of Ammon, and had been rather unwillingly admitted into the family of Israel. This vow, if acted upon, would destroy one of the tribes of Israel, as all the women of that tribe had been slain. But they had also made a second vow, that whoever came not up in obedience to the summons to the great meeting at Mizpeh, should be put to death. As they learned that the men of Jabesh in Gilead had not come up to Mizpeh, they put them and their families to the sword, saving only four hundred young women, whom they gave to the Benjamites. But, as these were not enough, they gave them leave to go to Shiloh, and to seize upon such young women as were yet wanted from among those who came out of the city to dance at the yearly religious feast there celebrated to Jehovah.*

In this improbable story there are a number of circumstances not belonging to this early age, such as the common

* Judges xix., xx.

action of all the Israelites dwelling between Dan and Beersheba ; there being at Shiloh a yearly religious festival to Jehovah, rather than to Elohim the northern name for God ; the answer of Jehovah instead of Elohim at Beth-el, *the House of Elohim* ; and the Ark of God being at Beth-el under the charge of Aaron's grandson, and Judah being the leader in the war. These are all circumstances inconsistent with what we have been reading about. The story may have been founded on wars between the Israelites and the children of Ammon, who had once held the land of Benjamin. But, with the exception of the history of Samson, and of this story in the last three chapters of the Book of Judges, and with the exception also of the Introduction, chap. i.—iii. 6, which is a continuation of the Book of Joshua, this book must be considered of a very early date.

At this time, called the time of the Judges, we have the picture of a people living in a very rude state, many of them without laws and without magistrates. They had first settled on the east side of the Jordan, between the Arnon and the Jabbok, where they had conquered and violently dispossessed the former inhabitants, the Amorites. There, after becoming land-owners, they grew stronger and more numerous, and then they successfully invaded their northern neighbours towards Mount Bashan and the sources of the Jordan. After a lapse of about three hundred years, finding even this widened territory too narrow for them, they crossed the Jordan and spread over the land, sometimes conquering and dispossessing the natives, which they were able to do chiefly in the northern half, and sometimes settling quietly, but impatiently, among the original owners of the soil, as in the southern half, which they called living in servitude. Their wars were begun for the sake of plunder, and carried on with such unrelenting cruelty, that the women and children suffered equally with the fighting men. None were spared but such as were willing to live under tribute, and cultivate the soil for their Israelite masters. No doubt the larger number of the conquered did submit. In that case the Israelites and the Canaanites lived quietly together ; and notwithstanding what we read in the Levitical Law about not joining in marriage with the Canaanites, we shall meet with proof that the two races were very much moulded into one. During this time, the scattered families were gradu-

ally arranging themselves into towns and states, guided, no doubt, by the ties of blood ; and the necessity of putting themselves under the command of a captain when going out to battle may have quickened the growth of regular government and taught them obedience to law: But that no part of the ceremonial law was yet written, is probable from our as yet finding no mention of it, and in particular no mention of an established order of priests.

The tribes which the Israelites dispossessed of their lands, as also those neighbours against whom they occasionally fought, were mostly of the same race as themselves, speaking dialects of the Hebrew, Syriac, and Arabic languages ; yet, in the history of the descent of the several nations of the earth, in Genesis x., the writer has made a wide separation between them and the Israelites.

The Edomites,* the Ammonites, the Moabites,† the Syrians,‡ the Amalekites,§ and the Midianites,|| who all lived on their borders, they acknowledged as of their own family, and they classed them with themselves as Children of Shem ; but the others, amongst whom they settled, and with whom they very much intermarried, notwithstanding the laws against it, and whom they, sooner or later, conquered, and whose lands at last they succeeded in gaining, they classed with the Egyptians, their former masters, as children of Ham.¶ These were the Canaanites, the Amorites, the Jebusites, the Philistines, and others whom we shall afterwards meet with, whose exact geographical place in Palestine it would not be easy to fix. As we never read of interpreters being needed by the Hebrews in their intercourse with these tribes, whether the neighbours around or those in the midst of them whom they conquered, we must suppose that they all spoke nearly the same language.

We may stop to remark that all the little tribes here spoken of, whether friends or enemies, together with the Israelites themselves, are, in the Hebrew books, often called the Peoples, as distinguished from the Nations ; this latter word is more particularly given to the more powerful Egyptians, Assyrians, and Babylonians.

The last-mentioned of the peoples, the Philistines, were the latest to be conquered ; they did not submit till all

* Gen. xxxvi. 1.

† Gen. xix. 37, 38.

‡ Gen. x. 22.

§ Gen. xxxvi. 12.

|| Gen. xxv. 2.

¶ Gen. x. 14, 19.

Israel was united into one strong monarchy. Their origin and history are obscure and tantalising from their importance and uncertainty. They were also called Caphtorites,* and were said to have been new settlers in the land, to have come there from the island of Caphtor, and to have violently dispossessed the Avites of Gaza and that neighbourhood, where they established themselves in several strong cities, occupying the territory which the Jewish geographer in the Book of Joshua assigns to the tribes of Simeon and Dan, and to part of that of Judah. The island of Caphtor has been thought by some to be Crete; but it was more probably one of the marshy islands in the Egyptian Delta, near to Pelusium. There these warlike people, without a distinctive name, seem to have settled as new comers some time before the Israelites arrived in Lower Egypt. They lived under kings of their own, who are called by Manetho, in his "History of Egypt," the Hyksos or Shepherd-kings. They ravaged the neighbouring territory, and put much of Lower Egypt under tribute, till they were driven out shortly before the Israelites settled in the same country. We may remark here that, in the History of Joseph, we learn that the name of a Shepherd was hateful to the Egyptians,† which may perhaps have been caused by the injuries which the Egyptians had received from the Hyksos. The word Philistines means simply the Foreigners, and it is so translated in the Septuagint. The name of their city in Egypt, Pelusium, seems to be derived from it. In the Egyptian language, a foreigner is called Shemmo. In Egypt both the hated Shepherds and the Israelites would be included under the same name; and both carried it away with them on leaving Lower Egypt. Thus the Hebrew historians speak of their whole race as Sons of Shem,‡ or Shemites, and again they give to those families who settled among the Philistines the name of Simeonites, which is simply the diminutive form of Shemites. The reason for the Philistines having been thought by some critics to have been Cretans, is because, in later days, they were called Cherethites.§ But they had this name more probably because these skilled warriors were chosen by David and his successors as their

* Deut. ii. 23.

† Gen. xlv. 34.

‡ Gen. x. 22.

§ Ezek. xxv. 16.

body-guard' or axe-bearers;* and it may be derived from the word Chereth, *to cut*.

With regard to the religion of these tribes, they were most of them idolaters, each worshipping its own god or gods, except the Edomites, the Midianites, and the Amalekites. For these three tribes we hear of no worship of strange gods; and these tribes were classed with the Israelites, among the children of Abraham. Of the Edomites we are particularly told that they were worshippers of Jehovah, like the neighbouring tribe of Judah.† Indeed, the Edomites seem to have been almost as closely related to Judah, as Judah was to the northern Israelites; and before the end of our history we shall find the southern half of Judah united to Edom. The Philistines worshipped a Fish-god, named Dagon;‡ and some of the Canaanites seem to have worshipped the sun, as we meet with several towns named Beth-shemesh, and one named Ir-shemesh, *the city of the sun*.§

ELI, JUDGE AT SHILOH IN EPHRAIM.

We have already been told that there was at Shiloh, in the land of Ephraim, about ten miles to the south of Shechem, a house of Elohim, or God, of more than local importance;|| and then, rather in contradiction to that statement, that there was a yearly religious festival to Jehovah in that city, to which the neighbouring tribes resorted.¶ We are now again told of a temple to Jehovah in that city, containing the sacred ark, and of a priest of Jehovah in that temple, named Eli, whose priesthood and judgeship would have been hereditary in his family if it had not been forfeited by the wickedness of his sons. Eli's judgeship may have begun about the year B.C. 1100. It lasted forty years, but to whom he succeeded of the Judges hitherto mentioned we do not know.

While Eli was yet judge, but quite an old man, the Philistines had met the Israelites in battle at Aphek, near the south-western corner of the land of Benjamin, and had defeated them. In their alarm, the Israelites sent to Shiloh to fetch from thence the "Ark of the Covenant of Jehovah,

* 2 Sam. xv. 18. † Amos ix. 12. ‡ 1 Sam: v. 4.

|| Judges xviii. 31. ¶ Judges xxi. 19.

§ Josh. xix. 22, 38; xxi. 16; xix. 41.

who dwelleth between the cherubs," which they hoped, as a sacred talisman, would ensure to them victory by its very presence in the army. But they were again defeated; the two sons of Eli were slain, and the Ark of God, or of Jehovah, for it has both names, was taken by the Philistines. Eli the Priest, when he heard of the disaster, fell down dead, after having judged Israel for forty years.*

SAMUEL, JUDGE IN BENJAMIN.

On the death of Eli and his sons, Samuel, who had been brought up under his care at Shiloh, and had already made himself known to all Israel as a prophet, succeeded to the judgeship, not by election, nor by any appointment to the office; but his wisdom made him to be accepted as such by his countrymen. Samuel dwelt at Ramah, in the land of Benjamin; and here our history changes to a more southern part of the country. Hitherto the great central tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh have been those chiefly spoken of; but now the wisdom and good qualities of one man raised the little tribe of Benjamin to the first rank. Samuel's judgeship was the time of a great improvement in the nation. The even administration of justice, bringing with it security to life and property, had tamed the wildness of the people, and allowed society to improve. The other tribes could not help following the example of Benjamin.

It would seem that as yet when in our history God has been called by the name of "Jehovah, who dwelleth between the cherubs," it has been by a mistake of the writer. But now the tribe of Benjamin, with the adjoining parts of Judah, become the chief actors on the scene; and the name of Jehovah is more often used for the Almighty. Now begins the history of a series of wars against the Philistines, in which the little tribe of Benjamin always stands in the front of the battle, and which ends, as great military struggles often do, in making an important change in the political government.

Seven months after the Ark had been seized by the Philistines, they sent it back of their own free-will to the Israelites. It was said to have brought trouble in a wonderful manner upon every city into which it was carried. When brought back it was left, not in Shiloh, from whence it was

* 1 Sam. i.—iv.

fetched, but in the City of Jearim, a little town in the woods, and placed on the neighbouring hill of Gibeah. There it remained twenty years. The city of Jearim and the hill of Gibeah are in Judah.*

This story of the Ark, and all that relates to it before we find it at the City of Jearim, we may safely reject as untrustworthy, not only as to the wonders that it wrought among the Philistines, but, what is very important to our history, we must reject the statement that it had ever been at Shiloh. The religious customs of the northern and southern tribes were not the same; the Ark belonged to the southern tribes. No temple for it had yet been built. Nathan in the next century assured David that it had never rested otherwise than in a tent, since it came out of Egypt.† The story of the Ark being carried about in the land of the Philistines may represent its removal from Hebron, from which place it may have been brought by the Calebites who came from Hebron to the City of Jearim;‡ as we must suppose that Hebron, the early seat of Levitical worship, was the original place of the ark. The placing it first at Shiloh, and then removing it into the land of Judah, seems a narrative written with a purpose, and intended to link together the religious feelings of both people. The writer wished to show that the sovereign rule among the Israelites had, in the north, been sanctioned by the presence of Jehovah, and had removed from Shiloh further southward. In the same improbable way, Samuel is said to have made his sons Judges in Beersheba, at the very southern boundary of the land of Judah.§ That Samuel's authority should have reached so far, we cannot easily believe. For, though we are told that all Israel, from Dan to Beersheba, knew Samuel as a prophet to whom the word of Jehovah had come in Shiloh,|| yet we find him living entirely within the land of Benjamin, and judging his people only by moving about in a yearly circuit to the four neighbouring towns of Mizpeh, Ramah, Beth-el, and Gilgal. No towns within the tribe of Judah are mentioned as being visited by him.¶ Samuel's altar at Ramah, near to his own house, was probably dedicated to Elohim, or God, rather than to Jehovah; as we shall be told again and again in the later parts of our

* 1 Sam: v.—vii. 6. † 2 Sam. vii. 6. ‡ 1 Chron. ii. 42 and 50

§ 1 Sam. viii. 2 || 1 Sam. iii: 20. ¶ 1 Sam. vii. 15—17.

history that the name of Jehovah was not in use so far to the north as the towns in which Samuel acted as judge. Samuel does not appear to have been a Levite, though he was afterwards claimed for that tribe by the writer of the Book of Chronicles.*

In order to understand the history of the Ark it is necessary to say something of the town in which we for the first time hear of it in a trustworthy manner. The City of Jearim, literally the *City in the Woods*, was the most northerly town of the tribe of Judah. It had been peopled by Calebites from Hebron,† who may have brought with them their Levitical customs. It was near the western border of Benjamin. It stood at the foot of a hill on which the people worshipped and sacrificed to Jehovah; and when the hill was embraced within walls, it was called the city of Gibeah, *the hill*.‡ It was also called Nob, *the hill*. Here the priests of Jehovah in charge of the Ark dwelt.§ The hill was also called, from its sacred use, the Hill of God, Gibeah of God.|| It afterwards became an important stronghold, and was also called Gibeon.¶ It was within the land of Judah, and must be distinguished from Saul's city, Gibeah of Benjamin, which was also called Gibeon. We do not hear that Hebron, which had its own altar to Jehovah, had also its own ark. But very possibly when the Calebites of Hebron migrated to the city of Jearim they may have carried the Ark with them. This would account for the story of its wandering through the land of the Philistines. However the ark at Gibeah of Judah is the only ark that we hear of. In later days, when the priests of Jerusalem reproached all sacrifices except those at their Altar as Baal-worship and idolatrous, they nicknamed the city of Jearim as Baalah and the city of Baal.** A rival place of worship was called idolatrous, as among Christians it is often called heretical.

Now, for the first time, we are able to mention in our history the Two Tables of the Law in Exodus xx. 1—17, containing the Ten Commandments. They are brought to our notice by the ark which contained them being mentioned for the first time in a trustworthy manner. The earlier mention of the ark, in the case of Eli at Shiloh, seems

* 1 Chron. vi. 28 and 33: † 1 Chron. ii. 42 and 50. ‡ 1 Sam. vii. 1.

§ 1 Sam. xxi. 1. || 1 Sam. x. 5. ¶ 2 Sam. ii. 12.

** Josh. xv. 9 and 60.

of doubtful authority, and may be by a later writer. That these Tables belonged to the tribe of Judah, not to the northern tribes, is probable, because the name of Jehovah, therein used for God, and the ark that held these Tables, and the Levites who had the care of the ark, seem all to belong to Judah. Our knowledge of Hebrew civilization had, before David's reign, been limited to the northern tribes ; but in his reign the two ancient streams unite in one. The northern tribes bring to the common stock the history of the Judges and of Saul's reign ; but the tribe of Judah brings a far higher proof of its being a people more civilised than the nations around, it brings the Ten Commandments, words which even in David's reign were revered for their antiquity, as well as for their religious worth. In the narrative of the march out of Egypt, as we now have it, these remarkable words are said to have been written by the finger of God on two Tables of Stone. In this way, the Levites marked their reverence for this early code, which deserves, and has received from Christians, a respect little short of the words of Jesus Christ. It is stamped with the chief feature in the nation's character, the opinion that morality is founded on religion, or that right views about our conduct follow right views of our Maker. It begins with the great theological truth that there is only one God ; it forbids every form of idolatry, that snare in which the human mind has been so often entangled ; and it lays down the chief moral laws by which we ought all to regulate our lives, adding also that one day in seven should be set apart for rest, a rule wise for ourselves, and humane towards our servants and cattle. Here we have the fountain head from which first the Jewish religion, and afterwards the Christian religion, must trace its birth. As the early narrative of the march is Elohistie, and this is a Jehovistic writing, however much earlier it was written, it must be classed as an after addition to the narrative, inserted in the time of David, or soon after, and as the first of the series of laws which were added from time to time during the next five hundred years.

The early Judges in this history, not even excluding the prophetess Deborah, were all soldiers. Eli, who followed, was a priest ; but his two sons were at the same time Judges, priests, and soldiers. Samuel was not a soldier ; he was

simply a priest acting as Judge, and therefore little fitted to be chieftain of his tribe in times of danger from invasion. Though he was respected by his countrymen for the justice of his rule,* and revered as a prophet and priest, yet the continual wars with the Philistines, and the defeats arising from bad generalship, had taught the Israelites the need for a more active ruler. They saw the advantage that their enemies gained from being governed by a soldier; and therefore, without throwing off Samuel's authority, the heads of the people came up to him in a body at Ramah, and called upon him to appoint a king, who should govern them as the nations with whom they were surrounded were governed. Samuel consented very unwillingly. He warned them of the tyranny that they might hereafter look for. But the immediate danger, both from the Philistines and from the Ammonites, was far more pressing, and they would have a king.† Accordingly, he assembled the heads of the tribes at Mizpeh in Benjamin, and there fixed upon Saul, a young warrior of approved valour, and more than usual height. Saul was of the tribe of Benjamin, and dwelt at Gibeah of Benjamin, and his authority rested for the most part on the warriors of his own tribe; for a very natural jealousy made many of the others unwilling to obey him; and they would contribute nothing to the expenses of the government and of the war.‡ Taxes of all kinds were, at this time, evidently unknown. The priest was supported by gifts; the soldier by his own means and by plunder; and now the king also, on his appointment, expected gifts for his support. That tithes had not yet been enacted, we learn from the writer making Samuel warn the people that hereafter they will have to bear that burden as the price of royalty.§

According to another, but more modern and less trustworthy account, given side by side with the former, Saul had been fixed upon by Samuel, and privately anointed by him as king by the command of Jehovah, before the tribes met at Mizpeh to choose a ruler.||

SAMUEL, KING OF ISRAEL, B.C. 1035—1017?

Saul is one of the very few kings who have risen from a private station to that high rank without being guilty of

* 1 Sam. xii. 1—5. † 1 Sam. viii. ‡ 1 Sam. x. 17—27.

§ 1 Sam. viii. 15.

|| 1 Sam. ix.—x. 16.

either fraud or violence. As judges had been before made because the irregular lawlessness of a tribe led them to wish for a ruler, and led them to give to that ruler power to say who should be punished ; so danger from foreign enemies now led them to wish that the ruler should be a soldier. Saul was chosen because he was the soldier best fitted for the post, at a moment when it was a post of difficulty. He was made king, with power to call the people to arms, because the danger was pressing ; and he immediately took the field against the Ammonites, who, from their tableland on the east of Gilead, had overrun that country, and were besieging the city of Jabesh. Saul sent messengers through the whole of the tribes of Israel, and thus gathered to his standard at Bezek, in the land of Issachar, a larger army than had yet obeyed any Israelite leader. Marching from thence he thoroughly routed the Ammonites ; and on his return southward, after his victory, on crossing into the land of Canaan by the southern ford, he again received the homage of the people as their king, in a more formal manner, at Gilgal.* The ceremony was accompanied by a sacrifice on the altar, as the historian of Samuel's life says, to Jehovah. But this is in part contradicted by what we are afterwards told, that Saul's first altar to Jehovah was built at a later time.

In this muster of the Israelites under Saul, one tenth part of his army were men of Judah. Thus, at present, the tribe of Judah takes no great part with the northern tribes in their struggles against the inhabitants of the land ; but, henceforth we shall find it rising year by year in importance, till at length the whole chain of history runs along the kings of Judah. In the meantime, we shall often be puzzled by the writers' use of the word Israel ; as they sometimes leave us in doubt, when they speak of the Israelites, whether they mean the whole of the tribes, or only the northern tribes, to the exclusion of Judah.

Gilgal, where Saul was this second time declared to be king, was a fortified camp, on the low ground called the Circle of the Jordan, between the hills and the river, not far from the most southerly ford. It was in a barren district, very unsuitable for a city ; but it was important as a military post as long as it was necessary to guard the pas-

* 1 Sam. xi.

sage of the Jordan. It was probably the first spot in the land of Canaan in which the Israelites had entrenched themselves when they came over to attempt the conquest of the land. This may have given to it a religious rank in the mind of the nation beyond what its size deserved, and this may have made Saul wish to receive his appointment as king there.

The next year Saul was sorely pressed by the Philistines, who had occupied, first Gibeah of Judah, and then Michmash, a little to the north of Jerusalem. They are said to have had an army of thirty thousand chariots, six thousand horsemen, and foot-soldiers as the sand of the sea; while Saul had on his side only three thousand men. But these figures only prove the historian's little regard to exactness. Saul himself had to retreat to Gilgal, near the Jordan, thereby gaining the power of crossing the river if he should be further pressed by the enemy. From Gilgal, those Israelites who had joined him from the land of Gad and Gilead deserted him, and returned to their homes.*

Other battles followed in the same neighbourhood, but they are not told with the clearness that would enable us to understand the narrative satisfactorily. The Israelites were badly armed; they did not possess that knowledge of working in iron that the Philistines had.† Saul and his son Jonathan alone in the army had weapons of metal. While the Philistines were at Michmash, Saul kept himself at the very extremity of the land of Gibeah, at Migron, which was, probably, like Gilgal, near to one of the fords, by which he had the power of retreating across the river. But the young Jonathan, the hero of the army, leaving his father there, went forward and defeated the Philistines. Though fighting under great disadvantages, the Israelites now began to be successful. Many of the tribe of Judah who had hitherto served the Philistines, and very probably had been fighting on their side, now deserted from their masters, and joined Saul and Jonathan. These men from Gibeah of Judah, brought with them the Ark of God into Saul's army; and Jehovah saved Israel that day. Those also who, in their alarm, had fled to the hill country of Ephraim, now returned to Saul's camp.‡ The Philistines were again defeated, and were driven from Michmash to Ajalon, beyond

* 1 Sam. xiii. 1—7. † 1 Sam. xiii. 8—23. ‡ 1 Sam. xiv. 1—22.

the limits of the land of Benjamin. Then Saul built his first altar to Jehovah.* This would seem to have been done in gratitude to the men of Judah. To adopt the religious customs of a friendly power was a mode of showing gratitude which we shall often have occasion to mention. Saul had driven back his enemies on every side, defeating, or keeping at a distance, the Syrians of Zobah in the north, the Moabites and Ammonites in the east, and the Edomites and Philistines and Amalekites in the south.†

Saul is now the acknowledged king of all the land of Canaan, except those territories which the geographer has allotted to Simeon and Dan in the south; these were still held by the Philistines; and excepting a few strong cities on the hills, such as Jerusalem and Gezer. Throughout the rest of the country the natives submitted quietly to the Israelites. The larger part of Judah was now free from the heavy yoke of their warlike neighbours, the Philistines; but how much of that country had been held in bondage, or by what struggles they got free, or how far they owed their freedom to Saul, does not appear. It is in Saul's reign, however, that the great tribe of Judah first rises to any importance. On that tribe coming under his rule, he built, as we have been told, his first altar to Jehovah. This important remark of the historian further confirms our opinion, before advanced, that the name of Jehovah was that given to the Almighty by the tribe of Judah, while the name of Elohim, or *God*, and sometimes Baal, or *Lord*, was used among the northern tribes. The tribe of Benjamin may have used either name, according as it was connected politically with the north or the south. It is true, indeed, that in the Book of Judges, which contains history exclusively northern, the writer often describes the northern people as worshipping Jehovah. But in books that have come down to us through the hands of countless copiers, it is not safe to insist upon a word. A copier may, perhaps, either in carelessness or in devoutness, have changed the name of Elohim into Jehovah. And it is clear that the First Book of Samuel, which also insists on the worship of Jehovah, has certainly been freely altered, having had its original political narrative mixed up with modern portions of a priestly bias. In support of the above opinion, it may be

* 1 Sam. xiv. 35.

† 1 Sam. xiv. 47, 48.

further remarked that the worship of Jehovah was peculiar to the Levites, and that they belonged to Judah ; and, again, that the older parts of the Pentateuch, which were written before the rise of Judah, speak only of the worship of Elohim, whilst most of those parts that speak of Jehovah seem modern additions. When, in Deborah's song, the other ten tribes are all mentioned by name, the mighty ones, who are called Jehovah's people, can only be the men of Judah, including Simeon. In the history of the monarchy, when a northern king asks for help from a king of Judah, he is often said to turn to Jehovah ; and, after the captivity in Babylon, when the northern tribes are invited to a union with the south, they are asked to return to Jehovah.

It seems probable that it was in the time of Samuel that a large part of the Book of Judges was written, giving us the history of the early struggles of the northern Israelites. It seems to be the oldest book in the Bible, beginning at chapter iii. 7 to xii., and continued at xvii., xviii. ; and its narrative shows that neither the Book of Joshua, nor any part of the Ceremonial Law in the Pentateuch had been then written. Had the Book of Judges been written later, when the southern portion of the country became more settled and more important, the early wars and difficulties of the tribe of Judah would not have been wholly overlooked, nor would so low a rank have been given to the Levites. The writer, by his knowledge of places, leads us to suppose that he lived in the land of Ephraim. It was re-written, or put together in its present form, at a much later time, when the first two chapters and the last three may have been added, and elsewhere modern words and thoughts, in particular the use of the name Jehovah for God, may have crept in, either by the carelessness of a scribe, or by the design of an editor.

Now that King Saul was governing the tribes, Samuel was relieved from many of the duties which before fell upon him. He continued, however, the respected priest, and as such he acted as judge in civil cases. Moreover, he was a prophet, which means a ready speaker, and he was also a writer, either by his own hand or by that of a scribe. Hence it would seem not unreasonable to suppose him the author of parts of the Book of Judges, and some of the earliest parts of the Pentateuch.

No mention is made in the Bible of the art of writing being new to the people; and hence we may suppose that they had possessed it when living in Lower Egypt, where it had been already practised for many centuries. The square Hebrew letters seem even to have been copied from the Egyptian hieroglyphics. The names of some of them are the Egyptian names of objects which those letters in their original form were meant to represent, as Teth, *a hand*, Vau, *a serpent*, Nun, *water*, Tau, *a hill*. The Israelites had, however, improved upon the Egyptians by having only one character for each sound. But the art at this time can have been understood by very few. It was by no means required by a priest, to enable him to perform his duties, which were chiefly those of sacrificing and burning incense. It was rather more needed by the general of an army, who had to keep a list of his soldiers. The military Scribe is often mentioned in Jewish history; the earliest, perhaps, are the captains spoken of in Deborah's song, who led the men of Zebulun to battle. But if writing was equally necessary to the general and the priest, it was among the priests only that there could be found men and opportunities for teaching it, and learning it, and thus for handing down and improving the art from generation to generation.

To the time of Samuel, however, we may assign the earlier and simpler portions of Exodus and Numbers. Modern criticism has shown that the Pentateuch is a book of very various ages, and that some parts belong to an early time, though others bear the marks of the reigns of the later monarchs. The days of Samuel seem to be the earliest in which quiet was so far established that we can suppose any literary work to have been produced. But as soon as the historians had made a record of the wars and other doings of the people in their own days and of those within the memory of the old men around them, their next step would naturally be to inquire for such traditions as may have been handed down of the early fortunes of their nation; and first in importance among such scattered recollections would be the flight of their forefathers out of Lower Egypt, their forcible settlement in the land of the Amorites, and their then crossing over the Jordan to attempt the conquest of the land of Canaan. It is the fate of history to be written backwards. The writers first re-

cord what is more certainly known, as belonging almost to their own time, and then inquire for the traditions of the past. Among these, the history of the Exodus would be more particularly valued and remembered, because it was by the help of the civilized arts, then brought out of Lower Egypt, that they had been thus far successful in gaining so much good territory from the less civilized owners. These early notices of the past we must search for in the Books of Exodus and Numbers. They may in part be distinguished by the use of the word Elohim for God, but they are interwoven with more modern additions, and they seem to have been very much disarranged. We may put them into better order by the help of the map, and of Numb. xxxiii., in which some later writer has given us a list of the several stations at which the Israelites rested on their march. We may suppose these older passages to be the mention of their ill-treatment by their task-masters, with the birth and marriage of Moses, Exodus i. 8—ii. ; v. 6—14 ; their setting out from Rameses or Heliopolis with unleavened dough because they had not time to prepare proper food for their journey ; their removal to Succoth, the Scenæ of the Roman Itinerary, xii. 37—39 ; their going by the way of Sinai to avoid the land of the Philistines, xiii. 17—20 ; their journeying through the desert of Shur and the desert of Sin, xv. 22—xvi. 1 ; their battle with Amalek, near Rephidim, xvii. 8 ; their encamping in the desert of Sinai, xix. 1 ; then at the Burial Place of Taavah, Numb. xi. 34 ; then at the village of Paran, Numb. xi. 35 ; their removal to the foot of Mount Serbal, the Mount of God, where Moses delivered to them the Law, Exod. xix. 2—8 ; their asking Reuel's son to accompany them as a guide, Numb. x. 29—32 ; their journey to the desert of Paran, Numb. xii. 16 ; their spying out the land near Hebron, Numb. xiii. 21—24 ; their moving to Kadesh in the desert of Zin, Numb. xx. 1 ; their asking leave of the Edomites to pass through their country, Numb. xx. 14—22, and on being refused, their journeying round Edom, Numb. xxi. 4, and 10—20 ; their forcibly dispossessing the Amorites, and then settling on the east bank of the Jordan between the Arnon and the Jabbok ; and, lastly, their after excursions northward as far as the hills of Bashan, where they defeated King Og, and added that fertile pasture land to what they had gained from the

Amorites, Numb. xxi. 21—xxii. 1. Og, perhaps the same as Gog of more modern writers, was the name of the monarch whose imaginary castles, seen upon the mountains in the distance, the traveller thought it not wise to approach. They were at the limits of all geographical knowledge. At this early time this fabulous king held Mount Bashan; in Ezekiel's time he had retreated to the shores of the Caspian Sea; and ten centuries later the Arabic travellers were stopped by him at the foot of the Altai Mountains, in Central Asia. His withdrawing before the advance of geographical explorers proves his unreal character. He is not mentioned in the Book of Judges, in the earlier account of the Israelites settling in the land of the Amorites; it is only in the Book of Numbers that he is attacked and defeated in battle, and only in the more modern Book of Deuteronomy that we learn about his iron bedstead of nine cubits in length.

The Ten Commandments, or rather some similar commandments, would seem to have stood originally, not where we now read them, but immediately after Exodus xix. 6. The careful reader of the Bible will observe that, in Exodus xix. 2—8, which seems to contain the original narrative, Moses goes up the Mount of God, and receives certain commands which he delivers to the people, and these commands the people promise to obey. These commands, as we shall see hereafter, were put aside by the later writer to make way for the more important words which are to follow. In xix. 20, Jehovah calls up Moses a second time, and soon afterwards delivers to him in spoken, not written words, the Ten Commandments, which afterwards, in xxiv. 12, and xxxi. 18, he delivers to him written on the Tables of Stone. From all this, it appears that the present Ten Commandments are in addition to the original narrative, and not part of that which we have thought belonged to the time of Samuel. This conjecture is strengthened by remarking that the one writer uses the word God, and the other the word Jehovah.

In what we suppose the original narrative, by an Elohist writer, there was probably no priesthood, no tabernacle, no ark, no Aaron, no breaking of the Two Tables and delivery of a second pair. But if we may venture to complete the

narrative by a conjecture founded on a very modern passage, the laws, which we ought to have found in Exod. xix., between verses 6 and 7, were carried across the Jordan to Shechem in the land of Ephraim ; since Josh. xxi. 26, tells us that the Book of the Laws of God, the Elohistie Law, was said to be buried there.

This history of the march out of Egypt, written three or four hundred years after the events happened, and handed down, as we must suppose, by memory, cannot be relied upon for the small particulars. But the unvarying belief of the Israelites establishes the great fact of their leaders once having been bond-servants in Lower Egypt ; while the geography of the march is confirmed by our modern travellers over the same route. The spots may some of them be recognized by the description, and some by the translations of the names in the Roman Itinerary. Thus Rameses is Heliopolis, both named from the sun. Succoth, *the tents*, is Scenæ. Etham is Thaum. Hiroth is Heroopolis, and Pihahiroth, the Bay of Hiroth, is the Bay of Heroopolis, which then reached to the northern end of the Bitter Lake. Dophkah, the *Crushing* place, Alush, the *Pounding* place, and Rephidim, the *Spreading* place, all point to the copper-mines of the Egyptians. The Burial place of Taavah, or the Tih range, is yet marked by the Egyptian tombstones. Mount Shepher (or Sepher, *writing*) is known to be Serbal, by the inscriptions on the rocks.

The particulars of the last narrative, namely the conquest of the Amorites, were handed down in a poetical form in a writing entitled The Book of the Wars, of which about eight lines now remain to us. Thus,

Jehovah showed himself at the Red Sea ;
And at the brooks of the Arnon ;
And at the source of the brooks that turn to Shebeth-Ar,
And lean upon the boundary of Moab.

As this is a Jehovistic poem, it was probably afterwards added from sources not in the possession of the Elohistie writer, who probably belonged to the tribe of Ephraim. The other four lines, which were perhaps part of the same poem, are—

Spring up, O Well. (Sing ye unto it ;)
O Well, which the princes digged,
The nobles of the people hollowed out,
With the staff of power, with their staves.*

To this simple narrative of the march out of Egypt, which may well have been committed to writing in the time of Samuel as an introduction to the history of the Judges, later writers added, as a new introduction, a narrative of earlier times, the supposed account of their first settlement in Egypt, and then one of yet earlier times, with the origin of their family in Syria among the sources of the Euphrates, and then a conjectural account of the supposed origin of the human race and of the creation of the world. In every case, the history of the earlier times was written last. And during the years that these portions of the Pentateuch were being added at the beginning, other large portions were being mingled in with the narrative of the march, and being added at the end. The additions contain the whole remaining portion of the Jewish law, partly ecclesiastical and partly civil, which is given to us in the form of commands spoken either by God to Moses, their great leader on the march, or by Moses himself to the assembled people. Of these, the earliest laws were the Ten Commandments, written on Two Tables of stone, which were no doubt part of the contents of the sacred Ark which we lately heard of in the City of Jearim, and which we shall hear more of in the coming history. The later laws were added from time to time during the next five hundred years, as they were called for by the growth of cities, the more settled ownership of the soil, the changes in the temple-service, and by the rise, and then the decline, of the priestly power. Some of these later laws will be hereafter mentioned in what we venture to think their proper places in the history.

Before the end of Saul's reign, says the historian, it repented Jehovah that he had made Saul king. Saul had not been so severe upon the neighbouring idolaters as the priests, or rather the priestly historian, thought he ought to have been. When he led his troops against the Amalekites of the south, he was ordered by Samuel to put to death every living creature in their country, not only men, women, and

* Numb. xxi. 14—18.

children, but even the cattle. But in these religious wars, the soldier was not quite so cruel as the priest. Saul thought he had obeyed the command when he had slain every soul that he met with, except Agag, the king, whom he brought as a prisoner to Gilgal, with a few of the best of the cattle. But Samuel was displeased at this tenderness for the conquered king, and at this greediness for spoil, though Saul said that the cattle were meant as a sacrifice; and the prophet told Saul that God would punish him by taking away the kingdom from him. Samuel then had Agag brought to him, and with his own hand he hewed the prisoner in pieces before Jehovah. The friendship between Samuel and Saul was at an end.* So Samuel remained at Ramah, and came no more to see Saul at Gibeah.† The marked difference in character between the warlike, perhaps the irreligious Saul, and the pious priest and prophet Samuel, gave rise to a Hebrew proverbial question, meant to express surprise at something improbable, "What! is Saul among the prophets?" And out of the proverb may have grown up the doubtful story, that in a mad fit he went to Ramah, and, stripping his clothes off, prophesied naked before Samuel.

Saul was now evidently losing favour with the people, whose eyes were turned to a young warrior in his army of the name of David, a native of Beth-lehem in Judah. We have two stories of David's first introduction to Saul, and of their whole intercourse, as we had two stories of Samuel's making Saul king. In one, the priestly narrative, written in Solomon's reign after the publication of a collection of Psalms had given to David the character of a musician, he is brought to King Saul to play before him on the harp, and amuse him in times of illness when an evil spirit troubled him.‡ In the other, the earlier narrative, he is first known to the king on his stepping forward as the champion of the army, and slaying, with his shepherd's sling and a pebble, Goliath, a well-armed giant, the champion of the Philistines.§ At first he was a great favourite with Saul, and Saul's son, Jonathan; and Saul promised to give him his eldest daughter in marriage. But after a time Saul became distrustful of his young captain. David's popularity with

* 1 Sam. xv. 1—33.

† 1 Sam. xv. 34, 35.

‡ 1 Sam. xvi. 14—23.

§ 1 Sam. xvii. 1—xviii. 5.

the people had alarmed Saul for the safety of his throne ; and his jealousy was naturally roused when the women who came out to meet the army on its return from one of David's victories over the Philistines sang in answers as they played on their harps, "Saul hath slain his thousands, and David his tens of thousands." In one of his moments of fretful passion, he even hurled his spear at him, and tried to kill him ; and he gave his daughter to another. But Saul's son, the young Jonathan, whose goodness of heart was equal to his bravery in war, was warmly attached to David, and befriended him from his father's madness, while Saul's younger daughter, Michal, fell in love with him, and married him, and helped him to escape.*

David fled first westward to Nob, in the land of Judah, where he was among friends. Nob *the hill*, was probably another name for Gibeah of Judah, where we before met with the Ark of Jehovah, when it had been brought to the City of Jearim ; and at Nob the priests dwelt. There they not only possessed an ark, but had at least so much of the Levitical worship as to have an Ephod, and a Presence Table, on which the holy bread was set out in the presence of Jehovah. From Nob, David fled to Gath, in the land of Dan, a district where the Israelites lived among the Philistines, for there the Israelites had not yet been able to dispossess the owners of the soil. In Gath he offered his services to the Philistine king Achish ; but he was distrusted and not received.†

Upon this, David withdrew to the cave of Adullam, a few miles to the south of Bethlehem in Judah, his native place. There he was joined by his brothers, or rather by his nephews, and by a body of discontented adventurers ; and he soon found himself the captain of four hundred men. These were not enough at once to raise the standard of rebellion against Saul, but they were able to earn their livelihood as freebooters, whether they should think fit to attack the Benjamites or the Philistines.‡ And here, it may be said, begins the history of Judah, which henceforth runs side by side with the history of the northern Israelites, to which we have been hitherto confined. It begins with the war between Saul of Benjamin and David of Judah. David had

* 1 Sam. xviii. xix. xx. † 1 Sam. xxi. ‡ 1 Sam. xxii. 1, 2.

been Saul's captain, but was now in arms against him. The small number of four hundred men, here given to David, makes us remark on the greater trustworthiness in regard to numbers, in some writers than in others; for Saul was said to have been attacked by the Philistines with 30,000 chariots and 6000 horsemen, beside the foot-soldiers.

In preparation for war against the Benjamites, David placed his father and mother in safety with the king of Moab, a tribe friendly to Judah, for he was so far in rebellion that Saul had put to death eighty-five priests of Jehovah at Nob, as friends to David, because one of them had helped David in his flight. As before remarked, the worship of Jehovah belonged to the tribe of Judah, not to the northern tribes under Saul. One only of that body of priests escaped to David with the linen ephod, the mark of his office. He was thus able to give to David's wars the apparent sanction of Jehovah; and he lived to receive from David, as his reward, the office of high priest to the altar of Jehovah in Jerusalem, when David became king of the whole of the twelve tribes. But David's first battle was against the Philistines, who were plundering the men of Judah at Keilah, on the border between the two nations. He defeated the Philistines, and saved the men of Keilah; but still he would not trust himself to remain with them. Saul was marching against him; and he feared that the men of Keilah would deliver him up to the king. So he left that city with his troop, which had now increased to about six hundred men.*

He then retreated to the desert of Ziph, to the south of Hebron, where he dwelt in what we may call a thicket-camp, probably a village of huts, intrenched with shrubs and ditches, such as those in which the helpless country-people were glad to seek for safety. But David, on finding that the men of Ziph would willingly give him up to Saul, retired still farther south, into the desert of Maon, and then sought safety among the Edomites, between whom and the people of southern Judea there was very little distinction of race, and no attempt to draw a boundary line. There he took refuge in the city of Sela, *the Rock*, better known by its Greek name, Petra. It seems also to have borne the name

* 1 Sam. xxii. 3—xxiii. 13.

of Mibzar, *the fortress*. This is a remarkable fastness entered through a narrow cleft in the rock, and it is valuable for its spring of water, while the country round is a desert. But even there Saul would have followed, had he not been called back by the news that the Philistines were making an inroad upon his territory at home.* On Saul's retreating, David came northward as far as Ain-gedi, near the southern end of the Dead Sea. There Saul again came down upon him; and the historian has two interesting but improbable stories of David having an opportunity of killing him in an unguarded moment, but refusing to do hurt to the "anointed of Jehovah."† As he afterwards put to death seven of Saul's unoffending sons and grandsons, he is not likely to have so spared his enemy, Saul himself, if he had at any time fallen into his hands. While living in the southern desert, David married a third wife, namely Abigail of Carmel in Maon. He had before married Ahinoam of Jezreel, a village near to Maon. But Michal, Saul's daughter, who had been given to him as a wife, had since been taken away from him and been given to another man.‡

David, however, did not feel himself safe in any part of the land of Israel while Saul was thus pursuing him; so he again turned to the Philistines; and his former friend Achish, king of Gath, gave him the city of Ziklag for a residence, where he settled with his two wives and his six hundred men. The difference between the men of Judah and the Philistines was not then so wide as it became after Judah had joined northern Israel to make one kingdom. Ziklag was in the South Country, and it might with equal reason be called either a city of the Philistines, or of the Edomites, or of Judah. From thence David could conveniently make excursions for booty. His first attack was upon the Amalekites and their neighbours in the south-west, where he destroyed everything that he met with. But, in order to gain the confidence of his Philistine friend, Achish, and to prove the earnestness of his enmity to his own people the Israelites, he told him that his attack had been upon the southern parts of Judea.§ At this time though stealing might be thought wrong, open robbery with violence was an honourable employment, blamed by nobody. He

* 1 Sam. xxiii.

‡ 1 Sam. xxv. 43, 44.

† 1 Sam. xxiv. xxvi.

§ 1 Sam. xxvii.

wished to be employed by Achish against Saul ; and Achish was willing to trust him. But the other Philistines thought it dangerous to employ him ; and when the Philistines marched against Saul, David had to be left behind.*

Of the several battles which the brave Saul may have fought, on his retreat before the advancing army of the Philistines, we are not told. We last heard of him in Southern Judah, and we next hear of him preparing for what was to be his fatal overthrow in the very northern end of his kingdom.

Saul, on hearing of the approach of the Philistines, and feeling his own weakness, would have been glad of the advice and religious support of Samuel. But Samuel was now dead ; and Saul inquired of Jehovah, by the prophets, and by dreams, and also by Urim, which may have meant by casting lots in the presence of the priest. He could, however, get no satisfactory answer. But his superstition increased with his fears and as the danger became more pressing. When he was in prosperity, he had forbidden his subjects to consult wizards, but now he hoped to obtain some comfort from them himself. So he went for the advice of a wise woman, who professed to be able to call up the dead and question them. She was probably something of a ventriloquist ; she had a large jar or bottle, out of which the voice of the person raised from the dead seemed to come. She lived at Endor, or Ain-dor near Mount Gilboa, where Saul had retreated with his army, and was expecting the attack of the Philistines. When Saul came to her, she asked whom he would wish to have brought up. He answered, "Samuel ;" and presently a voice out of the bottle asked why he had disturbed him. Saul saw nobody, but trusted to the woman's description of the prophet. Saul said that he was in fear of the Philistines, and could learn nothing about his future fate, either by dreams or from the prophets. The voice then told him that Jehovah would shortly take the kingdom from him and give it to David, and would deliver the Israelites into the hand of the Philistines. Such was the method by which the fortune-tellers, both among the Israelites and among the Egyptians, professed, by means of their speaking-bottles, to receive from

the dead answers to their questions ; and there is nothing improbable in the story of Saul, in his distress, having consulted such a woman.*

Whether the voice from the speaking bottle really gave such an answer to Saul may be doubted ; the answer was probably gathered from the event that followed. The Philistines attacked the Israelites near Mount Gilboa, and routed them thoroughly. Saul and Jonathan, and two other sons, who were with him in the battle, were all slain. The Israelites in the valley of Ajalon forsook their cities, and fled, leaving it to the Philistines to take possession of them. So thorough was the defeat that the Philistines even crossed the Jordan, and laid waste the lands on the east of the river, though they did not think it worth while to make a settlement there.†

Saul, as we learn from the name of the son who succeeded him, was a worshipper of the Almighty under the name of Baal, *lord or master* ; but we have no reason to think that he was an idolater. His son's name was Ishbaal, *the man of Baal*, which the southern writers, in their horror of the word Baal, altered reproachfully into Ishbosheth, *the man of Shame*, the name by which he is best known. Saul had also a grandson, known by the two names of Mephibosheth, *the utterance of Shame*, and Meribbaal, *the Rebellion of Baal*. Both of these seem to be only reproachful nicknames. The real name may have been Mephi-baal, *the utterance of Baal*. Gideon also, the early hero of the tribe of Ephraim, had borne the name of Jerubbaal, and had been called by a southern writer Jerub-bosheth.‡ Hence we may reasonably suppose that the worship, by the Israelites, of God, by the name of Baal was by no means always idolatrous. But, as the name of Baal was at the same time given by the surrounding nations to one of their numerous gods, the use of it was dangerous, and was strongly objected to by the Levites, and by the tribe of Judah, who insisted upon the use of the word Jehovah, their distinctive name for God. Three centuries later, we find the prophet Hosea describing Jehovah as ordering the Israelites not to address him as Baali *my master*. Thus we see that, though the name was objectionable, the use of it did not prove idolatry ; and when the southern writers reproach the northern tribes with the wor-

* 1 Sam. xxviii.

† 1 Sam. xxxi.

‡ 2 Sam. xi. 21.

ship of Baal, it does not of itself prove that they had deserted the worship of the One God. It proves, however, that the name of God was not the same in the north as in Judea; and it goes far to confirm our former conjecture, that the early writings by authors who belonged to Ephraim and Benjamin did not use the holy name of Jehovah, and that it has, in some places, crept into these writings by the carelessness of the later scribes who belonged to Judah.

DAVID, KING OF JUDAH. ISHBAAL, OR ISHBOSHETH, KING OF ISRAEL. B.C. 1016.

Upon this rout of the Israelites at Gilboa in the north, there remained at the moment no body of troops strong enough to hold together and to secure for Saul's surviving son the kingdom of his father. David, with his six hundred followers at Ziklag in the south, was for the moment without a rival. He accordingly marched to Hebron, the chief city of Judah. There he was among friends. The men of Hebron were akin to the men of Beth-lehem, David's native place; and in Hebron his countrymen anointed him king. This may have been about B.C. 1016. The tribe of Judah, however, alone obeyed him.*

David then sent messengers into Gilead to invite the obedience of the eastern tribes, well knowing that he had less favour to expect from the northern tribes. But, in the meantime Abner, the captain of Saul's army, had hastened across the Jordan with Saul's only remaining son Ishbosheth, and brought him to Mahanaim, a fortified camp, at that time the military capital of the country on the east of the Jordan. There he was well received, and was proclaimed king over Gilead; and the whole of the northern tribes, including Benjamin in the middle, followed the example. Thus the country, which under Saul had been united into one kingdom, though by very slight bonds, was now broken into two. David was king of Judah, and Ishbosheth was king of Israel, while Simeon and the southern land of Dan were held by the Philistines. This name Israel is, however, used very inexactly, sometimes meaning the twelve tribes, and sometimes the northern and eastern, as separate from Judah. And henceforth, when we meet with it, we are often left in

* 2 Sam. ii. 1—4.

doubt whether the writer means by it the whole of the tribes, or only a part of them.*

This division of the tribes into two kingdoms was followed by a civil war, in which David's best warriors were Joab, Abishai, and Asahel, the sons of his sister Zeruiah; while Saul's son, Ishbosheth, relied chiefly on the support and zeal of Abner, a member of his family. Their battles were fought with only a small number of men in each army. The first battle was at Gibeon or Gibeah, of Judah, which, as being the most northerly post of the men of Judah, it was of importance for Ishbosheth's party to gain. There at first twelve men on each side met and slew one another, as champions for the rest. After this beginning, the army of Israel was routed by that of Judah, and fled across the Jordan to Mahanaim; but Abner, Ishbosheth's captain, killed David's nephew, Asahel, who had pursued him too rashly in his flight. In this, perhaps the greatest of their battles, David's little army lost twenty men, while those slain on Ishbosheth's side were three hundred and sixty.†

So slight was the tie of blood between the southern and the northern tribes of Israel, and so slight also the separation between either of these tribes and the tribes around, that David, when attacked by Saul, had not hesitated to ask help from the Philistines on the west; and now, in his war with Saul's son, he made a similar friendly alliance with Nahash, king of the Ammonites, on the east.‡ Ishbosheth's difficulties could not but be increased by some of his troops being needed to oppose the inroads of the Ammonites.

After the war had continued for some time with not a little suffering to both nations, David gained a great accession of strength in the treachery of Abner, who had received an affront from Ishbosheth, and who may have seen that he was on the losing side. Abner sent to David to propose to make a private agreement with him, and to bring over all Israel to his rule. David was willing to treat with him, but first required him to send to him his former wife, Saul's daughter Michal, who had been taken away from him and given to another man, and who could now be of great service to him as uniting him to Saul's family. Moreover, if she were sent, it would be a proof that Abner had both the will

* 2 Sam. ii. 5—11.

† 2 Sam. ii. 12—32.

‡ 2 Sam. x. 2.

and the power to help him in his ambitious aims. Ishbosheth must have been a very weak man, entirely governed by Abner, for he allowed him to send Michal to David, who, by recovering her, might again be called Saul's son-in-law, and thus gain a title to the throne second only to that of Ishbosheth, whom he was trying to overthrow. Abner then, pursuing his treacherous design, addressed himself to the Israelites, and to the Benjamites in particular, urging them to take David as their king. He then came himself to Hebron, and trusted himself in the power of David, against whom he had lately been fighting. David received him favourably, and sent him back to continue his endeavours to bring over the northern tribes. During this interview between David and Abner, David's nephew Joab had been absent on a plundering expedition; and on his return with his booty, he reproached his uncle for having allowed Abner to go back alive. He had not forgotten that Abner had killed his brother, and he also thought that Abner intended to deceive David, not to betray Ishbosheth. He accordingly sent some messengers after Abner, who brought him back to Hebron, and Joab there slew him, stabbing him under the fifth rib. Against this act of Joab, David thought it necessary to protest publicly, and he washed his hands of the treachery by complaining of his nephew's disobedience. But his lament over Abner amounted to little more than blame for his folly in allowing himself to be slain by treachery.*

The death of Abner was immediately followed by the ruin of Ishbosheth, and he was soon assassinated by two of his own captains. He had reigned two years.† But his death did not immediately make David king of the whole country. The northern tribes would seem to have remained five years longer in a state of confusion without a leader, for no one seems to have proposed to make Ishbosheth's lame nephew, Mephibosheth, king. But at the end of that time the heads of the northern tribes came to David at Hebron, and promised obedience to him; and they made him king over all Israel as well as over Judah. This was B.C. 1008. He had already reigned seven years and six months in Hebron over Judah alone, and was now thirty-eight years of age.‡

* 2 Sam. iii.

† 2 Sam. ii. 10.

‡ 2 Sam. v. 1—5.

DAVID KING OF BOTH ISRAEL AND JUDAH. B.C. 1008—976.

David's rebellion against Saul may have been forced upon him by Saul's conduct. His being made king in Hebron over the tribe of Judah may have been by the willing choice of his countrymen. But his seizing upon northern Israel was an act of lawless violence ; and a throne gained by the sword, and held by the right of conquest, must be supported by the sword.

No sooner was David king of both halves of the country, than he felt the want of a capital for his kingdom. His own city, Hebron, was too far southward, and to live there would be to turn his back upon the larger half of his subjects. Saul's city, Gibeah of Benjamin, was little better than an open village, or as its name tells us, a hill-top. Gibeon the fortress, held by his own friends the men of Judah, may have been too small. To fix upon a city in Ephraim or Manasseh would have been to place himself in the middle of his less trusted subjects, and at a distance from Judah, to whom he looked for his chief support. The strong city of the Jebusites, since known as Jerusalem, built on Mount Zion, a rock at the boundary between Benjamin and Judah, which was still in the hands of the native inhabitants, was in every way suited to his purpose. He had only to seize upon it as he had done in other cases ; and if it were stronger than any he had before taken, so also was his army. The Jebusites boasted that even the blind and the lame would be able to defend its walls against an enemy. But Jerusalem is wholly without wells, and dependent on the neighbouring pools for its water, which was brought in by an open trough or aqueduct, from the high ground near the north-west corner of the city. By this water-course David's soldiers stormed the place, and they thus gained for him the possession of this city, now so celebrated. He at once strengthened the walls, and in particular built a strong tower or castle, called Millo and Beth-millo, to keep the conquered inhabitants in obedience. It probably stood on the high ground at the north-east corner of the city, where the castle of Antonia stood in more modern days.* Jerusalem was henceforth the chief city of the Israelites. But the Jebu-

* 2 Sam. v. 5—10.

sites were still allowed to dwell there, if not in Zion, the city proper, at least in the northern suburb, under the threatening walls of Millo.* We may suppose, from the situation of their city, that they were a part of the tribe of the Children of Ammon, who once held that land. We shall hereafter see that David lived on friendly terms with Araunah, the king of the Jebusites.†

Now that David was king of a larger country than before, he showed his increased importance in that truly eastern style of adding to the number of his wives and concubines. At Ziklag he had two wives ; when king of Hebron he had six wives and as many sons ; and in Jerusalem, with his larger number of wives, eleven more sons were born to him.‡ This debasing practice of having numerous wives was followed by all David's successors, and by many of their nobles, and must be counted as one of the most certain causes of the nation's ruin. And we remark, in passing, that one of David's youngest children had the double name of El-iada, *God knoweth*,§ and Baal-iada, *the Lord knoweth*,|| showing that the name of Baal was at this time, by no means set aside as idolatrous.

In order to terrify his enemies, and mark his future conduct, David had seven of Saul's sons and grandsons impaled or crucified in Saul's own city Gibeah, sparing, however, the lame Mephibosheth, whose weakness rendered him powerless as a rival. This act of cruelty was said to be done to satisfy the Gibeonites, a remnant of the native race who were living in the land of Benjamin. But we may rather suppose that the Gibeonites, whose death was to be avenged, were the priests of Jehovah, whom Saul slew at Nob, which was another name for Gibeon, or Gibeah of Judah. And again we may be sure that as Saul's family were "impaled on the hill before Jehovah," it was at Gibeah of Judah, where the altar to Jehovah stood, not at Gibeah of Saul, that seven victims of a selfish policy were made a sacrifice to Jehovah.¶ This took place in the first month of the year, at the beginning of the barley harvest, which was of course the time of the Passover-feast. It was no doubt from religious reasons that public executions were appointed to take place at that

* Jos. xv. 63.

† 2 Sam. xxiv.

‡ 2 Sam. iii. 1—5 ; v. 13—16.

§ 2 Sam. v. 16.

|| 1 Chron. xiv. 7.

¶ 2 Sam. xxi. 1—14.

solemn time. In the same way the Egyptians put their criminals to death as a sacrifice to their god Osiris. When this was done in either country to give a religious solemnity to a dreadful act of justice, to show that life was destroyed, not in haste or anger, but after delay with due thought, we need not class it with the human sacrifices of savages ; but here in the case of David's slaughter of Saul's grandsons, the making use of the name of Jehovah seems to add to the wickedness of the deed.

David's being made king of all Israel did not intimidate the Philistines or check their eagerness for spoil ; and their troops spread over the land, and even into the Valley of Giants on the north-west of Jerusalem. But there he twice defeated them, and drove them back from Gibeah to the strong hill fortress of Gezer in the land of Ephraim.*

David as soon as he was at leisure proposed to give a religious sanction to his new capital, and for this purpose he removed the Ark of God, "whose name is Jehovah," from Gibeah. This was done with much ceremony, but in a manner wholly unlike that afterwards ordered in Numbers iv. After allowing it to rest for three months outside the city, he went forth and joined the procession of dancers and musicians ; and being himself clothed with a priestly linen robe, the Ephod, and dancing with the rest, he brought it into Jerusalem, and lodged it under a tent there pitched for it. Then, on an altar placed in front of it, he offered burnt offerings and peace offerings to Jehovah ; and with the latter he feasted the assembled people.† The Ark and the Ten Commandments written on the Two Tables within it, belonged to that part of the Israelites who worshipped God under the name of Jehovah, and it can now claim a more important place in history. It can have had no cover of solid gold, like that of Exodus xxxvii., nor did David, when he brought it up to Jerusalem, bring with it the Tent under which it stood ; he left that behind at Gibeah.‡ Zadok and Abiathar the Levites were in authority in Jerusalem when the Ark was brought into that city by David ; and with them began the ceremonial worship of Jehovah there, which was continued by their successors with such costly rites and sacrifices. Whether the prophet Samuel called upon the

* 2 Sam. v. 17—25.

† 2 Sam. vi.

‡ 2 Chron. i. 3.

name of Jehovah, as stated in his life, or upon Elohim, God, seems doubtful.

These peaceable doings, however, did not long detain David from his wars. He again defeated the Philistines, and then took the city of Gath their chief city in his neighbourhood, and that which gave a great strength to their marauding inroads. This capture of Gath the Hebrew historian calls snatching the bridle on his chief city out of the hands of its enemies.* The Philistines seem to have carried on the war for plunder, and against them David fought in self-defence.

On the other side of his country, David was stronger than his neighbours, and there in his turn he looked for plunder. He invaded the land of Moab, and cruelly slaughtered two-thirds of those that he took captive. He laid them on the ground and measured them with a line, slaying two measures of men, and leaving one measure alive. The country of Moab then remained tributary to David. During this and the following reign, the few Jews who dwelt there, called the tribe of Reuben, may have been masters of the land which they claimed as their own.

Modern and more civilized ages justly criticize the cruelty with which these wars were carried on. The policy has been nearly the same in all times. Might was thought to give right. A king's aim was to widen his dominions and to gain more tributary subjects. If a neighbouring state consented to pay a tribute, the conqueror was satisfied. A time perhaps soon came when it could venture to withhold the tribute. Then followed more cruel wars, and probably a second conquest.

After the conquest of Moab, David marched against the Syrians on his northern boundary who were at that time quarrelling among themselves. The Syrians, like the Israelites, were divided into several tribes, or little states. These were the Syrians of Zobah, the Syrians of Hamah, the Syrians of Damascus, and the Syrians beyond the river Euphrates. This confederacy of little states, the Hebrew writers sometimes term an assembly of bulls with their calves.† Hadadezer, king of Zobah, had gone towards the Euphrates to recover his boundary, which used to be at that

* 1 Chron. xviii. 1 ; comp. 2 Sam. viii. 1.

† Isaiah xxxiv. 7 ; Psalm lxviii. 30.

river ; and David defeated his troops while he was at a distance, and brought away horses for one hundred chariots. The Syrians of Damascus then hastened to succour the king of Zobah ; but David defeated them also with great slaughter, and placed garrisons in Damascus and the neighbouring towns, and for a time made that little state pay a tribute to him. His treaty with the king of Damascus may be the original of that between Laban and Jacob, in Genesis xxxi., when Bashan was allowed to belong to the Syrian, and Gilead to Israel. Mizpeh, *the watch-tower*, was Israel's frontier post.

Toi, king of Hamath, with whom Hadadezer had been at war, sent a willing tribute to David, and became his servant, as the other Syrians were forced to do unwillingly. On the south David was equally successful ; he conquered the Philistines, the Amalekites and the Edomites, put garrisons in their cities, and made them also tributaries.* The wish for plunder, which was at times the king's chief source of revenue, rather than passion or quarrels, seems to have been the cause of most of these early wars. As little or nothing was spent on the military preparations, a successful war was always a source of profit.

Perhaps the conquest of Edom should be placed rather later in David's reign, because a child named Hadad, one of the family of the kings of Edom, who escaped from the slaughter brought upon the Edomites by Joab, David's captain, and was carried off into Egypt as a place of safety, lived to trouble the Israelites, and to gain the throne of his forefathers, towards the end of Solomon's reign.†

David was now safely seated on his throne, and at leisure to attend to his civil affairs. His chief officers were his nephew Joab, who was his captain, a recorder, a scribe, a captain of his body guard of axe-bearers and runners, and two chief priests. These two priests, Zadok and Abiathar, were Levites ; but the priesthood was not limited to the Levites, as David's sons were also priests, though probably only the eldest son of each wife, and David must have claimed the same rank for himself when he wore an Ephod. David then remembered the kindness that he had formerly received from Saul's son Jonathan ; and in order to make

* 2 Sam. viii.

† 1 Kings xi. 14.

him some return he fetched Jonathan's son Mephibosheth, whose lameness made him no object of political jealousy, and allowed him to live near to him at Jerusalem, and gave him a maintenance from the royal table.*

We may here place two of David's acts which the historian mentions late in his reign, but which seem to belong to the earliest time after he was safe upon his throne ; namely, his numbering the people, and his raising an altar to Jehovah on the hill on the east side of the capital. The latter act, in particular, was not likely to be delayed long after his priests had been established in the city. David's proposal to have a careful numbering made of the people of his kingdom, was made probably with the view to a regular collection of taxes for the support of his government. Though regular taxation existed in Egypt, it was unknown among the Israelites. Joab and the other captains earnestly endeavoured to dissuade him from this unpopular act ; but David was firm to his purpose, and he committed the task to the captains of his army. It probably could not have been performed without some little display of force. These officers passed through the whole land from north to south, and on both sides of the Jordan ; they made some kind of rough survey of the land ; and at the end of nine months they brought back word to the king that he had in Judah five hundred thousand men of the military age, and in Israel eight hundred thousand. This is a very improbable number which could only be found in a population of six or more millions, and such a population is many times what we can believe was the number of David's subjects. This act of making a register of the population would seem to have been with a view to a levy of soldiers, or of labourers, or perhaps to the introduction of a land tax, that known by the name of the tithe. In Egypt, when the Israelites were there, the king claimed one-fifth part of the produce of the land for the support of his government and army.† But that would have pressed too heavily upon the poorer land of Canaan. We have lately read of the prophet Samuel warning the Israelites that, if they appointed a king to rule over them, he would claim a tenth of the produce of their land for the support of his numerous servants.‡ And this is what David probably aimed at. At what time the Levites

* 2 Sam. viii., ix.

† Genesis xli. 34.

‡ 1 Sam. viii. 15.

received or claimed the tithes for themselves we shall find a difficulty in fixing, in consequence of the difficulty of determining when the several laws relating to the tithes were added to the Pentateuch. The Levites were, in the first instance, maintained by the heave offerings and freewill offerings of the faithful, and by a share of their peace offerings, and they seem never to have claimed the tithe while the king was able to collect it. If this numbering of the people was for the purpose of collecting a tax we can well understand why it was so unpopular. A pestilence, which soon afterwards came upon the land, was thought to have been sent by Jehovah as a punishment for this act.*

When David thus surveyed the country and numbered the people, he probably divided his kingdom into its well-known twelve tribes, as set forth shortly after this time in the history of Jacob's family. Zebulun had hitherto claimed to reach to the furthest north, even to the Sidonians;† and not till David had driven out the Syrians, was that great district lessened, by making Naphtali and Asher into two new tribes. In the south, his conquests were not so complete, nor the tribes so real. The Simeonites did not so far overcome the Philistines as to gain the lands assigned to them; nor did the Reubenites wholly gain that portion of Moab which they claimed as their own. The Levites were, about the same time, declared to be a thirteenth tribe, though no lands were given to them. They lived upon the offerings of the worshippers.

It is not impossible that we may have some of the results of David's survey in the Book of Joshua, as we know of no time after Solomon's death when the boundaries of all the tribes were likely to have been surveyed and described. This early information may easily have found a place in the newer book.

The author of the Books of Chronicles, writing five hundred years later, describes among the several sources of the king's income, the large crown lands, and gives the names of the overseers who had charge of the tillage. But this information relates to some of his successors, perhaps to Uzziah, who gave much attention to husbandry. No such lands are mentioned by the Book of Kings, even in Solomon's more quiet reign. It was for want of such sources

* 2 Sam. xxiv. 1—17.

† Gen. xlix. 13.

of income that most of the nation's wars were undertaken. With our modern system of warfare, war has become very expensive ; but it was not so when life was less valued, and therefore the means of defending and of killing were less carefully studied and prepared. In those less civilized times, the booty seized from the enemies that resisted invasion, and the tribute wrung from those that quietly submitted, were looked to as the chief sources of a monarch's income.

The next act in David's reign, one which gains great importance from the after history of the nation, was his raising an altar to Jehovah on Mount Moriah, a hill on the east side of Jerusalem. The bare rock on the top of the hill had been used as a threshing floor, according to the custom of the people, who brought their corn from the country around to be threshed on such a spot, because there the wind would blow away the chaff. It was the threshing floor of Araunah, king of the Jebusites.* It was usual with the Israelites, both of the north and the south, to place their altars of sacrifice on such hills. Such a hill was called *Bahulah*, a *high place*, and hence, perhaps, the Greek word *Bomos*, an altar. Samuel had sacrificed on such a High Place at Ramah.† There was also a great High Place at Gibeon, or Gibeah, of Judah, of more than usual holiness.‡ Probably every part of the land had its own High Place, where the people of the neighbourhood sacrificed to Heaven in their own fashion. Hence it was very natural for David, now that he had established his seat of government in Jerusalem, a foreign city, where the God of his fathers had not hitherto been worshipped, to look out for a suitable hill for a High Place or altar. When it had been chosen, he bought it of Araunah, and there offered up his burnt offerings of oxen to Jehovah on behalf of himself and of the nation.

The hill on which David sacrificed received the name of Mount Moriah, or *that sheweth*, because the will of Jehovah was there declared by the priests. Other holy spots had gained a name for the same reason, such as the Oak of Moreh, near Shechem.§ The rock on which the altar stood, the threshing-floor of Araunah, is now inclosed under the dome of the Mosque of Omar.

The next war which engaged David's attention was against

* 2 Sam. xxiv. 18—25.

† 1 Kings iii. 4.

‡ 1 Sam. ix. 12.

§ Genesis xii. 6.

the Ammonites. This people had been David's friends while both were at war with Saul's son, Ishbosheth ; but as soon as David was the acknowledged king of Eastern Israel, the friendship cooled and then quarrels between them arose. The Ammonites had put an affront on some of David's servants, who had been sent to them with a friendly message. In preparation for David's attack, the Ammonites now hired a large body of Syrians from Rehob, Zobah, Tob, and Maacah. They formed their camp in front of the city of Medeba, near Heshbon on the table-land of Moab. But their joint forces were defeated by the Israelites under David's two nephews, Joab and Abishai. The Syrians then made the war their own ; and Hadadezer, king of Zobah, sent for a larger body of men from his countrymen beyond the Euphrates. Upon this, David marched out in person ; he crossed the Jordan, and defeated the allied Syrians, who thereupon made peace with him and returned home, leaving the Ammonites to suffer the consequences of David's anger.*

David's difficulties in the east were increased by the coldness of his eastern subjects, who had opposed him as long as any one of Saul's family claimed the throne. The eastern tribes were only kept in obedience by his placing among them, at Jazer in Gilead, a body of his most faithful troops from Hebron, in number two thousand seven hundred. These men were the lords over the Reubenites, the Gadites, and the half-tribe of Manasseh.†

In the following year, "at the time when kings go forth to battle," a mode of dating which explains the frequency of these marauding inroads, David sent Joab with troops against the Ammonites, and they laid siege to Rabbah, the chief city in that country.‡ Joab was so far successful that he took an important suburb, called the City on the Waters ; so called, probably, from the tanks or pools, which gathered in a supply of water for the city, and made it weaker on that side. On this Joab checked his troops, and like a true friend to David, he sent to invite him to come and complete the conquest in person, and thus receive the honours of the victory. David did so ; he took the city, placed the crown of the Ammonite king on his own head, put the inhabitants

* 2 Sam. x. ; 1 Chron. xix.

† 1 Chron. xxvi. 32.

‡ 2 Sam. xi. 1.

to death by the cruellest means, such as saws and harrows of iron, and returned to Jerusalem with a great spoil, after treating the neighbouring cities with equal cruelty.* Humanity had as yet placed no limit to the rights of the strong over the weak.

It was while the army was engaged on this siege of Rabbah, before Joab's success, that David took to himself Bathsheba, the wife of Uriah. To get rid of the husband, he sent him to join the army, with the cold-blooded instructions written to Joab that he should place him in the front of the battle, and then withdraw the soldiers from him, so that he could not fail of being slain. Joab showed no hesitation in joining in this murderous plot; Uriah soon met with the death which David had planned for him, and Bathsheba was then openly acknowledged by David as one of his wives. The crime, however, was sternly rebuked by the prophet Nathan, in a parable which is like an oasis in the desert of violence and wickedness which these early histories disclose. But, when we thus moralize about the crimes which we meet with among the Israelites, let us consider that these were probably far less wicked and less common than those which were committed among the idolatrous nations around.†

Another crime of this time was the outrage of David's eldest son Amnon against his half-sister Tamar. This led to Absalom, another of David's sons, killing Amnon, in revenge for the injury done to his sister. Such doings were only a part of the evils which arose from the king's having so many wives. The natural relationship of families was very much destroyed.

Absalom, to avoid his father's just wrath, then fled to Geshur in Syria, of which place his mother was a native; and there he dwelt for three years among his mother's friends.‡

But Absalom was David's favourite son, and David, after a time, began to pine at his absence. David's nephew, Joab, who in all his difficulties had been his best friend, saw what was wanted, but did not himself venture to ask for Absalom's pardon. He therefore employed a wise woman, one who had gained some kind of sacred character, to obtain it from David. This she did by means of a parable which she related to him. So Joab was allowed to go to

* 2 Sam. xii. 26—31.

† 2 Sam. xi. 2—xii. 23.

‡ 2 Sam. xiii.

Geshur and to fetch Absalom to Jerusalem, where he had leave to dwell in his own house ; but it was two years more before he was received into his father's presence.*

Absalom had been a spoilt child, and he was not content to live in Jerusalem out of favour. His personal beauty may have helped his high rank to make him popular with those that he came near ; and he now took all possible means to gain that favour with the people which he had lost with the king his father. He moved about in state in his chariot, with fifty runners to go before him ; but he, at the same time, showed himself eager to redress the wrongs of any who had been injured, and when any man offered to do him reverence, he took him by the hand familiarly and kissed him. In this way he stole the hearts of all men.

Absalom's aim after popularity was so far successful that he began to think that the throne itself was within his reach. His ambition cannot have escaped the notice of David. David, it would seem, had not been able to keep the friendship of both halves of his kingdom. He was always surrounded by a body of six hundred foreign mercenaries, men of Gath. Though living in Jerusalem on purpose to be near the northern tribes, he had never been able fully to gain their good will. The friends of Saul were numerous in Jerusalem, and still more numerous among the northern Israelites. So, after forty years, says the historian, meaning, according to the usage of the country, after a few years. Absalom asked leave of David to quit the city, under the pretence of a vow to go to serve Jehovah at Hebron. Hebron was then the chief city of the heads of the Levites, and the most approved spot for the worship of Jehovah. Accordingly, David's permission was granted. Had Absalom asked leave to go northward, his intentions would have been suspected, and he might have been refused. He took with him two hundred men, and at Hebron he raised the standard of rebellion, having previously sent trusty spies through the northern tribes, to let his friends and the discontented Israelites know what he was going to do, and to summon them to meet him at Jerusalem. No sooner was the trumpet blown, and the shout raised that Absalom was king in Hebron, than his supporters increased rapidly. Absalom

was at once joined by Ahithophel, one of David's chief counsellors, and David's power was on the wane.

With Absalom now marching against Jerusalem, David felt unsafe in the unfriendly city. The enemies by whom he was surrounded, and those who were likely to come in from the north, were far more to be feared than Absalom's little army, which was coming up from the south. So taking with him his body guard, the axe-bearers and runners, and his six hundred faithful Gathites, he left Jerusalem in mournful procession, and the city was soon entered by Absalom. David left behind him the two chief priests, Zadok and Abiathar, and also his friend Hushai, who was to feign himself a traitor, and with the priests was to act as a spy upon Absalom.* Saul's family, and the friends of Saul's family, remained in the city to welcome Absalom ; and among these was Mephibosheth, the son of Jonathan ; but whether he stayed behind, when David fled, in forgetfulness of David's kindness, or because he was lame, as he afterwards said, seems doubtful.†

At this time, when David left the city, if there had been any form of government, any civil authority, any council of elders, or any magistrate but himself and his servants, we must have been told. The only men who had any acknowledged power, independent of the king, were the priests. They alone are mentioned in this revolution. They alone can give to the throne any support or offer any control.

No sooner had Absalom entered Jerusalem than he made his cousin Amasa, one of David's nephews, his chief captain ; and he took counsel with his friends as to what he should do. Ahithophel advised sending a body of troops in pursuit of David that very night ; on the other hand, Hushai counselled some delay, under pretence of caution, but with the secret wish that David should have time to escape across the Jordan. The advice of Hushai, the traitor, was followed ; and Ahithophel, after a time, saw that the foolish Absalom had fallen among either false friends or bad advisers. So he left Jerusalem in despair and went to his own city near Hebron. In the meantime David and his followers crossed the Jordan, probably at a southern ford, and hastening northward, had reached the strong city of Mahanaim in northern Gilead in safety. There he was

* 2 Sam. xv.

† 2 Sam. xvi. 1—14.

well received, and his men had time to refresh themselves as if at home, before it was necessary to march out and fight Absalom.* David had before placed there a body of twenty-seven hundred men from Hebron, the men in whom he had the greatest trust, to keep the eastern tribes in obedience.† These were the friends to whom he now fled, and to whom he looked for the recovery of his throne.

Absalom crossed the Jordan in pursuit of his father ; and David proposed to march forward himself with his army against Absalom. But his friends, feeling how important his safety was to their cause, persuaded him to remain in Mahanaim ; and he accordingly sent forward his troops under the command of his faithful nephews Joab and Abishai, and Ittai the leader of his Gathite mercenaries. Absalom had put his forces under the command of his cousin Amasa, who like Joab was a son of one of David's sisters, but whose father was a man of northern Israel. For this reason Absalom may have thought that Amasa would win the northern Israelites to his side. The two armies met in the forest of Ephraim, in the land of Gilead, where Absalom's troops were defeated, and Absalom himself slain. David had given charge to his captains that his favourite son, who had driven him from his throne, and was in arms against him, should not be hurt. But Joab here, as on other occasions, had his own opinion as to what was most for his uncle's advantage, and killed Absalom with his own hands, when he fell into his power in the flight. Absalom's soldiers then dispersed themselves, every man fled to his own home, and no body of troops remained to oppose themselves to David's return to his capital.

From the name of the forest in which the battle was fought, it might be argued that both the armies had crossed to the west side of the Jordan. But this is an unnecessary conjecture. The name of Ephraim is a corruption of Abarim, *the beyond men* ; and though it is never elsewhere used except for the tribe which settled on the west side of the Jordan, yet here the Forest of Ephraim seems to mean a spot adjoining the well-known mountains of Abarim in the land of Gilead.

As soon as the victory was complete, the young Ahimaaz, the son of Zadok the priest, asked leave of Joab, the cap-

* 2 Sam. xvi. 15—xvii.

† 1 Chron. xxvi. 31.

tain, to be allowed to carry the news to David, who was at Mahanaim. But Joab, well knowing how painful to David would be the first news of his son's death, would not send him ; David in his displeasure might even do violence to the messenger. So he sent a Cushite, or negro, to carry the tidings to the indulgent father, and to bear the consequences. But some time after the Cushite had started, he allowed Ahimaaz to follow. The Cushite took the straight road where he may have met with hindrances ; Ahimaaz, with perhaps more knowledge of the country, ran by the circle of the Jordan. By so doing, though he lengthened his journey, he reached the king before the other messenger who had started first. He told the king that he brought nothing but the good news of the victory, and when David asked if Absalom was safe, he assured him that he did not know. A little later the Cushite runner arrived, and when David repeated the question, Is Absalom safe ? he answered, May all the king's enemies be as that young man is.*

David's grief for the death of his son Absalom was far from agreeable to his friends. They had fought for him, and regained for him his throne ; and his mournful behaviour was but a reproachful return for their services. It was only at the request of his nephew and best friend Joab, that he consented to sit at the gate of the city of Mahanaim and receive the congratulations of the people.

As soon as the death of Absalom was known to the northern tribes their resistance to David was at an end, and they began to talk about inviting him back to Jerusalem. David sent to his friends Zadok and Abiathar, the priests, to get them to call upon the men of Judah to rise in his favour ; and, in order to win back the traitors, he promised that his nephew Amasa, who had commanded Absalom's troops, should not lose his post, but should for the future be his chief captain in place of his cousin the faithful Joab. He then came down from Mahanaim to the southern ford of the Jordan, while the men of Judah came down to Gilgal to meet him, and to conduct him over the river. They were followed by a large body of those who had lately been in arms against him, who now came to ask for his forgiveness. Ahithophel had before hanged himself in his despair. Amasa,

Absalom's chief captain, had already received forgiveness and promotion.

Shimei, the leader of the Benjamites, who had insulted David on his fall, now placed his thousand men at David's service, and was also forgiven. Mephibosheth, Jonathan's lame son, who stayed behind in Jerusalem when David fled, was only deprived of half his property. Forgiveness was promised to all, though with what sincerity may be doubted. But David was far too weak in power to venture on punishing his enemies. On entering the ferry boat on the river, while his little army crossed the ford, he bid farewell to his faithful Gileadite friends, and soon afterwards reached Jerusalem, where he was to meet with fresh difficulties from the divided state of the nation, and the angry feelings which never fail to rankle long after a civil war.*

Though the late rebellion bore the appearance of an attempt of the son to gain his father's throne, it was in reality an attempt of the northern tribes to separate themselves from the tribe of Judah, with whom they had few feelings in common. David seems to have governed with reasonable impartiality, and perhaps meant to do the same on his regaining his capital. But he soon changed his policy, and threw himself wholly into the arms of the men of Judah, and the disappointed Israelites were again in rebellion.

Sheba, a Benjamite, now set himself up as the leader of Israel, and summoned his followers to join him in the north. David, on the other hand, summoned the south to his support, and in this task he employed his nephew, Amasa, whom he had allowed to remain his chief captain. But Joab was not so forgiving as David; he remembered Amasa's share in the late rebellion; he was also jealous of him as now holding the chief post in the army, which Joab thought belonged to himself; so on meeting him alone he slew him, while pretending to salute him as a friend. Joab and his brother Abishai then led their men in pursuit of the rebel Sheba, who had not met with the support that he expected. He had retreated northwards as far as Abel, near Beth-maachah at the foot of Mount Lebanon. There he was overtaken by Joab, who laid siege to the place; but before it could

he taken, Sheba was slain by the people of the city, who did not wish to engage in an unequal war against the king's forces. Joab returned to Jerusalem having met with no resistance in his march to the very northern limit of the kingdom.

This second rebellion was now at an end, and David was again at leisure to appoint his officers of government, and regulate the civil and ecclesiastical affairs of the kingdom. Joab was again made chief captain, having, as we have seen, removed his cousin Amasa out of the way by basely murdering him.* Henceforth David probably trusted himself chiefly to the support of the men of Judah. But he at the same time tried to blot out the distinction which had existed between the Hebrews and the Canaanites and other conquered races who dwelt among them. We find among his thirty chief and trusted captains a Hittite, an Ammonite, a Syrian of Maachah, a Syrian of Zobah, and an Edomite from the valley of Arabah.† From this we may suppose that in the lower ranks of his army all Canaanites were equally welcome ; and though the Israelites were taught to shun their idolatry, we hear of no attempts at present to restrain the free exercise of their religious rites.

As David's life drew to a close, a not unusual jealousy arose among his sons as to who should be his successor on the throne. As they were children of different wives, the priority by age was not held to confer a very certain birthright. Adonijah, perhaps now the eldest son after Absalom was dead, began to form a party to secure it for himself. His boastful name, meaning *my lord Jehovah*, had no doubt been given him in order to mark him out as heir to the throne. But Bath-sheba, the favourite wife, hoped to gain it for her son Solomon. Joab, at all times David's most faithful but wilful adviser, and now the captain of his armies, supported the claim of Adonijah as being the elder, as did most of the king's sons, and Abiathar, one of the two high priests. But Zadok, the other high priest, Benaiah the captain of the body-guard, and Nathan the prophet, waited to hear the decision of David himself on this important question. David, yielding to the persuasions of Bath-sheba, declared the young Solomon his successor ; and, moreover, the better to secure his will being acted on, he ordered

* 2 Sam. xx.

† 2 Sam. xxiii.

him to be proclaimed king at once, as his own colleague on the throne. Solomon was set upon the king's mule, and led in state through the city, accompanied by the priest Zadok, and by the axe-bearers and runners under the command of Benaiah ; and he was then taken to Gihon, a spot of rising ground on the west side of the city, where David seems to have been living in a tent ; and there Zadok anointed him as king.* It was probably on Solomon's being appointed heir to the throne that the prophet Nathan gave him the name of Jedidiah, or *beloved of Jehovah*, as being suited to his sacred rank.† But this new name did not come into use ; and in history he is only known by the name of Solomon. David died shortly afterwards, and Solomon was quietly acknowledged as the successor by the whole of the country. Joab, though captain of all the armies when they were called together, had no power when the troops were sent away to their homes. The captain of the guard, on the other hand, was at all times master of a small force. Hence Joab had no troops that he could oppose to Benaiah's body-guard.

David died about the year B.C. 976, having reigned, first seven years in Hebron over Judah, and then thirty-three years in Jerusalem over Israel and Judah united.

In 1 Chron. xxii., David describes himself as a man of violence and bloodshed. He gained the throne by rebellion against Saul, and kept it only by force against the rebellion of others. But he was the founder of a long line of kings. He was the founder of Jerusalem the religious capital of Judaism, which in its ruins is still regarded with reverence by the most civilized portions of the world. He began the collection of Hebrew Psalms, which in translations and imitations are more read by all Christians than any of their own poetry. Well may the Jews shut their eyes to what he did wrong, and be proud of their great King David.

David's long reign was a time of some literary activity. The warlike king himself has the credit given to him of being the author of many Hebrew psalms. The only other authors whom we are told of are the prophet Nathan and the prophet Gad. But there may have been many more. The book which the Chronicler quotes as his authorities for the history of David's reign are the Book of Nathan, the Book

* 1 Kings i.

† 2 Sam. xii. 25.

of Gad, and the Book of Samuel ; and our history of Samuel and Saul is also probably drawn out of those three books.* The Books of Nathan and Gad may have been so named because those prophets were the authors of them ; but the Book of Samuel was probably the more modern of the three, and called so only because Samuel was the subject of it. The reader of our First Book of Samuel may observe that the lives of Samuel and Saul, and part of the life of David, are therein told in two rather contradictory manners, as if compiled out of two narratives by authors with wholly different views, the one political and the more trustworthy, and the other priestly and coloured with modern opinions. The Books of Nathan and Gad, whose authors lived at the time, may have furnished the authentic portion, respecting which we may remark that we have fuller and more trustworthy particulars of David's reign than we have of any one of his successors on the throne. The life of Samuel, his childhood under Eli, with the less probable portion of Saul's life and of David's early life, would seem to have been taken out of the third Book, the Book of Samuel, which was a more modern memoir of that prophet, and which may have given to him a larger share of political importance than was allotted to him in the two other books.

Of king David, in his character of author, it is not easy to form an opinion. At the end of the histories from which we have been quoting he is called the sweet Psalmist of Israel, and two poems are put into his mouth. But these have a modern character. The account of his playing on the harp to amuse Saul seems also to belong to the more modern of the above quoted books, and must give way to the other account, which says that he first became known to Saul as a warrior. But David may at the same time have been both a poet and a musician. That the book of Psalms bears his name is of course no proof that he wrote any one of them. The Pandects of Justinian, King James's Bible, the Code Napoleon, are so called because those monarchs ordered them to be written. David, no doubt, gave directions that a body of religious poems should be written for the worship of Jehovah ; but whether any of the Psalms which now remain to us were written by the king himself must of course be doubtful. The Book of Psalms which bears his name is

* 1 Chron. xxix. 29.

a collection of religious pieces of very various ages, some written in David's reign and some more modern than even the fall of the monarchy. The titles placed at their head are of no authority. The date of each must be judged of by the political circumstances mentioned. The style is a less certain guide to a psalm's age. It is only in a few that we note a difference in the language. A poem, which was from time to time chanted aloud in the temple-service, was naturally altered from century to century as the popular language slowly changed. Hence, those which are simply devotional are less easily dated; those which contain portions of history point more clearly to the time when they were written. They all breathe an earnest religious spirit, and show a firm belief that the writer and his countrymen are under the care of an all-powerful and ever-watchful God; though some are disfigured by bitter and revengeful wishes against their oppressors. Their high merit is best shown by the remark that they are used even to the present day as the chief well-spring whence writers of devotional poetry draw their thoughts.

The Book of Jasher, or *of right*, was a poetical work of this reign; but we now possess of it only a fragment of four lines, and a valuable but short poem of six-and-twenty lines. The former contains the bold poetical figure of the sun and moon standing still in the heavens to give the Israelites time for the more complete slaughter of the Amorites in the valley of Ajalon. It is quoted in our Book of Joshua, chap. x. We thus learn that it contained a history of the early wars of the nation on their first entering Canaan; and it is not unreasonable to conjecture that it is the same work as that called the Book of the Wars from which we have four lines, and then perhaps another piece of four lines, quoted in Numbers, chap. xxi. 14 and 17. The second quotation from the Book of Jasher, is the beautiful lamentation over Saul and Jonathan, which is put into the mouth of David. This poem is called the Bow, from the Hebrew custom of naming a poem, or a piece of history, from one of the chief words in it.* Thus.

From the blood of the slain, from the fat of the warriors,
The Bow of Jonathan turned not back,
And the sword of Saul returned not empty,

* 2 Sam. i. 17.

Saul and Jonathan were lovely and pleasant in their lives,
And in their death they were not divided.

As the Book of Jasher was written after David was king, it probably took more notice of the tribe of Judah than the earlier books had done.

We have before spoken of the earlier narrative in the Books of Exodus and Numbers as probably written in the time of Samuel ; and we may now, for reasons such as then guided us, assign other portions of the Pentateuch to the reign of David. First among these is the history of Joseph and of his family settling in Lower Egypt. This history belongs to the beginning of this reign, though like every other part of the Pentateuch it has been enlarged by after additions. It is not possible to divide off very exactly and satisfactorily these additions, and to say when each was written, because the editor has mixed them up with the original narrative. This narrative, contained in Genesis xxxvii, 2—l., is by an Elohist writer, so called because he used the word Elohim for God, and not the word Jehovah. The few times that the word Jehovah is used may be in some of the portions afterwards added. The reasons for judging that this Life of Joseph belongs to the very beginning of David's reign may be seen by an examination of Jacob's prophecy relating to his sons, in Genesis xlix. This prophecy must have been written when the tribe of Judah under David had already gained the sceptre, thus—

The sceptre shall not depart from Judah,
Nor the staff of power from between his feet,
Until he come to Shiloh ;
And unto him shall be the obedience of the people,

But it was written before Ephraim and Manasseh, here called Joseph, had lost their importance as the great tribes ; perhaps before Shiloh, their religious capital, had acknowledged the superior rank of Jerusalem ; after the tribe of Benjamin under Saul had earned its reputation for bravery, but before the Levites had gained their high rank in Jerusalem, and while they were yet scattered outcasts, like the Simeonites, thus :

Simeon and Levi are brethren ;
Instruments of cruelty are their swords.

O my soul, come not thou into their friendship,
Unto their assembly, mine honour, be not thou united.

It was written before Asher and Naphtali had been made into tribes, as this poem at one time included them in the tribe of Zebulun, saying—

Zebulun shall dwell on the coast of the ocean ;
And he shall be on a coast fit for ships ;
And his farthest boundary shall be unto Sidon.

Other marks, in other portions of the life of Joseph, by which we may see that they were written at this time, are the giving to the tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh the high rank of being descended from the prime minister of Lower Egypt, and the using the name of Israel for Jacob, the father of all the tribes, neither of which could have been done after the division of the kingdom upon Solomon's death ; and again, the calling God by the name of Elohim rather than Jehovah ; which latter name came into use with the rise of the Levites.

But the writer so little conceals his own date as to make Jacob on his death-bed tell Joseph that he had conquered for his family from the Amorites, with his sword and his bow, a mountain track above the share of land that he would receive with his brethren. This was the territory of the half-tribe of Manasseh, on the east of the Jordan. The writer is quoting from Numbers xxi. ; and he mistakes Israel the nation for Israel the patriarch. The history of Joseph's introducing a land-tax in Lower Egypt may have been thought useful as a support to David's doing the same.

What early materials the writer had for his history it is impossible now to say. The name of Joseph, meaning *He will gather up*, may have been given to him because he stored up the Egyptian corn in the years of plenty. Much of the dramatic narrative may have been added at a later time, by some writer of the same political feelings as the original author. The interesting picture of the ten brothers' jealousy against their father's favourite son, of their selling him as a slave, his rising to high rank by his good conduct, and his then forgiving his brethren who had injured him, together with the father's tenderness for his youngest son, seem hardly to belong to this early time of lawless violence. The comparison of Jacob's twelve sons to the twelve signs

of the zodiac would lead us to think that the last editor lived after the Jews had gained an acquaintance with Babylonian science in their captivity. But the knowledge of Egyptian customs, of their embalming the dead, of their mourning for seventy days, of their use of the divining cup, of their hatred of the shepherd race, and of the tenure of the soil in Lower Egypt, gives great truthfulness to the narrative.

Chapters xxv. 19,—xxxvi. 8, of Genesis, contain the lives of Isaac, Jacob, and Esau, with the births of Jacob's sons. These chapters are of a more mixed character, partly Elohist and partly Jehovist, and were written later in David's reign. Here the Almighty declares his name to be El; and Shechem and Beth-el are called holy spots, and Levi is spoken of in terms of blame. These are all of them circumstances which join these chapters to the Elohist life of Joseph; but there are Jehovist passages which seem to be later additions. In these chapters, together with the Life of Joseph, we have the Levites and the twelve tribes that claimed the land of Canaan, all arranged into one family, as sons of Israel. This is done by declaring that Jacob is Israel, and that two of the tribes are sons of Jacob's son Joseph. The close affinity of the Edomites to their neighbours of the tribe of Judah, is shown by Edom, or Esau, being made Jacob's brother; and the writer shows his southern feelings by the noble character which he gives to Esau, and by his describing Jacob as tricking Esau out of his birthright.

That the patriarchs are named from David's tribes, or districts, not the tribes from the patriarchs, appears from the names themselves, and may be gathered from the history. The sons and grandsons of Jacob, who give their names to the tribes, are the following:—

Reuben, Simeon, Levi, and Judah, sons of the first wife;
Issachar and Zebulun, sons of the same wife, but born later;

Dan, Naphtali, Gad, and Asher, sons of handmaids;

Benjamin, Ephraim, and Manasseh, son and grandsons of the favourite wife.

These, we shall show, were originally only two tribes. The first four we may call Judah, and the last three Manasseh. The others were only divisions of these. They

may have been arranged into thirteen tribes in David's reign.

Of these, we have seen that the Levites were a religious body, forming part of Judah, as said in Judges xvii. 7.

Reuben was that part of the tribe of Judah which remained behind among the Moabites, when the others crossed into Canaan; and hence is called Judah's elder brother. It had not gained its independence. Heshbon, the chief city in the district, was usually held by Moabites. The name of Reuben is altered from Beni-reu, *the children of Reu*.

Simeon was that part of Judah which remained subject to the Philistines, when, in Saul's reign, the rest of the tribe made itself free. Thus Reuben, Simeon, Levi and Judah, were only one tribe.

The origin of Issachar and Zebulun is explained in Judges iii. 7—11, where we read of a body of men from Southern Judah joining the Israelites of the North, and wresting a portion of northern territory from the Syrians. This agrees with the family history which makes these two to be younger brothers of Judah, and it agrees with the later political history which shows that Judah never felt the same enmity to them that it felt to Ephraim and Manasseh.

The tribes called Sons of the Handmaids are all of later creation. They were at first included within other tribes. Dan was that portion of Ephraim which, like Simeon, was under the Philistines. It had no separate existence, until it migrated northward, to seize a territory, as described in Judges xviii. Asher and Naphtali were at first part of Zebulun, whose boundary reached to Sidon (Gen. xlix. 13). It was probably in the course of David's reign that the northern part of Zebulun was made into those two districts, after he had conquered the Syrians, from whom Asher had its name. Gad, called Gilead in Deborah's song, had been part of the eastern half of Manasseh; see Numbers xxvi. 29.

The Ephraimites were part of Manasseh, that part which crossed into Canaan at a later time, and probably under the lead, and with the higher knowledge, of those who had escaped from Egypt. Their name of Ephraim may possibly be a corruption of Abarim, Hebrews, or *Beyond men*, which would be given to them on crossing the Jordan. As Ma-

nasseh settled in the land first, Manasseh is called the elder brother ; but, as Ephraim became the stronger, Jacob's blessing was put upon him.

The Benjaminites, called also the Jaminites, were part of the Ephraimites, and hence Benjamin is made the brother of Joseph, the father of Ephraim. They took their name from the children of Ammon, Beni-ammon, among whom they settled and whom they conquered. One of their towns was named the City of the Ammonites (Josh. xviii. 24).

There remain, then, the two original tribes ; the one called Manasseh, and the other Judah. These may have brought their names from Chaldea, when the one settled in the middle of Canaan, as said in the Life of Jacob, and the other settled in the southern part of Canaan, as said in the Life of Abraham. Throughout our history we shall always find the nation composed of these two parts, though not always with the same names. Sometimes they are known as Israel and Judah, sometimes as Joseph and Judah, sometimes as Ephraim and Judah, and lastly as Samaritans and Jews.

Thus the hints which have been gained from history, when compared with the map of the country, show us upon what grounds the tribes of Israel, though at first only two in number, were afterwards, when spread over the land, described as the thirteen children and grandchildren of Jacob, when he received the name of Israel.

Jacob fixed his dwelling first at Shechem, and then at Beth-el ; his visit to Hebron, where Abraham and Isaac had settled, may be an after addition to the narrative. The Tower of E^dar, or *the flocks*, near which Jacob spread his tent, was the tower in Jerusalem close to the Sheep-gate, perhaps the same as that called Millo and Beth-Millo in the Book of Kings ; and, from the writer's mention of it, we learn that this portion of the history was not written until after Jerusalem had become David's capital. But out of this portion we must except many Jehovistic sentences, some perhaps written only a few years later than the original narrative. Chapter xxviii. 10—22 in particular, must be a very late addition. Here Jehovah appears to Jacob in Beth-el ; and thus the Jehovistic and the Elohist thoughts are united in a manner very unusual. We shall hereafter find a date for these words from the circumstance that

Jacob makes a vow to pay his tithes in that city. Other Jehovistic passages may be of the same date; but they do not all carry any evidence when they were written.

In continuation of the Elohistie list of the early Genealogies, and introductory to the Elohistie Life of Joseph, there was once an Elohistie history of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. We have still some portions of it woven into our present Jehovistic narrative. Such is Genesis xvii., where the covenant of circumcision is enjoined upon Abraham. Here a child is promised to Sarah by God, while in the next chapter the same promise is made by Jehovah. But this earlier Life is lost in the newer.

Exodus vi. 2—9, is clearly a Jehovistic addition to the original narrative of the march, and made at least as early as this time. First, these words must be considered an addition, because God therein tells Moses that his name is Jehovah, a name not used by the original writer of the march out of Egypt. And secondly, it must have been added thus early before our Jehovistic Life of Abraham was written, because God in this passage says that he was known to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, only by the name of El, and not by that of Jehovah. At the same time by referring to the promise made to Abraham in Genesis xvii., it tells us that of the two Lives of Abraham the Elohistie Life was the older. Now, we shall presently give reasons for placing our present Life of Abraham near the end of David's reign; and therefore to the middle of David's reign may be given this and perhaps other additions to the Books of Exodus and Numbers, and also to the Lives of Isaac, Jacob, and Joseph, which by the use of the word Jehovah are known not to belong to the original narrative.

To some time before Genesis i. was written, and before the Life of Abraham was written, we must give Genesis ii. 4—iv., containing the history of the Creation by Jehovah, and of the Garden of Eden, as this is mentioned in the Life of Abraham in Genesis xiii. 10. This second Birth-book of the Heavens and the Earth seems older, and is of a less scientific character, than that in chapter i. Here a single man is first created, not a pair or a race; and a single woman is formed afterwards. Man is not the last and crowning work, but the animals are a later creation. In the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve lived in happy ease and

innocence, until they fell therefrom by eating the forbidden fruit. After their disobedience they were driven out, and had to till the earth with labour for their food. Their life in the Garden is not unlike the Golden Age of the Greek mythology, and is out of place in the Hebrew books, which describe the nation as always looking forward with religious hope ; and not backward with regret, to a time of goodness and happiness. Many of the thoughts relating to the Garden of Eden are borrowed from Egypt, such as the ground being watered without rain, the sacred tree of knowledge, the serpent the author of sin, which speaks and walks upright before it does wrong, but creeps upon its belly when it is cursed. Moreover, the whole allegory is foreign from the Hebrew mind, which never inquired into the origin of evil. By the forbidden fruit the author means marriage, which he thus blames ; and the first pair have no children till they have fallen from their state of innocence. It was among the Egyptians, not among the Israelites, that celibacy was thought more holy than marriage. In these chapters, Cain, the murderer, is a husbandman ; and Abel, whose offering was acceptable to Jehovah, is a herdsman, which agrees with the former enmity between the Egyptians who tilled the soil, and the Israelites who were owners of cattle. The Elohist writer, when introducing this older narrative into his own, was not pleased with the descent of man from Cain, the murderer of his brother ; and hence Seth, a new son, is given to Adam, and thus a new parentage to Lamech, more agreeable to northern feelings ; and the few words about Seth in Genesis iv. 25, 26, may have been added by the Elohist writer, in order to unite the two accounts.

It is, as we have said, to the end of David's reign, after he had placed his altar to Jehovah on Mount Moriah, that we must give another large portion of the Book of Genesis, one which is for the most part Jehovistic, so styled from the writer's use of the name Jehovah for God. It is chap. xii.—xxv. 18, containing the Life of Abraham, with a list of his descendants through Ishmael, but exclusive of chap. xxv. 1—6, which gives to him a second wife and a further list of descendants, and exclusive of several other passages to be hereafter mentioned. It shows not only a far wider knowledge of geography than the writings that we have

before considered, but in particular, a knowledge of the southern parts of Judah, such as Hebron, and the cave of Machpelah; of the town of Zoar and parts to the south of the Dead Sea; and of the Hittites in the south of Judah; all which knowledge was beyond the writers in Samuel's time and neighbourhood, or even in the beginning of David's disturbed reign, up to which time the writers had mostly belonged to the northern tribes. The frequent mention of the camel is a marked peculiarity of this writer, who may perhaps have lived near Hebron, where that southern animal was more often seen than in Jerusalem. Again, these chapters were written by a worshipper of Jehovah, who had a wish to give to the new altar on Mount Moriah, which David had lately gained from the hands of the Jebusites, a character for holiness by fixing upon it as the spot where Abraham was ordered to sacrifice his son Isaac; and he proposes an etymology for Jerusalem, the new name of the capital, in Abraham's calling the place Jehovah-jireh, or *Jehovah will shew*. Indeed, the writer lets us know that the altar on Mount Moriah was already built, and that it had become usual to enquire of Jehovah there, by his telling us of the proverbial saying, "On the mountain of Jehovah it will be shown." The making Abraham, as the representative of all Israel, pay tithes to Melchizedek, *the righteous king* of Jerusalem, seems meant to justify David's claim to a land tax of a tithe of the produce. Melchizedek was both king and priest, and so was David. David we have seen wearing the Ephod, the mark of a priest.* David also made his sons priests in his lifetime;† and it was as a priest only that Solomon could have stood beside the altar in the Inner Court of the Temple, and made his prayers to God at the feast of Tabernacles.

That Abraham's being willing to put his son to death should have been thought innocent, may be explained from the opinion of the time, that there was no limit to a father's rights over his children; it was not till the latter days of the monarchy that the approval of the city elders was needed before a father might cause the death of a son. That Abraham's willingness should moreover have been thought praiseworthy, may be explained from a son's being

* 2 Sam. vi. 14.

† 2 Sam. viii. 18.

at that time a valuable property, and not only, as at all times, an object of affection and of family pride.

But there are some parts of the Life of Abraham which are by Elohistic writers, parts of an earlier narrative. One of these is chapter xvii., already mentioned, in which the covenant of circumcision is enjoined upon Abraham.

Thus we have given the larger part of Genesis, including the Lives of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and that of Joseph, to David's reign. No part of these Lives could have been written before the time of Saul, or we should have found traces of it in the Book of Judges. The Life of Abraham, indeed, was evidently written by one of the tribe of Judah, by one who had lived in Hebron, and it furnishes us with some of the traditions of that tribe, a people of whom we learnt so little from the writer of the Book of Judges. The tribe of Judah claimed to be living in that part of the land where the nation's forefathers had first settled ; not when they forcibly gained a settlement in Canaan on their flight out of Egypt, but at a yet earlier time, when Abraham the Chaldee migrated there from Syria. Hebron was their chief city. Near to it was a grove, called the Oaks of Mamre, within which grove was an altar to Jehovah. This altar was said to have been built by Abraham when he first settled in the land ; and it was considered to be the spot most sacred to Jehovah, until Jerusalem gained that high rank. At a later time, we find Hebron the chief city of the Levites ; and it thus connects the Levites to the worship of Jehovah, and both to the tribe of Judah. In the same neighbourhood was a sacred burial-place, the cave of Machpelah, which had been bought from the Hittites, the Canaanite tribe, among whom the Chaldees first settled. This tradition, belonging to the tribe of Judah, of a quiet settlement in the south, is joined to the other tradition of a forcible settlement in the east and north, by making the whole of the family in the south migrate into Egypt, and thence come out under Moses. Whereas it is more agreeable to what we have been able to learn of the early history of the tribes in Canaan, to suppose that the land of Judah was in part at least peopled by Hebrews, before those who escaped from Egypt crossed the Jordan.

Some more modern writer, zealous for the honour of the

southern towns, may very possibly have added to the Life of Joseph those passages which speak of his burying his father Jacob in the cave of Machpelah, near Hebron ; because what we suppose to be the earlier narrative says, that he promised to bury him in a cave which Jacob had digged for himself, that is, as it would seem, near the city of Shechem.* Those added passages are, Gen. xlix. 29—32, and l. 13 ; and as they relate to the southern town of Hebron, they are not likely to have formed part of the Elohistic Life of Joseph. Moreover, Abel-Mizraim, where the mourners rested, was on the route from Egypt to Shechem, and far beyond Hebron. The history quoted by the martyr Stephen, in Acts vii. 16, must have rejected these passages, as it places Jacob's burial place at Shechem.

Those passages in the Life of Abraham which seem to be later additions, and will be mentioned hereafter, are Chap. xii. 6, 7, relating to the altar to Jehovah at Shechem ; xii. 8, the altar to Jehovah at Beth-el ; xii. 9—xiii. 4, the visit to Egypt ; xiv. 1—16, the defeat of the four kings ; and xx. and xxi. 22—34, relating to the South Country and the altar to Jehovah at Beer-sheba, and xxxviii., relating to the birth of Pharez and Zarah. The honour given to the three altars at Shechem, Beth-el and Beer-sheba, is in opposition to the old altars at Hebron and Gibeah of Judah, and the only allowed new altar on Mount Moriah. The Levitical worship had followed David from Hebron and Gibeah to Jerusalem, and the Life of Abraham gives Divine authority for its doing so. The sanction given to the rival altars was not by the original writer.

We may now mention one of the Psalms, to which, by the help of the Life of Abraham, we can give a very exact date. Psalm cx. may be quoted as certainly written very near the end of David's lifetime. In this the poet advises him not to go out with his army and risk his valuable life in battle ; and he mentions his capture of Rabbah the capital of the Ammonites. Moreover, he styles the king a priest, a title that would hardly have been given to any except himself and three or four of his immediate successors before the full rise of the Levites.

* Gen. xxxiii. 19.

Jehovah hath said to my lord,
 "Sit thou at my right hand
 "Until I make thine enemies a stool for thy feet."
 Jehovah will send the sceptre of thy power out of Zion ;
 Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies.
 Thy people will be of willing heart in thy day of battle,
 On the holy mountains.
 From the womb of the morning is the dew of thy youth.
 [That is, thou art now no longer young.]
 Jehovah hath sworn, and will not repent,
 "Thou art a priest for ever of the order of Melchizedek."
 The Lord is at thy right hand,
 He smiteth kings in the day of his wrath.
 He will judge among the nations ;
 He will fill them with dead bodies.
 He hath smitten the chief [city] of the land of Rabbah.
 [Israel] shall drink of the brook in the way ;
 Therefore shall he lift up his head.

This must have been written after the conquest of Rabbah, after the king's life had become valuable to his friends, and after the writing of the Life of Abraham in the Book of Genesis, where we are first introduced to the notice of Melchizedek.

Before entering upon Solomon's reign, it will be as well to take a glance at the Phenicians on the coast, with whom the Hebrew monarchs are for the future often closely connected by trade and friendly intercourse. Homer* and Strabo† both mention a city of the name of Sidon on the Persian Gulf, from which trading caravans crossed the desert to Jerusalem and Egypt and the Syrian coast. This was probably the city called Dedan by the Hebrew writers. From the Persian Gulf these industrious people seem to have made a settlement on a barren part of the coast of Syria, at the foot of Mount Lebanon, to which they carried their own name ; and the Sidon in Syria soon rose into such importance as a place of trade, as to make the original Sidon be forgotten. The Sidonians afterwards built a new city on a rock, a few miles to the south of Sidon, which was known by the name of Tyre, *the rock*. Tyre soon became a more important city than Sidon itself, from which it sprang ; but nevertheless its inhabitants continued the use of the old national name, and they were still called Sidonians. In Tyre we find these ship-building and sea-

* Lib. iv. 84, and the Scholiast.

† xvi. iv. 27.

faring Phenicians engaged in a most prosperous carrying trade, with their numerous little vessels on every neighbouring coast, having other important settlements or colonies at Gebal and at Arvad, at Tarsus or Tarshish in Cilicia, and at several ports on the island of Cyprus. The Egyptian trade was their great source of wealth. The Egyptians were not sailors, they shunned the sea; and the Sidonians carried away the Egyptian corn in exchange for such commodities as the timber of Mount Lebanon and Mount Taurus, and the copper and iron of the isle of Cyprus, and the silver of Greece. Tyre and Sidon, in the days of Solomon, may be compared to the city of Venice fifteen centuries later. The active part of the population lived as much on shipboard and in foreign ports as they did in their own homes.

At the time of David's death, Hiram king of Tyre and Sidon had been eight years upon the throne. He had succeeded his father Abi-baal. With the wealth of his trading subjects, and with the tribute levied upon other cities, he ornamented Tyre with new temples to Hercules and Astarte, cutting the timber for their roofs in the neighbouring forest on Mount Lebanon. He laid out the open square, or broad-place called the Eurychoron, and set up a golden column in his temple of Jupiter. He reigned twenty-six years more in friendship with Solomon.*

SOLOMON, KING OF ISRAEL AND JUDAH. B.C. 976—937.

Solomon, while his father was alive, had spared his elder brother Adonijah, though at the time a rival claimant of the throne; but after David's death, on Adonijah asking for Abishag to wife, a young woman who had been brought to David for a concubine, Solomon considered that he was still a rival, and had him put to death. He also had his cousin Joab killed, as having been one of Adonijah's friends; and for the same reason he removed Abiathar from the priesthood, and made Zadok sole high priest. At this time the priests evidently held their appointments from the king. He then found a reason for having Shimei slain, a Benjamite who had joined Absalom in his revolt against David. The historian in the wish to find an excuse for the death of Shimei, to whom David had promised that his life should be spared,

* Menander in Josephus, Apion, i. 18.

and of Joab, David's faithful friend, says that Solomon had received David's dying orders to kill them. This it is difficult to believe; nor would it relieve Solomon of the guilt. He may have fancied that the safety of his throne required their death, with that of his elder brother.*

As soon as Solomon was safely seated on the throne, he went with the chiefs of the people to Gibeon or Gibeah, of Judah, to return thanks to Jehovah, by means of a costly sacrifice of oxen and sheep.† There David had left the Tabernacle, and a body of priests, when he brought the ark to Jerusalem; and the High Place of Gibeon, notwithstanding its loss of the ark, still kept a character for holiness, which the newer altar at Jerusalem had not yet gained. In Solomon's reign it was not thought wrong to have more than one altar of sacrifice. It was more than a century later before the priests of Jerusalem ventured to declare all High Places but their own to be idolatrous. The religious doings of both David and Solomon clearly tell us that the ceremonial law was not yet written.

Solomon, by his acts of severity, terrified everybody who might be against him; and the whole of the tribes accepted him as king. Even the Philistines, without being conquered, quietly yielded submission to him; and the Amalekites on the desert coast, towards Egypt, were forced into obedience. He had sway, not only over his own subjects of Israel and Judah, but over all the little kingdoms from Tiphseh on the river Euphrates, to the land of the Philistines, and the boundary of Lower Egypt, including Tadmor or Palmyra in the desert. The Philistines remained independent but friendly. He levied an ample tribute on the country, not of money but of food for the maintenance of his court and of a standing army. This army included a small body of horsemen and of war-chariots. If his subjects felt his strong arm and his heavy taxes press severely on them, they at any rate received in return the blessings of peace abroad and of quiet at home; and every man dwelt safely under his own vine and under his own fig-tree all the days of Solomon. He had the reputation also of being as wise as he was powerful, and of not only writing proverbs and songs, which were counted by thousands, but of also understanding the whole animal and vegetable creation.‡

* 1 Kings ii. 12—46. † 1 Kings iii. 4. ‡ 1 Kings iv. 21—34.

Solomon's long but peaceful reign has few events for the historian, but there are two which rise into great importance hereafter ; one the building of the Temple at Jerusalem, and the other the establishing the Levites as a body of priests to offer up the burnt offerings, and to perform the other ceremonies required in the worship of Jehovah. Solomon's subjects had so little skill in the mechanical arts that for this building he sent to the Tyrians for help. Hiram, king of Tyre, undertook to furnish the skilled workmen required, on Solomon's sending him payment in corn and oil. Solomon was to supply the labourers, for which he made a levy of men through all Israel ; and he had several thousand men employed for a month at a time till his work was finished. The cedar and fir-wood required was cut on Mount Lebanon, and carried to the sea near Tyre. From thence it was sent in floats to Joppa, and then carried to Jerusalem on men's shoulders, so few were the beasts of burden in Solomon's kingdom. Other timber was cut in Solomon's own forests, in the hill country, probably near the City of Jearim. It was not necessary to go to any distance for the stone ; the neighbourhood of Jerusalem offers a fine white limestone, nearly equal to marble. This important work was begun in the fourth year of Solomon's reign, and finished in the eleventh.

The Temple of Jerusalem, before the fall of the monarchy, was a large space inclosed by stone walls, on the top of Mount Moriah, a hill on the east side of the city. In order to make this space level, the rock had been cut away at the north end, and the ground was built up at the south end. In the middle of this space, which was the temple area, there is a raised rock, fifty feet across ; this had been the threshing-floor of Araunah, and then David's altar, and it was now to remain the great altar for burnt-offerings in Solomon's temple. Around this altar a large raised space, measuring about five hundred feet by four hundred, was by Solomon inclosed with cedar rails. This, when other courts were built, was called the inner court, the court of the priests, which all other persons were forbidden to enter, and called also the Great Terrace or Platform.

From a comparison of the several passages in the Bible with the plot of ground as described by travellers, it seems probable that the House of Jehovah, the covered building,

was placed at the south side of the court of the priests, facing the north. That the historian says that its front was towards the east, must be explained by the Hebrew custom of considering the east side of the heavens as the front, and by a disregard to scientific exactness. It was a small building, but in the inside richly covered with gold. It consisted of a Porch with two tall columns, a Great Hall, and a room behind, called the Holy of Holies, or the Place of the Oracle. The House was surrounded on each side and on the back with small chambers for the priests, built in three stories. Within the Holy of Holies was to be placed the Ark of the covenant of Jehovah, a wooden chest overlaid with gold, containing the Two Tables inscribed with the Ten Commandments. Within the Holy of Holies also stood a small altar, coated with gold, for burning incense before Jehovah. On each side of the place for the Ark was the figure of a Cherub with outstretched wings. Nothing was to be placed on the Cover of the Ark ; because in the open space above the Cover, and between the two Cherubs the Almighty was supposed to be present when the priest burnt incense on the small altar. From this space over the Cover of the Ark the priest was thought to receive his answer from Jehovah.*

As soon as the temple was ready to receive the Ark, Solomon and the heads of the people brought it with much ceremony from the city on Mount Zion to its place in the Holy of Holies on Mount Moriah. It was carried on the shoulders of the priests, who afterwards bear the name of the Sons of Aaron. Solomon then assembled the people in the court of the temple to the great ceremony of the dedication ; and standing himself as priest beside the altar of burnt offerings, he addressed a prayer to Jehovah, asking blessings on his work. He then slew a vast number of sheep and oxen, burning some as a burnt offering on the altar, and sacrificing the rest as a peace offering, that is, as a love-feast, with which he feasted the crowds for fourteen days.

Solomon seems to have been discontented with David's plan of using the bare rock for an altar, and to have prepared one made of wood, coated with copper, perhaps that described in Exodus xxvii. as three cubits high, and five cubits square on the top. But on this occasion it was not large enough for the burnt offerings ; so it was put aside, and the

* 1 Kings v. vi.

offerings burnt on the rock in the middle of the court, the site of David's altar.

An altar for sacrifice on a High Place, in the neighbourhood of each town, was all that the people of Judah had hitherto been used to. The covered building, or House of God, which sometimes—as at Shiloh, Shechem, and Beth-el—stood near the altar, had not been necessary for the worship of Jehovah. These sacred buildings had been peculiar to the northern tribes, and to the worship of El and Baal; as Nathan assured David that the Ark of Jehovah had never rested otherwise than under a tent.

The feast at the dedication of the Temple received the name of the Feast of Tabernacles or Booths, because the people came up in such crowds that they had to lodge in booths in the streets. It was the Feast of Ingathering, when the labours of the field are ended, and was kept at the full moon of the seventh month, which, in our northern climate, we call the harvest moon.* The other feasts which Solomon kept by burnt offerings on the great altar, and burning incense on the small altar within the House of Jehovah, were that of the Passover, or Unleavened Bread, when the barley was ripe, near the spring equinox, and that of the wheat harvest, seven weeks after the Passover, called the Feast of Weeks.†

Before the end of his reign, Solomon built an altar on the site of David's natural altar on the Mount Moriah.‡ He built it probably of unhewn stones, as described in Exodus xx. 26, and not so high as to require steps. Later kings raised it higher; and its height is often spoken of in the later laws.

This building of a grand temple to Jehovah, to be used for a stately ceremonial form of worship, with clouds of incense rising at the door, burnt offerings smoking on the altar in front, and priests in various dresses purifying the worshippers by sprinkling them with water, and chanting hymns with the accompaniment of musical instruments, naturally led to a great increase of the priestly influence. Hitherto it would seem, at least among the northern tribes, that the head of every family was its priest; and the father sometimes appointed his eldest son to be his deputy in the office, as did Micah the Ephraimite.§ David appointed

* 1 Kings viii. † 1 Kings ix. 25. ‡ 1 Kings ix. 25. § Judges xvii. 5.

several of his sons, perhaps the eldest of each mother, to be priests;* and we have seen him and Solomon both acting as priests before the altar.† This custom seems to be sanctioned in Exod. xix. 6, written as we suppose in the time of Samuel, when the Israelites are told at the mountain of God, “Ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and a holy nation.” And, again, it seems more particularly pointed to when it had gone out of use, when in Numb. iii. 11—13, written, as we suppose, about a century after Solomon’s time, Jehovah says, “I have taken the Levites from among the children of Israel instead of the firstborn among the children of Israel. And the Levites shall be mine, because all the firstborn are mine. On the day that I smote all the firstborn in the land of Lower Egypt, I hallowed unto me all the firstborn in Israel, both man and beast; mine shall they be; I am Jehovah.”

These words have been thought to prove that at one time human sacrifices had been required in the worship of Jehovah; but by putting these laws, each in its own century, we see that this law is not necessarily a redemption of the eldest son from death, but a dismissal from the office of family priest, to make way for a Levite.

Thus, soon after the establishment of the monarchy, the priesthood became a separate profession, and hereditary in particular families. We hardly met with the Levites while our history was confined to the northern tribes; but now that the sceptre is held by a king of the tribe of Judah, they come forward into notice. At the beginning of this reign, the Levite Zadok was made sole high priest; and henceforth the high-priesthood became hereditary in his family. To his family was assigned the care of the Ark, of which the Hebrew name is Aron; and hence, perhaps, they gained the name of the sons of Aaron, meaning Aronites, or ark-bearers. But they also kept, even until the overthrow of the monarchy, the name of Sons of Zadok. Their position in the capital gave them a rank above the rest of their tribe. They alone had the power of entering the Holy of Holies and of coming forth and declaring to the people the will of Jehovah. We do not learn very exactly by what steps this gigantic power was obtained. It was probably the growth of several reigns. David introduced the Levites

* 2 Sam. viii. 18.

† 2 Sam. vi. 14—19; 1 Kings viii. 22.

into Jerusalem. Solomon built the temple, and confirmed them in their rank. But Solomon did not raise the priesthood above the throne. He himself dedicated the Temple, and hallowed the court of the Altar, and acted as priest at the sacrifices. But under his weaker successors the priestly power grew stronger. Until they became too strong, the Levites were a great support to the royal power, particularly within the tribe of Judah, by whom they were chiefly respected; and partially also within the northern tribes, though there their superior holiness was less cordially granted. Even in the north they were in part successful in throwing a slight on many of the High Places, the spots held sacred of old, where God was worshipped under the name of Elohim; and by so doing they added weight both to the priestly and to the royal power in Jerusalem. The Levites' power was founded on their usefulness, and on the value of the religion that they taught, and they were supported by the free-will offerings of the people, the heave offerings, as they were called; but after a time this power was abused for selfish ends, and then they got the civil power to help them levy a tax for their maintenance.

While the temple was new, and Jerusalem had not that character for holiness which still belonged to Shiloh, the priests were anxious to be thought the descendants of Eli of that city, for the same reason that made them say that their ark of Jehovah had once had its lodging in Shiloh. This we see by the following table:—

ELI OF SHILOH.		
PHINEAS OF SHILOH. (1 Sam. i. 3.—xiv. 3.)		HOPHNI.
AHITUB. (1 Sam. xiv. 3.) (1 Chron. vi. 7.)		ICHABOD.
AHIMELECH OF NOB. (1 Sam. xxii. 20.) (1 Chron. xxiv. 3.)	ZADOK OF JERUSALEM. (2 Sam. viii. 16.) (1 Chron. vi. 8.)	AHIAH. (1 Sam. xiv. 3.)
ABIATHAR OF JERUSALEM. (1 Sam. xxii. 20.) (1 Kings ii. 27.)	AHIMAAZ OF JERUSALEM. (2 Sam. xv. 36.) (1 Chron. vi. 8.)	

But, after a time, when Jerusalem and the priests in its temple held an undisputed rank for holiness, and could gain no glory from Shiloh, a city which had then become hateful for its people's rebellion, then a new pedigree was produced for Zadok and Ahimaaz, tracing their descent as sons of Aaron. This we have in 1 Chron. vi.

When the temple was completed, Solomon spent thirteen years in building his own palace, which was situated on Mount Zion, within the city walls, and on the east side of the city, the side nearest to the temple. Another building of importance in the city was the House of the Forest of Lebanon, so called because it was little more than a roof upheld by a number of columns, each of which was a cedar tree. This was the royal armoury, holding not only weapons of war, but those ornamental arms which were used on state occasions. In this building were lodged the Runners, a body of men who attended the king wherever he moved, to carry his commands to the distant parts of the kingdom. Here were kept the golden shields which the runners carried before the king when he went in state into the house of Jehovah.* At the back of the royal palace, and separated from it by a court-yard, he built a portico, within which was placed a throne whereon he sat to administer justice. This was called the Porch of the Throne, or the Porch of Judgment;† and the court-yard in front of it is mentioned in the New Testament under the names of the Pavement and Gabbatha, or *Back of the House*. Under this porch or portico Solomon sat to administer justice. We do not hear that he followed any known laws. He probably decided each case according to his own opinion of what was right.

Since David had made Jerusalem his capital, the population of the place had so far increased that a large suburb had grown up on the northern side of Mount Sion. This Solomon now inclosed within a wall, and at the same time he rebuilt or rather strengthened, the walls of the castle which David had built, named Millo, or Beth-millo, overhanging the brook Siloah.‡ This seems to have stood on the north end of Mount Moriah, on a part of the hill which was now raised high above the temple-yard, because the ground of the temple-yard had been in part cut down to

* 1 Kings vii. 1—6; x. 17; xiv. 26—28. † 1 Kings vii. 7, 8.

‡ 1 Kings ix. 15; 2 Kings xii. 20.

make the whole level. On this spot stood the Castle of Antonia in the time of Herod.

It was, perhaps, rather late in life that Solomon, to his other numerous wives and concubines, added the daughter of the Egyptian king. The name of this Pharaoh is not mentioned, but it was probably Shishak, who, from having been king of Bubastis, a little state forming the eastern part of Lower Egypt, afterwards made himself king of both Upper and Lower Egypt, and displaced the family of Rameses from the throne at Thebes. The king of Egypt was a monarch far more powerful and wealthy than Solomon, whom he was now honouring with his daughter. The discipline of his soldiers, their arms, and military engines were far superior to any that Solomon had command of. The Israelites had never been able to take a hill fortress if tolerably well defended. Hence the Canaanite city of Gezer on the hills, within fifteen miles of Jerusalem, was able still to hold itself independent against the power of Solomon; and in order to oblige him, the Egyptian king sent an army to that distance from his country for the siege of the place. They took Gezer by storm, slew the Canaanites, burnt the town, and gave the ruins to Solomon as a dower with his daughter.* For his new wife, Solomon built a palace in the suburb lately inclosed,† and it seems to have stood close to Millo, the castle last described.

On this conquest of the city of Gezer, there remained no body of the original natives strong enough to offer any resistance to Solomon. Those who were left of the Amorites, Hittites, Perizites, Hivites, and Jebusites, were quietly reduced to the rank of bond-servants, or at least were required to pay a tribute of service to the king. These tribes lived under their own magistrates, who in some cases bore the title of king. Thus, when Solomon bought horses and chariots from Egypt, the kings of the Syrians and of the Hittites bought them also for themselves, and at the same price.‡ And the partial independence of the tribes is even proved by the historian's boast that Solomon had sway over all the kings on the west of the river Euphrates.§ The Philistines, at the south-western corner of the land, alone seem to have been treated as equals; they were neither

* 1 Kings ix. 16.

† 1 Kings x. 29.

‡ 1 Kings iii. 1; and ix. 24.

§ 1 Kings iv. 24.

conquered, nor were they in arms as enemies. They seem to have been allowed to keep their own lands as subjects ; and hence the tribe of Simeon, who claimed that territory, never gained any lands of their own, but had their inheritance within the tribe of Judah.*

The skill of the Tyrians was further useful to Solomon in helping him to build a ship or ships on the Red Sea, to get a share of the trade which had been so long profitable to the Egyptian vessels on the Nile, and to the caravans of the Arabs across the desert. Solomon's ships were built at Ezion-geber in the land of Edom ; and, with the help of Hiram's Tyrian shipmen, they made a voyage once in three years down the Red Sea. They brought back gold and precious stones, a hard wood, probably ebony, tusks of ivory, apes, and rare birds called Tak. These birds were probably parrots, as we judge from their country and from the Greek name of the parrot, Psit-tak-os. The gold, for the sake of which the voyage was made, was brought from a port named Ophir, which we may safely pronounce to have been near to Souakin, on the coast of Nubia, and in the neighbourhood of the Nubian gold-mines. These mines had for a long time been a source of boundless wealth to Upper Egypt.† They furnished the money which ornamented Thebes with its temples, statues, and obelisks ; and as long as the Nile was the easiest route by which the gold could reach the Mediterranean Sea, Thebes was the richest city in the world. But latterly new lines of trade had been opened, first through Arabia, and next by the Red Sea ; and Thebes had lost its golden advantages, and its political rank, before Solomon's ships sailed for a share of the profit. The three years occupied by this short voyage are easily accounted for. The ships sailed only with the trade wind, creeping along the shore, and stopping occasionally for water. They then had to spend some months at their place of destination, bartering with the natives of the country for a cargo to carry back. They could not be ready in time to return home by the return wind of the same year. Hence it was necessary for the crew to spend one year with the ships drawn on shore in Nubia, or Abyssinia, waiting for the return wind of the next year ; and, for the same reason, one year with

* 1 Kings ix. 20—22 ; Joshua xix. 1.

† Agatharcides ap. Photium ; Diod. Sic. i. 49.

the ships drawn on shore at Ezion-geber, while the cargo was being sent to Jerusalem and Tyre. The voyage out and the voyage home each occupied a half-year, whether the whole time was wanted for it or not. The gold which was brought to Jerusalem in one year was said to amount to six hundred and sixty-six kikars, a very doubtful sum; for, though a kikar of silver seems to have been about one hundred-weight, yet, in the case of the more precious metal, the kikar, like the shekel, was of a far less weight.*

Solomon rewarded his friend Hiram, king of Tyre, for his valuable help in building and in navigation, by a present of twenty little towns in Galilee, on the Tyrian coast. These were of little worth, and Hiram was not well pleased with them.† But he had been paid in corn and oil for his builders, and had no doubt received his share of the profit from the voyages.

Though the gold of Ophir was the main object of Solomon's trading voyage down the Red Sea, yet his little vessels probably did not turn back at that port. In Isaiah xviii. we shall learn that there was a Jewish settlement in Abyssinia. We shall see in Genesis x. 26, written perhaps in the time of Hezekiah, by the mention of Hazramaveth, or Hadramout, the most southerly province in Arabia, that the Hebrew writer of that chapter had got some knowledge of that distant country. Ezekiel xxvii. 23, shows a knowledge of Eden, or Aden, the well-known port in southern Arabia. And in the fourth century after the Christian era, we find that there was a colony of Jews on both coasts at the southern end of the Red Sea, separated from their countrymen by the Arabs on one coast, and the Nubians on the other, and only to be reached by sea. These two Hebrew colonies probably both had their origin from Solomon's trading vessels.

Solomon's marriage with the Egyptian princess, and his cultivation of trade and the arts of peace, brought him into close connection with Egypt. He bought his horses and his chariots, and probably many articles of state and luxury in Egypt. The price of a horse was a hundred and fifty shekels of silver, about fifteen pounds sterling; the price of a chariot was four times as much.‡ If the more luxurious

* 1 Kings ix. 26—28; x. 11, 22.

† 1 Kings ix. 10—14.

‡ 1 Kings x. 29.

Egypt did not furnish him with any workmen or artists for his temple and palaces, it no doubt furnished his own artists with the taste and models from which they worked. His throne, with a golden lion on each side of the seat to support the arms, was after the Egyptian pattern.* But what is yet more important, the dress and ornaments of the priests were copied from Egypt. The breast-plate of the chief priest, though it had not the same ornaments as those of the Egyptian priests, was yet, like theirs, made in two halves, and called by its Egyptian name of Urim and Thummim, or *royalty* and *truth*, perhaps translated by the Hebrews as mercy and truth.† The priest's linen mitre, with the holy crown of bright gold put over it, were together the double crown of Egypt, which we now see upon the statues of the Theban kings.‡ And the cherubs that were placed within the Holy of Holies, with outstretched wings, one standing on each side of the sacred ark, had their originals on numerous stone chests in Egypt. But with all this we see no leaning towards the Egyptian opinions in religion. Egypt was the teacher of superstition to most of the nations around. The Assyrians, the Babylonians, and then the Greeks and the Romans, all made use of the Egyptian fertility of invention, and accepted its superstitious opinions as to the dead and their future state of existence. But the Hebrews drew back from every Egyptian superstition; and this may explain why we find in the Hebrew books so few passages relating to a life after death. Those few hints, however, go to show that belief in a future life was held by many, although it was not directly taught by the priests.

The great works, such as the buildings and walls of defence, which Solomon raised in Jerusalem and in other cities, together with the magnificence of his court and the army of footmen, horsemen, and chariots that he kept up, could not be supported without a large levy of taxes in some form or other. These taxes seem to have been taken from his subjects, not in money, but in produce. Of money, there was but little in the country; the art of coining had not yet been invented; and when Hiram of Tyre was to be rewarded for his services, he was paid in corn and oil and towns. The gold from Ophir may have helped Solomon much to meet his great expenses. The tribute also from

* 1 Kings x. 19. † Exod. xxviii. 15—30. ‡ Levit. viii. 9.

the Syrians on this side of the Euphrates, and from the Edomites, and possibly from the Philistines and Moabites, gave him something more. The bond-service, or levy of labour, that he exacted from his Canaanite subjects did something for him. But, in addition to all this, there can be no doubt but he levied the land-tax of a tithe of the produce, which Samuel had warned the people would be required by the king. He had twelve officers over all Israel, who sent up to Jerusalem, every month, a large supply of fine flour, of other meal, of fowls, of sheep, of deer, of oxen from the field, and of fatted oxen.* This was probably the tithe taken in kind. The whole must have been very oppressive to the people, and may well account for the discontent which was felt in his latter days, and which burst out into rebellion on his death.

The nine princes or great officers who dwelt in Jerusalem, and surrounded the throne and assisted Solomon in the government of his kingdom were—

1. The hereditary chief priest, the head of the Levites ; who may have been somewhat independent of the king ;
2. A recorder or remembrancer ; who probably assisted him when acting as a judge ;
3. A captain of the guard, who may also have had control of the various garrisons ;
4. A chief of the twelve officers who levied the tax upon produce throughout the country ;
5. The king's friend, who being a priest may have helped him in governing the body of Levites ;
6. A chamberlain, or officer "over the king's house ;"
7. A chief of the numerous officers who directed the labour of the bondservants employed on the public works. These lower officers were perhaps two hundred and fifty in number ;†
- 8, 9. Two scribes or secretaries, who wrote his dispatches.‡

With splendour and prosperity surrounding him at home, Solomon's fame spread far and wide ; and many flocked from a distance to see the wonders of his capital. Chief among these was the queen of Sheba in Arabia, who came with a train of camels in a trading caravan, bringing a great weight

* 1 Kings iv. 7—23.

† 2 Chron. viii. 10.

‡ 1 Kings iv. 1—6.

of gold and spices and precious stones, which in courtly language she called a present to Solomon, but which she did not part with without receiving from him a suitable present in return. Before Solomon's trading voyage on the Red Sea, Sheba and the neighbourhood had been the route through which the gold reached Jerusalem; but, after the route by sea was understood, we hear of none but the gold of Ophir. Among other wonderful sights which were shown to the Arab queen, was Solomon's ascent to the House of Jehovah, which can have been nothing else than a bridge, whether of wood or stone, across the valley of the Tyropæon, by which he was able to walk straight from his palace to the Temple without either going round or descending into the valley. This bridge, or rather one built in its place, was in use in the time of the Emperor Vespasian, nine centuries later.*

Solomon's numerous foreign wives, women of the Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Sidonians, and Hittites, very much turned his heart from the worship of Jehovah. On the hill in front of Jerusalem, well known as the Mount of Olives, he built for the use of these wives, altars to Ashtarothe, the goddess of the Sidonians, and to Milcom or Molech, the god of the Ammonites, and to Chemosh, the god of the Moabites. That hill was consequently long known by the name of the Mount of Corruption.† But the worship of these foreign gods was probably allowed for political reasons, in order to keep quiet the various tribes who lived under his sway, within his cities, and in daily intercourse with the Israelites, much more than from a wish to please his wives, or from any proneness in himself to idolatry. The safety of the throne required that these various tribes should be united into one nation; while, on the other hand, it was the aim of the Levites to bring them all to one religion. David had set the example of overlooking the distinctions of race among his subjects; and Solomon's following in this course is a better proof of his wisdom than any that the historian gives. Solomon valued the subject-tribes as useful bond-servants; and their condition may be understood from Genesis xv., written at the end of Solomon's reign, in which Jehovah gives to Abraham as his property the land of Canaan and all its inhabitants, except the Philistines.

* 1 Kings x. 1—10.

† 1 Kings xi. 1—S; 2 Kings xxiii. 13.

In consequence of his acts of idolatry, says the historian, but perhaps also in consequence of the severity of his taxes, and his subjects' discontent thereat, Jehovah brought many troubles upon Solomon. The first was from Hadad king of Edom, who, when David conquered that country, had escaped as a child into Lower Egypt, and there lived with King Shishak. He had latterly returned into his own land, and had succeeded in making it independent. This, of course, stopped not only the tribute, but also Solomon's trade on the Red Sea. A second trouble was from Syria, where Rezon of Damascus enabled that portion of the north to hold itself independent of Solomon, to withhold its tribute, and to harass Israel. But a yet more serious threatened danger was the unwilling obedience of the northern Israelites, who murmured at having to pay heavy taxes to a king of Judah. Solomon had appointed Jeroboam to the government of the great tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh, a young man whom he had found both useful and faithful as an overseer of his works in building the walls of Jerusalem. But he saw reason to distrust him in the more important post of governor of a discontented province, and would have put him to death if he could have seized him. But Jeroboam, when he learnt that his life was in danger, fled for safety to Shishak king of Egypt, and he remained in Egypt until Solomon's death.

Thus clouds were already gathering around Solomon's throne. His wealth and power rested on no solid foundation; for his subjects were discontented. But fortunately death removed him before the storm burst. He died about the year B.C. 937, after a peaceable and prosperous reign of forty years, leaving a great name for wisdom as a judge. He was buried in Jerusalem, and his son Rehoboam reigned in his stead.*

Solomon's reign was the most glorious time for the Hebrew nation, being the only reign throughout which the whole of the country that they called their own yielded quiet obedience to one monarch. But for this the praise is due less to himself than to David, who left him with all his subjects united into one nation. He may, however, be praised for knowing the value of foreign trade, for keeping his people at peace, for his moderation in being contented with the obedience of the little tribes around him, and for not aiming at

* 1 Kings xi. 14—43.

wider conquests. But the splendour of his court, his buildings, and his costly doings, which have gained him renown, oppressed his subjects and sowed the seeds of discontent. That he governed with a shortsighted and selfish policy is proved by the revolt of his northern and eastern subjects, which followed immediately upon his death.

The authorities mentioned in the Chronicles as containing the deeds of Solomon, are the Book of Nathan the Prophet, before spoken of, the Prophecy of Ahijah, a priest at Shiloh, and the Visions of Iddo the Seer. These two last-mentioned writers lived into the next reign. Iddo is described as the author of a Commentary, meaning, perhaps, the editor of a compilation, and also as the author of a work on Genealogies.* Family genealogies were much valued by the Hebrews; they seem, indeed, to have been their first attempt at history, as in other nations the song or ballad gave rise to the graver form of narrative. A history was called a Book of Births; even the history of the Creation of the World is, in Genesis ii. 4, called the Birth-book of Heaven and Earth.

It is possible that Genesis i—ii. 3, and v.—xi. may be Iddo's work on Genealogies above spoken of. These chapters begin with an account of the creation of the world by Elohim or *God*. This has a regular scientific aim. After the creation of shapeless matter six days are given to the after work. First, light is made, and day is known from night. Secondly, a solid firmament, or sky, is made to divide the waters above from the shapeless mass below. Thirdly, the waters below are gathered together into an ocean, leaving the land dry, which then bears trees and herbs. Fourthly, the sun, moon, and stars are placed in the firmament. Fifthly, fishes are created in the waters, and birds in the air. Sixthly, animals are created on the land, and mankind, male and female, to have dominion over them. The whole comes to pass because God orders it to be so; and writers on style, from Longinus downward, have admired the sublime simplicity with which we are told that God said, "Let there be light," and there was light.

Modern science does not wholly adopt the order of events as here set forth, and gives a far higher rank to the sun and stars, as compared to our earth. But we have in this first

* 1 Kings xiv. 4; 2 Chron. ix. 29; xii. 15; xiii. 22.

chapter a very remarkable attempt to group into one view all things that the eye of man can see ; and this with an acknowledgment that, as nothing comes into being without a cause, these things had a Creator. The Hebrew nation, indeed, did not rest a belief in a God on what they saw, or on the argument from design. They felt, more firmly perhaps than any others, a consciousness in their own breast that there was somewhere an unseen Power superior to themselves. Then looking around they found their feelings confirmed by what they saw. The created works which we can see prove the power and wisdom of the unseen Creator ; and the devout historian of the nation, thinking that all our actions should be described as under the guiding power of God, naturally began his book, with what he supposed was the first time that God exercised that power.

The history of the creation is followed, in chapters v.—xi., by what may be more strictly called a genealogy, down to the time of Abraham. Here we trace an opinion common to many nations, that the life of man had at first been longer than afterwards ; it becomes shorter as we approach more certain history. The first list of names is from Adam to Noah, and then we have the history of the Flood, which again brings down the human race to a single family, by destroying all the rest. The descent of all the then known nations in the world is afterwards traced from Noah's three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth ; and the mountains of Ararat, or Armenia, the site of the Garden of Eden, are again made the cradle of the human race. The distant and less known nations of the world are traced from Japheth, whose name means *Spread abroad*. The Egyptians, Canaanites, Arabs, Assyrians, and Babylonians, the neighbours with whom the Israelites were chiefly at war, are traced from Ham, whose name is the same as Chem, the god of the Egyptians. Abraham, the father of the Israelites, Edomites, and others whom they owned as kindred tribes, is traced from Shem, a name which may be derived from the Egyptian word *Shemmo*, *a foreigner*, as their nation had been naturally called when in Egypt. All animals are here given to Noah and his sons for food. The later Levitical distinction between clean and unclean animals was unknown to the Elohist writer. Chap. vii. 1—5, and viii. 20—22, in which the Levitical distinction is made are Jehovistic additions. That

these Elohistie chapters were in the main written at this time, is probable, for two reasons; first, because, in giving the descent of the Arab tribes, they contain a correction of the views before given in the Jehovistic Life of Abraham; and, secondly, because we shall have to mention a further correction to the views here set forth, which was made when a more enlarged knowledge of geography had been gained. When this had made the Jews acquainted with southern Arabia, then Genesis x. 22—xi. 9, was added in explanation.

The intercourse between Judea and Greece did not begin till so long after the time of Iddo the seer, that it is not safe to think that much can be learned about Iddo's Genealogies from the Greek writers. But in support of the opinion that this History of the World from the Creation to the birth of Abraham, written in the time of Iddo, may be called a Genealogy, and that, if not the work of Iddo, yet that Iddo's Genealogies resembled it, we may quote the earliest Greek history of which any fragment remains to us. This is the work of Acusilaus, written about B.C. 600, called his Genealogies. It begins with Chaos, out of which came forth the earth, the rivers, the ocean, the winds, then the inferior gods of nature, and, lastly, men, described first by nations, and then singly by name. The Genealogies, also, of Hecataeus, a yet later writer, were, like those of Acusilaus, an attempt at prehistoric narrative, but they began, not with the creation or shaping of matter, but with Deucalion, the Greek representative of Noah, in whose time the earth was again peopled with men, after the destruction of our race by the deluge.* With the same use of words the first book of the Bible was by the Greek translators named Genesis, or the Birth-book.

Solomon, like his father David, has himself been considered as an author. He is said to have written or collected a large number of proverbs. Some of these may form part of our present Book of Proverbs, to which, however, additions have been afterwards made. The book was once limited to chapters x.—xxii. 16; and this may have been written at any time between Solomon and Hezekiah. The first nine chapters, a poetical Preface in praise of wisdom, are no part of the original work, and are of a more modern

* Muller's Fragm. Hist. Græc.

age. The Proverbs of Solomon, which follow the Preface, are three hundred and seventy-five in number, each consisting of two lines of poetry. These mostly show one of the chief peculiarities of Hebrew verse ; the second line usually repeats, or answers, or in some such way is a fellow to the first, as, for example :—

A false balance is an abomination to Jehovah ;
But a just weight is his delight.
When boasting cometh, then cometh shame ;
But with the lowly is wisdom.—Prov. xi. 1, 2.

These proverbs, thus thrown into short pointed sentences of two lines each, give us the experience of many minds in a form in which advice can be best remembered. But, like those Psalms which are simply devotional, they contain nothing by which their age can be fixed with exactness. They teach the wisdom and power of God, and that it is our duty to fear and worship and trust him. They praise wisdom, and the several virtues of temperance, chastity, meekness, friendship, truth, justice, and obedience to the king. But not a few are in favour of a rather worldly prudence, and dissuade from becoming surety, from quarrelling, from neglect of advice, and from an unbridled tongue. They never mention the priests. The other Hebrew books which bear Solomon's name, the Book of Ecclesiastes, and the Song of Songs, were not written until many centuries later.

After these three hundred and seventy-five couplets, we have in Chap. xxii. 17—xxiv. 22, The words of the Wise men, which are a number of moral precepts in verse, but not written with the same regularity ; and then in xxiv. 23—34, a further set of such precepts by the Wise men. Both these may perhaps be of a later date, as are the last seven chapters of the Book. Of these seven chapters the titles tell us that they were not written in Solomon's reign ; but as they have the same purpose, and are of the same class, they have been very naturally added to the end of Solomon's Proverbs.

In Solomon's reign also many additions to the Book of Psalms are likely to have been made, as great attention was then paid to the service of the temple. We can at least recognize Psalm lxxii. as rightly attributed by the words at its head to this reign. It begins,—

Give to the king thy judgments, O God,
And thy righteousness to the king's son.

And again,—

He shall bear rule from sea to sea,
And from the river [Euphrates] to the ends of the land.
The people of the desert [the Edomites] shall bow before him ;
And his enemies shall lick the dust.
Kings of Tarshish and of the Isles shall bring presents.
Kings of Sheba and Seba shall offer gifts.

Here we see described the extent of the kingdom in Solomon's reign, which never afterwards reached to the Euphrates. Here we also have his rule over Edom ; the presents from the king of Tyre, who probably was ruler of the island of Cyprus and of Tarshish in Cilicia ; and those from the Queen of Sheba. Seba is said to mean Meroë, but it more probably meant Nubia, the gold country, of which a capital city was Seboua.

Another Psalm of the time, and in honour of Solomon, is Ps. xlv., written on the occasion of his marriage with the Egyptian princess. After a preface of three lines the writer addresses the king and the young queen alternately, while perhaps a chorus breaks in with two lines addressed to God. To the king he says,—

Thou fairest of the sons of Adam,
Grace is poured on to thy lips,
Because God hath blessed thee for ever.

And again,—

King's daughters are among thy beloved women,
On thy right hand standeth the queen in gold of Ophir.

To the queen, who has left her royal home, he says,—

Hearken, O daughter, and look, and incline thine ear ;
Forget also thine own people, and thy father's house.
So shall the king greatly desire thy beauty ;
For he is thy lord, and worship thou him.

And again,—

Instead of thy forefathers will be thy children,
Whom thou mayest make princes in all the land.

Psalm ii. seems also to belong to the end of Solomon's reign, when the Syrians, Edomites, and even the Israelites of the north, were murmuring in rebellion. It is supposed to be spoken by the king, who says :

Why do the nations rage,
 And the peoples imagine a vain thing?
 The kings of the earth set themselves up,
 And the rulers take counsel together,
 Against Jehovah and against his anointed one, [saying]
 'Let us break their bonds asunder,
 And cast away their cords from us.'

In no reign but Solomon's have we the two circumstances, that there were subject nations to rebel against Jerusalem, and also that such rebellion should be thought a vain attempt.

As for what portions of the Books of Genesis and Exodus were written in this reign, as before remarked, the determination is conjectural and uncertain. The list of the princes and kings of Edom who preceded the Hebrew monarchy, in Genesis xxxvi. 9—43, cannot have been written earlier than Solomon's reign; because it comes down to the reign of Hadar, or rather Hadad, as the name is rightly written in the Samaritan copy, and by the Chronicler.* This was the boy who escaped into Lower Egypt towards the end of David's reign, and returned home as a man in the course of Solomon's reign to make his country again independent of Jerusalem.

Probably at this time were added the last two lines to Isaac's poetical blessing upon his son Esau, in Genesis xxvii. 40. The poem, written as we have supposed in the time of David, may have ended with the words "and thou shalt serve thy brother." But now on the successful revolt of the Edomites there may have been added the following two lines,

But it shall come to pass, when thou shalt get free,
 Thou shalt break his yoke from off thy neck.

Reign by reign, or century by century, from this time forward, we must suppose that the early account of the march out of Egypt, with the history of the nation's forefathers in yet earlier times, received its numerous additions, till at last it grew into its present form, and became the volume which we call the Pentateuch. The religious laws, the enactments made by the priests of Jerusalem during the five hundred years between Solomon and Nehemiah, are here thrown into the form of speeches, usually spoken by Jehovah, but sometimes by Moses. In this way the priests claimed a

* 1 Chron. i. 50.

divine origin for laws, which they believed to be agreeable to the will of the Almighty, but which were often made for their own benefit. It may be safely asserted that no part of the ceremonial law was written before the reign of Solomon. It was wholly unknown to David, Saul, and the Judges ; and we shall hereafter find reasons for thinking that it began to take its present form about one hundred years after Solomon's death.

These additions to the Book of Exodus are mostly Jehovistic, but not always so. To some of them we shall be able to give dates ; but the time when the larger number were written must be left uncertain. Among the earliest of the ceremonial laws thus added may be that relating to the Passover and Feast of Unleavened Bread, in Exodus xii. 1—28 and 43—51. The narrative had said in Chap. xii. 39, that the Israelites eat unleavened bread because in their haste they had no time to prepare it properly ; and the law that such bread is to be eaten every year at the return of the season, though it comes earlier in the narrative, can only have been added afterwards. Each family is to slay a Passover lamb for its own eating ; and in the command to sprinkle the blood upon the doorposts to keep off the Destroyer, we have traces of a belief in evil spirits, and of an old superstitious practice. This the priests, instead of forbidding, adopted into their own code ; and they gave to it a religious origin to make it harmless. If the earlier account of the march out of Egypt under the leadership of Moses contained no mention of Aaron, at any rate by this time he had a place in the narrative, as he is mentioned in 1 Samuel xii., which seems to have been written before the end of Solomon's reign. Hence to this time we must give the account of the plagues brought upon Egypt in Exodus iii.—xi., with the appointment of Aaron, not yet as chief priest, but as a help to Moses in his great work. In these Jehovistic additions Moses's father-in-law is named Jethro, *distinguished* ; in the earlier Elohist narrative his name is Reu-el, *the friend of God*.

An important Jehovistic addition to the Elohist Life of Noah is Genesis vi. 1—8, which describes the Sons of God as taking wives of the Daughters of Men, and thus giving birth to a race of Giants, or Rebels. This must be mentioned thus early in our history, because this race of Giants is spoken of in Numbers xiii. 33, as having given birth to the

Children of Anak, one branch of the Philistines. The story of these marriages seems to point to the evil which had arisen from the Israelites marrying with Gentiles. We shall hereafter have to notice writers who distinguish between the chosen race and the foreigners, as Sons of Adam and Sons of Men. But they use the words differently ; for the word "Adam," or *man*, is in the one case used for the lower race, as opposed to the Sons of God, and in the other for the chosen race, as opposed to the foreigners.

In our lives of the prophet Samuel and of King Saul, taken from the first book of Samuel, we found that they were based on three works, the Book of Nathan and the Book of Gad, both written in David's reign, and the Book of Samuel, the work of a later writer with a more priestly and a Jehovistic spirit, who says that there was a temple to Jehovah at Shiloh. The date of this part of our First Book of Samuel must be very uncertain ; but it may be mentioned now, when we meet with other Jehovistic writings. Its saying that the king will claim a tithe of the produce of the land very well agrees with Solomon's tax on the produce ; and at no time after the reign of Solomon would a writer aim at giving sanctity to the ark of Jehovah, by saying that it had been brought from the city of Shiloh in the land of Ephraim. Its declaring that it was Jehovah's will that Saul should exterminate the Amalekites agrees with Solomon's claim to rule over all the countries between the Euphrates and the Nile. The offering brought to Jehovah by Samuel's mother, when the child was weaned, is not that ordered in Leviticus xii., and tells us that that law had not yet been written. On the other hand, in a speech in this part of the First Book of Samuel, the prophet quotes history from the Book of Exodus, and more largely from the Book of Judges, showing the greater age of some parts of those books.* To this work, which dwells more on the doings of Samuel than of Saul, we owe the account of the ark at Shiloh and among the Philistines, of Samuel's choice of Saul for a king, of his being displeased with Saul's act of sacrifice, of his choice of David for Saul's successor, and of the voice of Samuel when dead, warning Saul of his overthrow.

The writer of this Life of Samuel tells us that the prophet, when he appointed Saul to be king, wrote "The manner of

* 1 Sam; xii.

the kingdom" in a book, and laid it up before Jehovah. Thus the priests even in Solomon's reign claimed to have an opinion how the king ought to govern ; and as the words of this book, "The manner of the kingdom," whoever wrote it, professed to be not the words of Jehovah, nor of Moses, but of Samuel, we may suppose that this notice, and the Book itself, were both written before the custom had arisen of putting the laws into the mouth of Jehovah, in short, before the history of the march out of Egypt had been made to contain the body of Jewish laws. If any part of this book remains it has been adopted into the Pentateuch ; perhaps we have a part of it in Deuteronomy xvii. 14—20.

Another part of Deuteronomy, which is altogether unsuited to the times when that book was written, or to any later time, is chap. xx. describing the rules which should guide the Israelites when they proposed to conquer a neighbouring tribe, and to make it tributary. It fully recognizes the right of the strong to attack, to plunder, and to kill the weak ; and the only tenderness shown is in the case of the fruit trees, which are to be spared. Such a law does not suit the latter days of the monarchy, when, after the rise of Assyria, the chief thought of the Jews was how to avoid being made to pay tribute. As the policy here described was that which David followed in his wars of conquest, and which Solomon followed in keeping the conquered countries, it may very properly be mentioned here. We need find no difficulty in supposing that an ancient piece of writing may have been engrafted in that more modern book.

REHOBAM KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 936—920.

On Solomon's death his son Rehoboam was quietly acknowledged as king of Jerusalem ; but the Israelites of the north rose in discontent, and claimed to be eased of the heavy burdens which Solomon had laid upon them for the support of his splendour. Jeroboam, who had fled from Solomon into Egypt, now hurried back to Shechem, to take advantage of the popularity that he had gained when he had been Solomon's governor of the tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh. When Rehoboam came to Shechem, the capital of Ephraim, to receive the submission of Israel, he was met by a demand for a redress of grievances, and a lessening of their taxes : but his answer was not satisfactory to them ;

and the northern tribes would not receive him as king. When the collector of the tribute attempted to enforce obedience the people stoned him to death, and Rehoboam had to escape in his chariot to Jerusalem. The blame for this sad misfortune, by which the once united kingdom was divided into two, with all the evils which followed, must be laid on Rehoboam's obstinacy. The people probably had a good ground for complaining, but he would not listen to them.

The assembled Israelites then made Jeroboam king in Shechem ; and Rehoboam, says the historian, remained king of Judah alone. Simeon and Dan, in the weakness of the kingdom, remained under the Philistines. The tribe of Benjamin, situated in the middle between the north and the south, had always felt themselves part of the north ; but Jerusalem, Rehoboam's capital and fortress being in their country, left them little choice, and Benjamin in part followed Judah. Issachar, and Zebulun, which included Asher and Naphtali, though not unfriendly to Judah, from whom they were separated by Ephraim and Manasseh, naturally fell under the rule of those more powerful tribes. The tribes beyond the Jordan also joined Israel, to whom they were allied by blood. The little tribe of Reuben then ceased to exist. It had never been more than a handful of the men of Judah. Some may have then joined their northern brethren, and the rest sunk under the Moabites among whom they dwelt, and from whom they had never been able to gain the lands which they claimed as their own. The town of Heshbon, and all to the south of it, henceforth belonged to Moab.

Rehoboam's first wish on his return to Jerusalem was to gather together his troops, and enforce the obedience of his northern subjects ; but wiser counsels prevailed. He was far from strong enough to conquer a people twice as numerous as his own, and he gave up the attempt.* He soon found, indeed, that he was unable even to defend his own country. In the fifth year of his reign, Shishak of Bubastis, now king of all Egypt, made a marauding inroad upon the land of Judah. This had the effect of making Rehoboam less able to assert his rights over the northern tribes, and it was probably intended to have that effect. Shishak gained pos-

* 1 Kings xii.

session of Jerusalem, and seized all the treasure that Solomon had collected, both that in the king's house and that in the temple of Jehovah, and the golden shields in the House of the Forest of Lebanon ; and he then returned with them into Egypt. There in Thebes, now his capital, he boastfully recorded his conquest of Judah in sculpture, which remains there to this day. Before this time hieroglyphical records have given us no notice of the Israelites.

When Solomon built the House of Jehovah on Mount Moriah, an open hill on the east side of Jerusalem, we were told of no stronger fence around either that, or the altar in front of it, than a row of cedar rails. Shishak, therefore, can have had little difficulty in seizing the sacred treasures. But this misfortune no doubt led to fortifying the temple-hill ; and in later times we shall find the wall, which embraced Mount Moriah within the fortified city, raised to such a height as to make Jerusalem stronger on the east than on the other sides.

This invasion by Shishak was only the first of a long series of misfortunes which were to fall upon Israel and Judah as the necessary punishment for their want of union. The states on all sides of them had been uniting themselves more and more into larger monarchies. The Hebrews, under David and Solomon, had felt the advantage of being thus united ; but the union did not last beyond two generations, and henceforth they were, in both halves of the country, to feel the evil of being too few in number to defend themselves from the attacks of their neighbours. Of all the Hebrew tribes Judah, including as it did Simeon, was the most populous, and being a kingdom in itself, though holding a portion of Benjamin, it had not the weakness of a confederacy. The kingdom of Israel on the other hand, consisting of several tribes, some to the east and some to the west of the Jordan, and with some of its people friendly to Judah, though more populous, was less united ; and far weaker for self-defence. Thus, though the first misfortune fell upon Judah, we shall hereafter see that Israel was the greater sufferer from its successful rebellion against Rehoboam.

Moreover, the throne of Judah had a source of strength, which its northern sister wanted, in its close alliance with the priesthood. This was begun by David, who brought the

Levites into Jerusalem, was cemented by Solomon in the arrangements of his new temple, and was continued by Solomon's successors until the growing power of the Sons of Aaron, as they soon began to style themselves, made the monarch weary of a partnership in which the advantages were not evenly divided. But in the meantime the Levites claimed for the altar at Jerusalem a superiority over all other High Places or altars; and, in doing so, they threw a character for holiness around the throne on which sat the anointed of Jehovah. The Psalmist in Solomon's reign had styled it God's throne, saying,—

Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever ;
The sceptre of thy kingdom is a sceptre of Justice.*

And the king himself was styled, in one of the additions to the Book of Exodus, "The hand upon the throne of Jehovah."† Thus the priesthood gave great support to the king's power in Judah.

Among the cities which Rehoboam built or rebuilt, or fortified, was Hebron in southern Judah.‡ This is mentioned in Numbers xiii. 22, as having been done seven years before the building of Zoan. The city of Zoan, or Tanis, in Lower Egypt, rose about this time to be one of the chief cities in the country; and in the Hebrew poetry Egypt is often called the Fields of Zoan.

Rehoboam followed the debasing example of David and Solomon in having a number of wives. He had eighteen wives and sixty concubines. Among these wives Maachah, the daughter of Absalom, was the favourite; and her son Abijah, or Abijah, was made ruler over his brethren, and pointed out as the successor to the throne. Rehoboam reigned seventeen years.§

ABIJAH KING OF JUDAH; B.C. 919—917.

Abijah, the son of Rehoboam, reigned for two years, or rather for part of three years, dying in the third year of his reign. Like his fathers he had a large number of wives. And from this practice of the Hebrew kings it often followed that no one of the wives held the high rank of queen. That

* Ps. xlv. 6: † Exod. xvii. 16. ‡ 2 Chron. xi. 10.
§ 1 Kings xiv. 21—31; 2 Chron. xi. xii.

post of honour fell to the king's mother ; she was naturally the greatest lady in the land, and had the place of first importance in the state, which would have been held by the king's wife if he had but one. The historian does not trouble himself with the names of all a king's wives, but he usually gives us the name of the queen-mother.

During this short reign the enmity between Judah and Israel broke out into open war. Israel was defeated in battle, and Abijah took from Jeroboam Beth-el, and some of the neighbouring towns, thus making himself master of a large part of the land of Benjamin, which, if it had been free to choose, would have all belonged to Israel rather than Judah, and of which the larger part did soon join itself to the northern kingdom.

For the history of Abijah's reign we are indebted to the Chronicles of the Kings of Judah, and the Commentary of Iddo the Seer.*

JEROBOAM KING OF ISRAEL ; B.C. 936—916.

The northern and eastern tribes, on their revolt from Rehoboam, the son of Solomon, made Jeroboam king. He had, as we have seen, been appointed by Solomon governor of the land of Ephraim and Manasseh ; and then had fallen into displeasure and fled into Egypt, and he returned, as the friend and with the countenance of the Egyptian king, to divide the Hebrew tribes, and to seize the sceptre of the northern half.

His mother was a widow named Zeruah, and he was the son of her second marriage with Nebat, a man of Ephraim. We are tempted to conjecture that she may have been the same person as Zeruiah, David's sister and Joab's mother. Zeruah may be translated *a Leper*, a very improbable name for any child ; and it looks like a nick-name made from the real name by the change of a letter, and used to throw a reproach upon Jeroboam, the leader in the great revolt. If he were a younger half-brother of Joab, and thus Solomon's cousin, it would explain his rise, first to the government of a province, and then to a throne. He seems to have been raised to the throne for his good qualities, and by the free choice of the people. The charge against him of idolatry may have been exaggerated by southern hatred.

* 1 Kings xv. 1—8 ; 2 Chron. xiii.

The southern writers often speak of the revolt of the northern tribes as the Sin of Jeroboam, whereby he made Israel to sin. But the revolt was the act of the people, not of their leader. Jeroboam was in Egypt when it began, and they sent for him to come and be their king. We must not lay upon him the blame for the misfortune of the kingdom being henceforth divided into two. The blame must be shared between Rehoboam and Solomon.

Jeroboam's kingdom, though the larger of the two, was less thickly peopled, and had a source of weakness in its want of union. The more northerly tribes of Issachar and Zebulun, as we have seen in the history of Jacob's family, were not unfriendly to Judah, and they probably joined in the revolt unwillingly. Jeroboam's kingdom, moreover, had no large cities. It had, however, Joppa, the one port on the Mediterranean, which gave it some little trading advantages.* For his capital Jeroboam fortified Shechem in the hill country of Ephraim, and Penuel on the river Jabbok, as a second capital, to secure the obedience of the tribes on the east of the Jordan. Mahanaim, the former capital of Gilead, may not have been in such a convenient situation. He also had a house at Tirzah, a village a few miles to the north of Shechem, which was a more pleasant spot for a dwelling than the walled city. The beauty of Tirzah, thus made the site of a royal palace, lay probably in its gardens; it was proverbial; and five centuries later the writer of Solomon's Song says of the bride that she was beautiful as Tirzah.

Jeroboam made two golden calves, and set up one at Dan at the northern end of his kingdom, and one at Beth-el in the south'; and many of the people may have fallen into the idolatry of worshipping them. But when the southern historians charge this guilt so freely upon the northern tribes, we are tempted to be rather distrustful. Jeroboam drove all the Levites out of his kingdom; they were supporters of Rehoboam's claim to the throne, they were perhaps natives of Judah; and Jeroboam gave their places to priests who were natives of Israel. He thus rebelled against the chief priests of Jerusalem as much as against the king of Jerusalem, and hence the charges against him of favouring idolatry may not all be true. For the next two hundred years the sin of Jeroboam, the son of Nebat, became a proverb with the

* Josh. xix. 46; Hos. xii. 7:

writers in the kingdom of Judah ; but whether they mean his rebellion against Solomon's son, or his driving the Levites out of his kingdom, or his idolatry, is often doubtful. His golden calves were no doubt copied from Egypt. It was the custom for a nation at this time, and indeed at many times, to force a conquered or dependent people to adopt its gods as an act of homage to its superior power ; and when Shishak king of Egypt favoured Jeroboam's aim at the throne, and further strengthened him on it by his attack upon Jerusalem, he probably required Jeroboam to set up these Egyptian emblems in his new kingdom. In Judea the Feast of Ingathering, when the figs and grapes had been housed, was celebrated on the fifteenth day of the seventh month, that is, at the first full moon after the autumnal equinox. But for northern Israel, where the seasons are later, Jeroboam very naturally fixed the Feast of Ingathering a month later, at the next full moon ; and this was counted against him as a crime by the priests of Jerusalem.

Jeroboam had not leant more to idolatry than Solomon had. The driving the Levites out of the north was not done so much to change the religion as to get rid of a body of priests whose influence was used in favour of Judah's claim to superiority. As they were obedient servants to the chief priest in Jerusalem, they could not be good subjects to Jeroboam.

At the revolt, a part of Benjamin had given its obedience to Jeroboam, but towards the end of his reign he had been so far defeated by Abijah, king of Judah, that he lost the town of Beth-el with the neighbouring villages, and very possibly the whole of Benjamin. No part of this tribe was more than twenty miles from Jerusalem ; so it often had to fall under the power of that capital.

Jeroboam reigned twenty-one years, and was succeeded by his son Nadab.* We do not hear that he had more wives than one. Whether that arises from our having less information about the northern kings, or from their not following the debasing practice of the kings of Judah, is doubtful. But the same may be remarked of Jeroboam's successors, as also of his predecessor, king Saul.

To a time soon after Jeroboam had set up his golden calves we must give *Exod.* xxxii.—xxxiv. 9, wherein is described

* 1 Kings xii.—xiv. 20 ; 2 Chron. xi. 14—xiii. 20.

the slaughter by the hands of the Sons of Levi, of the three thousand worshippers of Aaron's golden calf. We must put these chapters thus early while Aaron was considered as only a help to Moses, and before he and his sons had the higher rank given to them of hereditary chief priests, as in Chap. xxviii. The approval given here and elsewhere to putting to death all idolatrous brethren is one of the sad features in the priestly portion of the Hebrew writings. It gives countenance to the opinion that the governing power does right to check errors in religion by punishment, and has thus provided the faggots by which Christians have burnt both Jews and heretics.

The rebuke by Moses of the worship of the Calf was a rebuke to the northern Israelites, and was followed by his breaking the two first Tables of the Law. These, perhaps, had some Elohistic words, displeasing to the Jehovistic writer, or at least not sufficiently Jehovistic and forbidding of image worship. To this time, therefore, we must give ch. xxxiv., with the making of the two new Tables of Stone, and the present disordered state of the narrative, the rejection of the original Commandments from ch. xix. 6, and the insertion of the Jehovistic Ten Commandments in their present place. We must not suppose that these were now new; they may have been written long before on the Stone Tables, which were within the Ark in the City of Jearim before Saul was king.

NADAB KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 916—915.

Nadab, the son of Jeroboam, reigned for one year, dying in the second year of his reign. He had entered upon a war against the Philistines, who still held some towns within the land of Dan, a part of the country that upon the quarrel between Israel and Judah, had no strong feelings towards one more than the other. During the reign of Solomon, these once formidable neighbours had been quiet and unheard of; but now they are again in arms. Solomon's successors, however, were not willing to be driven out of the territory that they had once gained; and the king of Israel claimed it as belonging to him. Nadab was engaged in besieging the Philistines in the city of Gibbethon, when he was slain by Baasha, a native of Issachar, probably an officer in his army. Baasha put to death every one of Jeroboam's family,

and then reigned in his stead. This, says the southern historian, was in punishment for Jeroboam's sins against Jehovah, meaning perhaps as much his rebellion against Judah and its priests, as his leaning towards idolatry. The lives of these kings are said to be written in the Book of the Chronicles of the Kings of Israel, a work about which we have no further information than its title.*

BAASHA KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 915—892.

Baasha the usurper was of the tribe of Issachar, which was not so unfriendly to Judah as were Ephraim and Manasseh. His father bore the Jehovistic name of Ahijah, and perhaps was the prophet of that name. So a difference in religion may have been one cause for Baasha's rebellion, as it continued to be a cause of weakness to the northern kingdom.

In the reign of Baasha the civil war continued between Israel and Judah with various success. Baasha regained possession of part of the land of Benjamin, and he attempted to fortify Ramah near Beth-el, as a check upon the king of Judah. But he was defeated, and his work was stopped. He was recalled from his attack upon Judah by being himself invaded by Ben-hadad king of Damascus, who took from him the land of Naphtali and all to the north of it. And the prophet Jehu, the son of Hanani, rightly described him as bringing this trouble upon himself by his invasion of Judah. Baasha removed his dwelling from Shechem, his capital, to Tirzah, a spot a few miles to the north, celebrated for its pleasant situation, where Jeroboam had sometimes dwelt. But, besides the pleasantness of the place, Baasha may have had another reason for liking Tirzah better than Shechem, as it was nearer to his own friends in the land of Issachar. He died in the twenty-fourth year of his reign, and was succeeded by his son Elah.†

By this late Syrian invasion, if not before, the second of Jeroboam's golden calves must have been destroyed. That at Beth-el cannot have remained there after that town was captured by Abijah, nor that at Dan after Ben-hadad conquered Naphtali. But, though these northern idols were destroyed, they were not forgotten by the people of the

* 1 Kings xv. 25—31.

† 1 Kings xv. 32—xvi. 7; 2 Chron. xvi. 1—6.

south; and two centuries later, the prophet Hosea would wish us to believe that the men of Samaria were worshipping a calf.

ASA KING OF JUDAH; B.C. 917—877.

Abijah had died in the third year of his reign over Judah, leaving his son Asa to succeed him. Asa was young, perhaps only a child; and he at first fell to the care of his grandmother Maachah. But we are told that he did what was right in the eyes of Jehovah; which means that he governed agreeably to the will of the priests, or rather, that he allowed himself to be governed by them. Under Asa the priests were able to strengthen their power in civil affairs, and year by year they became more important. One of the king's early acts was deposing his grandmother from her political rank as queen, because she had made an idol to Ashera, a Phenician goddess usually worshipped in a grove. This idol he burnt in the valley of Kidron, a dirty brook running along the east side of the city. Asa also added largely to the treasures in the temple, handing over to the priests both the treasures which his father had collected and those which he himself collected, of gold and silver and vessels. Thus a large part of the public treasure was placed in the hands of the priests. It was safer in the temple than in the palace. The holiness of the place gave it better protection than the royal guards could give it elsewhere. The king's heart was perfect with Jehovah, says the historian, with but one exception, namely, the High Places or altars in other parts of the land of Judah were not removed.* It was the tyrannical aim of the priests in Jerusalem, at the same time that they taught the duty of offering up burnt offerings and bringing sacrifices to Jehovah, to stop such acts of worship from being performed in any place but in Jerusalem. They may have justified this by saying that elsewhere such sacrifices were likely to be accompanied with idolatrous ceremonies; but it is impossible not to believe that their wish to bring all the offerings to Jehovah up to Jerusalem, arose mainly from a desire to increase their own importance.

For the first ten years of Asa's reign the land enjoyed quiet; but this prosperity was for a moment disturbed by

* 1 Kings xv. 9—15.

another Egyptian marauding inroad. Zerah, an Ethiopian, by which we may understand a king of Thebes, not a native of Lower Egypt, like Shishak, led a large army into Southern Judah. He was probably called in as an ally by the king of Israel, whose war with Judah had only slumbered. But he was able to advance no further than Moreshah near Gath, in the valley of Zephathah. There the invaders were met by Asa, at the head of his army. The Ethiopians were routed and pursued as far as Gerar in the land of the Philistines ; and Asa returned to Jerusalem laden with spoil, gained not only from the invaders, but from the Philistines, in whose country the battle had been fought. He smote all the cities round about Gerar, and found a large amount of booty, which he carried off, together with the sheep and camels of the herdsmen around. Zerah's army is said to have held a million men, and Asa's to have held more than half a million ; but these numbers are so far beyond all probability that it is in vain to reason about them.*

The word Zerah is an Egyptian title, meaning "Son of the Sun," a title used by all the Theban kings, and it gives us but little help in learning what king was meant. Shishak of Bubastis, who some forty years earlier had made himself king of Thebes, had been succeeded by a son ; but there his line had ended. It is probable that, on the fall of his family, the family of Rameses again for a few years held the sceptre of Egypt. But it was a time of civil war and disturbance, and we can only offer as a conjecture that Zerah, the Ethiopian, was Rameses VII. of Thebes.

In the thirty-sixth year of Asa, which we must understand to mean the thirty-sixth year of Rehoboam, and therefore the seventeenth of Asa, according to our mode of reckoning, Baasha king of Israel, as mentioned above, made a successful attack upon Asa, and seizing the town of Ramah, which was less than ten miles from Jerusalem, he fortified it in order to separate the northern half of Benjamin from the capital. Asa in his difficulty looked about for an ally, and he took the treasures of his own palace, and those of the temple of Jehovah, and sent them to Ben-hadad king of Damascus, with a request that he would invade the territory of Israel. Ben-hadad accepted the bribe, and overran with his troops the fertile province of Naphtali. This invasion in the north

called back Baasha from his invasion in the south. It was no longer possible for him to hold Ramah ; and Asa took possession of the timber and stones that he had prepared for the defence of that city, and made use of them to fortify Geba and Mizpah, two cities in the same neighbourhood which were better situated for defence. While fortifying the town of Mizpah, Asa made there a great pit which remained open for the next three centuries.* For what purpose it was made is doubtful ; perhaps as a tank for water, which is very necessary in a town without wells. His sending the treasures out of the temple to purchase the Syrian help may have been wise, but it can hardly have been approved of by the priests ; and Hanani, the seer, is said to have reproached him for relying upon the king of Syria, instead of relying upon Jehovah. The king in a rage sent the prophet to prison.

The last fifteen years of Asa's reign were a time of peace. The rival kingdom, after the death of Baasha, was torn to pieces by civil wars, in which Asa wisely took no part. He must be counted as one of the best of the kings of Judah, and he left his kingdom to his only son Jehoshaphat at peace with all around.

Asa repaired the great altar in front of the Temple-porch ;† and since we have reason to believe it was raised in height by some king in the course of this century, we may reasonably suppose that this was done on that occasion by Asa. Exodus xx. 24—26, written perhaps in approval of Solomon's altar, had said that it was not to be so lofty as to need steps. But Exodus xxviii. 42, and Leviticus vi. 10, which describe the priests' garments, and were written about the reign of Jehoash, let us understand that then the altar was so lofty as to require steps for the priests to mount by when laying upon it the wood and animals. Hence we have reason for supposing that its height was raised by Asa when he repaired it ; and probably with the approval of the priests, although it was done in neglect of Exodus xx. 24—26.

The plunder of the Temple by the Egyptians in Rehoboam's reign had no doubt left it deprived of much of its costly furniture ; and this loss also may have been in part repaired during Asa's long reign ; although his tribute to the Syrians had left the Temple with lessened wealth. Solomon

* Jerem. xli. 9.

† 2 Chron. xv. 8.

had ornamented it with ten golden lampstands, and had placed ten handsome copper lavers, or basins, in the courtyard for the priests' use.* But portions of the Book of Exodus, written within the century following Asa's reign, tell us that the Sons of Aaron then had to be contented with one golden lampstand and one copper laver.† Asa in his old age was diseased in his feet, and here again he offended the priests. For relief in his illness he sought help not from Jehovah, but from the physicians. He died in the forty-first year of his reign; and his body was embalmed with spices, which does not seem to have been always done in the case of the Hebrew monarchs.‡

The authority quoted for the history of this reign is the Chronicles of the Kings of Judah, a book now lost, which must not be mistaken for our present two Books of Chronicles, which are a compilation made several centuries later.§

Hanani the seer of Asa's reign is the last person we meet with bearing that title. Henceforward such men are called Prophets. The seer was so named because he gave his advice as received from God in a vision; the Prophet was so called from the poetic manner, or the ready utterance, with which he delivered such advice. The remark in our First Book of Samuel, that "he that is now called a Prophet was before-time called a Seer," was of course written some generations after the time of Samuel. We have given it to the end of Solomon's reign.

ELAH KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 892—891.

ZIMRI KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 891.

OMRI AND TIBNI KINGS OF ISRAEL; B.C. 891—887.

OMRI KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 886—880.

Before the end of Asa's reign Elah, the son of the rebel Baasha, succeeded his father as king of Israel, and was himself to be slain by another rebel. He sent an army against the Philistines, hoping to gain the land of Dan, as Nadab the son of Jeroboam had attempted to gain it twenty-five years before. He gave himself up to luxurious living, and when drunk with wine at Tirzah he was killed by Zimri, one of the captains of his chariots. Zimri killed at the same

* 1 Kings vii. † Exod. xxv. 31; xxx. 17. ‡ 2 Chron. xvi.
§ 1 Kings xv.; 2 Chron. xvi.

time all the rest of the family of Baasha, and declared himself king of Israel.

Elah's troops were besieging Gibbethon in the land of Dan, when they heard of his murder by Zimri. Omri was at the head of that army; and his soldiers thought that he was at least as suitable a man for the crown as the murderer Zimri. They accordingly declared him king of Israel, and marched without loss of time against Zimri, who had shut himself up in Tirzah. Zimri, seeing that he had no chance of defending the place against Omri's army, set fire to the palace and killed himself, after having been king seven days.

But Omri's claim to the throne was not undisputed. He had no better right to be king than Zimri; and while one-half of Israel obeyed him as king in Tirzah, another half set up Tibni as king. Though we are not told what tribes followed Tibni, we must suppose that they were not the northerly tribes of Asher, Issachar, Zebulun, and Naphtali, as their lands seem to have been the battle field between Omri and Ben-hadad king of Syria, who held a number of cities there,* but rather the tribes on the east of the Jordan, of which country Penuel was the capital. The civil war between Omri and Tibni, of which we have no particulars, lasted for six years; Omri's people then gained the superiority, and Tibni was put to death.

Omri then reigned for six years more over the whole of the northern and eastern tribes, so far at least as he could hold the northern part of his kingdom against the Syrians. To strengthen himself against these dangerous neighbours, he courted the alliance of the king of Tyre, as Solomon had before done; and attained for his son Ahab as a wife Jezebel the daughter of Ethbaal who was then on the throne of Tyre and Sidon. He removed his residence from Tirzah to the hill of Shemer in the same neighbourhood, and equally within the land of Manasseh. Tirzah had been chosen for the pleasantness of the situation, but the hill of Shemer was chosen for its strength as a military position. There Omri built his castle; and the town that grew up around it was in later days known by the name of Samaria. Shechem, the former capital, was perhaps thought too near to the unfriendly country of Judah. Omri died in the twelfth year of his reign, and was succeeded by his son Ahab.†

* 1 Kings xx. 34.

† 1 Kings xvi. 8—28.

AHAB KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 880—861.

Ahab, we are told by the historian, did evil in the sight of Jehovah above all that were before him. He was very much governed by his wife Jezebel the daughter of Ethbaal, king of Tyre, or rather of the Sidonians, as the king held sway over all their cities on that coast. Ahab, falling into his wife's religion, built a temple to Baal in his new city, Samaria, and had an altar there, where he sacrificed to that god. Here, then, we see why it was unwise in the Israelites to speak of the Almighty, the one God, the Creator of the world, by the name of Baal, or *Lord*. The use of the word made it more easy for a worshipper of the Sidonian idol Baal, to introduce his corrupting worship into the country. It was perhaps not before this time that the name of Baal was so much blamed by the Hebrew writers, when it was used as a name for God. It was not thought blameable in David's time, when his son was named Baaliada.

Jeroboam, at the beginning of the revolt, had driven the Levites out of the northern kingdom, and now Ahab, under the advice of his foreign wife put to death the prophets who acknowledged Jehovah.* This irreligious conduct was thought to have been the cause of a severe drought and famine which afflicted the land for three years at the beginning of this reign. Ahab also made a grove for Ashera, who was perhaps the same as the Sidonian goddess As-tarte.†

It is very probable that as Ahab married his Sidonian wife in the reign of his father Omri, this attack upon the worship of Jehovah may have been begun by Omri, the father, rather than by Ahab, the son, though it is not mentioned in the former reign. But when the prophet Micah, writing a century and a half later, speaks of the wicked Decree of Omri,‡ he clearly means this attack upon the worship of Jehovah. So, when the prophet Hosea blames Ephraim for walking after the Decree,§ he means a decree to the same purpose, whether that issued by Jeroboam I., or this issued by Omri and enforced by Ahab.

Ethbaal, the father of Ahab's queen, was a priest of As-tarte, in the city of Tyre. He was a usurper; he had slain

* 1 Kings xviii. 4. † 1 Kings xvi. 29—33. ‡ Chap. vi. 16.

§ Chap. v. 11.

the Sidonian king Pheles, a descendant of Hiram, and thus gained the throne. He reigned thirty-two years. The Tyrian annals place seventy-two years between Solomon's fourth year, when Hiram helped to build the Temple of Jerusalem, and the accession of Ethbaal. If, then, we may suppose that Ethbaal had reigned twenty-two years when Ahab came to the throne of Israel, our chronology will agree with the Tyrian records.*

Ben-hadad, king of Damascus, had invaded Israel in the reign of Baasha, and again in the reign of Omri, taking many of the northern cities; he seems to have conquered and held in subjection the three northern tribes, Asher, Naphtali, and Zebulun, to the north of the valley of Jezreel; and now Ben-hadad's son, a second of the same name, repeated the attack upon Omri's son, Ahab. Ahab in his fright at once owned himself to be Ben-hadad's servant, and that all he had, his gold, his silver, his wives and his children, were at Ben-hadad's service. But these mere words did not satisfy Ben-hadad, he said he should come with his army and fetch them. Accordingly he came as far south as the city of Samaria, in which Ahab had shut himself up. He brought with him, in his army, thirty-two kings, his allies, and laid siege to the city. But he was repulsed by Ahab, and his army was put to rout, and he himself fled with his horsemen.†

Ahab's courteous words, by 'which he promised to give all that he possessed to Ben-hadad, were a form of eastern politeness of which we have many examples in this history. When the Hittite offered to give to Abraham the Cave of Machpelah, when Araunah the Jebusite offered to give to David the Threshing-floor, when the Queen of Sheba brought her presents to Solomon; in all these cases they meant to be paid for what they called gifts, and like king Ahab they did not mean to be taken at their word.

The next year, Ben-hadad proposed again to attempt the conquest of Samaria. He mustered his army near the city of Aphek, in the land of Issachar, in the valley of Jezreel. This is a valley made interesting by the number of important battles that have been there fought. It runs across the country from the Jordan to the sea, dividing the hill country of Ephraim and Manasseh from the hill country of

* Josephus, contr. Ap. 1. 18.

† 1 Kings xx. 1—21.

Naphtali and Zebulun. In the war between Ben-hadad and Ahab, either army would perhaps have been superior if it had waited the attack on its own hills ; but Ben-hadad, trusting to his chariots and horsemen, went down into the valley ; and the Israelites, encouraged by the belief that Jehovah was a God of the valleys as much as of the hills, went down to meet him. The Israelites were victorious, and Ben-hadad fled into the city of Aphek, to wait his fate from the conqueror.

Ahab was contented with his victory ; perhaps he distrusted his own means of pursuing it further ; so he made a treaty with Ben-hadad, who undertook to retire peaceably, and to withdraw his troops from those cities in the land of Israel which his father, the first Ben-hadad, had conquered from Baasha and Omri. Using the figurative language of the east to mean that his capital should no longer be a hostile city, he promised that Ahab should have leave to make such highways into Damascus as the first Ben-hadad had made into Samaria.*

On this defeat of the Syrian invasion, king Ahab, relying on the treaty of peace which he had generously granted to Ben-hadad, moved his dwelling-place to the northern part of his kingdom. He built for his Sidonian wife a new palace at Jezreel, a small town in the fertile valley of the same name. Queen Jezebel may have wished for this move, because it placed her nearer to the Phenician territory. This palace was called his Ivory House,† perhaps from the large quantity of ivory with which it was ornamented ; and it was soon disgraced by the murder of Naboth, whose death Jezebel caused that she might gain possession of an adjoining vineyard which Ahab wished to add to his garden.‡ This new palace took the place of the summer palace at Tirzah ; but Samaria continued to be the capital of the kingdom.

In the reign of Ahab, Hiel of Beth-el built, or rather fortified, Jericho, a village in the desert part of the land of Benjamin, in a line between Beth-el and the southern ford of the Jordan. This act, says the southern historian, was displeasing to Jehovah, and it cost Hiel the lives of two of his sons.§ For the explanation of this, we are left to con-

* 1 Kings xx: 22—34.

† 1 Kings xxi.

‡ 1 Kings xxii. 39.

§ 1 Kings xvi. 34.

jecture. Beth-el, on the border between Benjamin and Ephraim, was often in the hands of the king of Israel. This building of Jericho was probably a hostile act on the part of the northern king, and an attempt to cut off Jerusalem from the ford, or rather to keep open a road through Beth-el and across the southern ford from Ephraim to the eastern districts which were under the king of Israel, and to the Moabites who paid him a tribute. This was the more important, because, as we shall learn presently, the Syrians now held so large a portion of Israelite land on the east of the Jordan, that this was the only ford by which one part of Ahab's dominions could hold intercourse with the other part.

For the next three years there was no war between Israel and Syria ; but it began again in the fourth year. The king of Damascus had promised to restore to Ahab certain conquered cities. What the promise included, or how far it was performed, does not appear ; but we find that Ben-hadad still kept possession of his conquests on the east of the Jordan. These Ahab now proposed to recover, and with this view he made an alliance with Jehoshaphat, the next king of Judah. Israel and Judah had been at war for seventy years, and this was the first time that a treaty had been concluded between them since the death of Solomon and the revolt of Jeroboam.

This treaty between the two kings took place in the tenth year of Ahab's reign, when he gave his daughter in marriage to Jehoshaphat's son Jehoram. But the treaty was not made on equal terms ; it was more or less an act of submission on the part of Israel to the superior power of Judah, whose help was now needed against Syria. One article of the treaty certainly was the admission of the Levites and the worship of Jehovah into the Northern kingdom. It was at this time probably that Ahab gave to his three children, who were all grown up, Jehovistic names. These names, Athaliah, Ahaziah, and Jehoram, two ending and the other beginning with the word Jah or Jehovah, show that though he had married a Phenician princess, and under her influence had at one time put the worshippers of Jehovah to death, yet during the latter part of his reign his leaning had been towards the religion, as well as the political friendship, of his southern neighbour. He, and

perhaps his people, had halted between two opinions ; and the northern nation, as we shall find, was seriously weakened by its division into two parties.

We may perhaps find another reason for Ahab's change in his religious policy, and for this friendship between Israel and Judah. We have already shown that Ethbaal king of Tyre and Sidon, Ahab's friend and father-in-law, had probably reigned twenty-two years when Ahab came to the throne ; and Ethbaal's death in Ahab's tenth year must have lessened the influence of queen Jezebel, his daughter, over her husband Ahab, and may have made it necessary for Ahab to look for a new friend in Jehoshaphat, to help him against the Syrians. At least we know, from a comparison between the Tyrian annals and the Book of Kings, that Ethbaal died about the time that his granddaughter, Athaliah of Israel, married Jehoshaphat's son Jehoram. In these days, a war was always supposed to pay for itself ; a king went to battle in the belief that the booty gained would pay for the expenses of the preparation. So, when Ahab asked Jehoshaphat to join him in attempting to recover Gilead from the Syrians of Damascus, he was as much granting a favour as asking one. Jehoshaphat went to Samaria to consult with Ahab about the war.

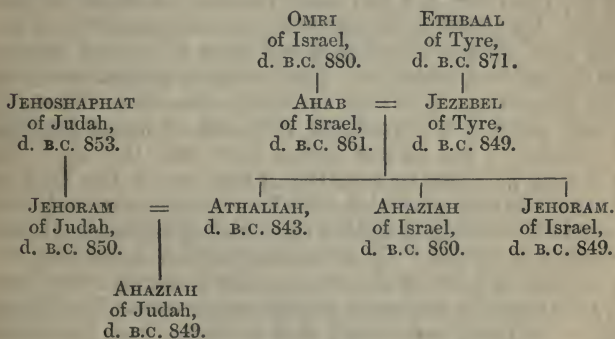
Before moving their armies Jehoshaphat proposed that they should consult Jehovah ; and Ahab gathered together four hundred of his prophets, who all promised him success. But Jehoshaphat wished for the opinion of one of his own prophets of Jehovah ; and Ahab rather unwillingly sent for Micaiah. Micaiah assured them that Jehovah had sent a lying Spirit on purpose to mislead Ahab and his prophets ; and he warned Ahab that he would not return in safety from the battle. But the more rash counsels prevailed, and the two kings led their forces against the city of Ramoth in Gilead, which was then held by the Syrians of Damascus.

Our history, after the prophet's speech to the two kings, adds, "And he said, *Hear, O ye peoples, every one of you.*" These are the words with which the Book of Micah now begins ; and they have been added by an editor who thought, and meant to tell us, that Micah, who wrote a hundred and fifty years later in the reign of Hezekiah, was the same person as this Micaiah of Jehoshaphat's time.

Before the battle the two kings had agreed that Ahab

should be disguised in dress like one of his own captains, and not distinguishable in the crowd, but that Jehoshaphat should wear his robes. But the disguise did not save Ahab. He was shot by an arrow, which entered between the joints of his armour, and he was propped up in his chariot while the fight continued, and then he died in the evening. With the death of Ahab the fight was at an end. Jehoshaphat seems then to have retired from this invasion of Gilead, and the Syrians did not pursue. Ahab had reigned twenty-one or twenty-two years. His body was carried to Samaria, and there buried.*

Our finding, during this half century, the same names upon the throne of Judah, and upon that of Israel, leads to some confusion, which can be best removed by a table. This also will further explain how the idolatrous queen Jezebel, and her violent daughter, queen Athaliah, became so important during these reigns, the one in Israel, and the other in Judah.



AHAZIAH, KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 861.

Ahaziah, who succeeded his father Ahab, or perhaps reigned jointly with him, reigned only parts of two years. He continued in the idolatrous practices of his mother, the Tyrian princess, and when laid on the sick bed, in consequence of a fall in Samaria, he sent to inquire of Baalzebub, the god of Ekron, a city of the Philistines, as to whether he should recover. His reign, though short, was marked by

* 1 Kings xxii. 1—40.

serious misfortune. The Moabites had hitherto paid a tribute to the kings of Israel in lambs and wool ; but, on the defeat of Ahab by the Syrians, the Israelite power on the east of the Jordan was very much weakened, and the Moabites revolted, and sent no further tribute.*

Ahaziah left no children, and he was succeeded by his brother Jehoram.

JEHORAM, KING OF ISRAEL ; B.C. 860—849.

Jehoram began his reign with an endeavour to reduce the rebellious Moabites to obedience, and to enforce the payment of the usual tribute. But as the Syrians of Damascus were masters of the east side of the Jordan, he could not easily reach Moab from the north ; therefore for this purpose, like his father, he asked for the help of Jehoshaphat, king of Judah. This was granted, and the two monarchs further agreed to ask the king of Edom to join them. He also consented. The three little armies united at the southern end of the Dead Sea, and laid waste the land of Moab far and wide. On reaching Kir-hareseth, the more southerly of the two chief cities of Moab, they laid siege to it, and seemed on the point of taking it. Their slingers pressed sorely on the defenders. The king of Moab, who was within the place, made a fierce sally at the head of seven hundred swordsmen. But he was driven back into the city. He was able, however, to seize the eldest son of the king of Edom, and him he carried with him into the city, and then burnt on the wall, in sight of the invading armies, as a burnt offering to his god. It is from the prophet Amos that we learn that it was not his own son that he burnt, as has been usually thought, and as the passage might mean. The Edomites, with Israel and Judah, then withdrew from before the city, and returned to their own homes. The Edomites gained very little by this war, as during the next two centuries we usually find them subject to Moab.†

Israel, during the reign of Jehoram, was reduced to a very low state. The kingdom was little more than the land of Ephraim and Manasseh, on the west of the Jordan. He had lost the larger part of the country on the east of the river. The Syrians of Damascus from the north had occupied all to the north of Gilead. We are not told that Jehoram had made

* 1 Kings xxii. 51—2 Kings iii. 5. † 2 Kings iii. ; Amos ii. 1.

himself tributary to Jehoshaphat, but it is impossible not to conjecture that both he and his father had done so, when we remember the help that Israel received from Judah during both their reigns, and that Jehoshaphat never took advantage of his neighbour's weakness to overrun the country. What remained to Jehoram of the former kingdom was sadly pressed by famine and the Syrians. Ben-hadad the Second again laid siege to the city of Samaria; and such was the want of necessaries within the walls, that the very coarsest of food, such as the root of the herb dove's dung, was said to have been sold for almost its weight in silver. But out of this difficulty Jehoram was, in some strange way, unexpectedly relieved. We are not told of the battle in which the Syrians were routed and driven to retire from the siege, nor what forces they were that brought this deliverance to the besieged city. We only read of the plunder of the Syrian camp when it was learned that they had retreated northwards, and of the general belief that they had heard a noise in heaven of chariots and horses, and of a great army.* In our difficulty we are tempted to conjecture that the besieged city may have been relieved by the army of Jehoshaphat, and, indeed, that this may have been the battle fought against the Syrians in winter, on Mount Zalmon, in that neighbourhood, so poetically described in Psalm lxviii. 11—19.

That the people of Israel, under Ahab and Jehoram, were tributary to the king of Judah, or at least dependent on his good will, is further made probable by their consenting to receive his religion, together with his military aid. At this time, by the treaty with Jehoshaphat, the Hill country of Ephraim, that is, nearly all that remained to Jehoram of the revolting tribes, was in some degree brought back to the worship of Jehovah.† Though the queen-mother, the idolatrous and hated Jezebel, had still a large share of power in the kingdom, yet we have seen syllables borrowed from the name of Jehovah, in her two sons', or perhaps step-sons' names, and therefore can believe that some part of the north consented to receive the Levites as their priests. The Levites, it will be remembered, had been driven out of the northern kingdom by Jeroboam.

* 2 Kings vi. 8—vii.

† 2 Chron: xix. 4.

About this time, Ben-hadad II., king of Damascus, was murdered by Hazael, one of his servants, and Hazael succeeded in making himself king. His country was still at war with the kings of Israel and Judah. Israel had, it seems, held against the Syrians the city of Ramoth in Gilead, and Jehoram had there been wounded, and had returned home to Jezreel to be healed, leaving his victorious army under the command of his captains. The Israelites had also, in the land of Manasseh, so far driven the Syrians back, that Israel now held the Hill country, as far as the valley of Jezreel. While Jehoram remained wounded in the city of Jezreel, he was visited by Ahaziah, the young king of Judah. At that moment, while the two kings were together, Jehu, the grandson of Nimshi, one of the captains in command of the army in Gilead, raised the standard of rebellion, and proclaimed himself king of Israel. He crossed over the Jordan, and came upon the two kings in Jezreel, before they knew that they were in danger, and slew both Jehoram and Ahaziah when they came out of the city to meet him. He then entered the city, and slew queen Jezebel, Jehoram's mother, whose love of idolatry had done much to weaken her son's throne ; and lastly, he sent to Samaria, and had every member of Ahab's family put to death ; and he remained undisputed master of the northern kingdom. Jehoram had reigned eleven years.*

JEHOSEPHAT KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 877—853.

We now return to where we left the history of Judah, thirty years earlier. Like his father, Asa, Jehoshaphat on coming to the throne did what was pleasing to Jehovah, that is to the priests of Jehovah, but he did not obey their wishes so far as to forbid all sacrifice out of Jerusalem. The people still sacrificed and burned incense on the High Places in the other cities. He was the first successor of Solomon that made peace with the king of the revolted tribes. But, as we have seen, it was not quite on even terms ; the king of Israel, more or less, owned himself a vassal to his more powerful neighbour ; he perhaps paid tribute to Judah ; he certainly allowed the worship of Jehovah within his dominions, and in some degree re-established the Levites there.

* 2 Kings viii. ix. x.

The city-ditch, or valley, on the east side of Jerusalem has been named the Valley of Jehoshaphat.* This leads to the conjecture that Jehoshaphat strengthened the fortifications at the foot of the Temple, by deepening or widening the ditch through which the brook Kidron flows.

Jehoshaphat's wars and doings in alliance with Israel have been already described. In the south he had at one time so far sway over Edom, where he had placed an officer to govern for him, that he attempted to revive Solomon's trade on the Red Sea. For that purpose, he built ships at Ezion-geber. But his ships were wrecked, and his purpose defeated. Ahaziah, the king of Israel, wished to be allowed to join him in the undertaking; but Jehoshaphat refused, and it was never again attempted. The wreck of Jehoshaphat's ships may have been caused by the Edomites, who in his reign or his son's, revolted from under the hand of Judah, and were never again brought into subjection.†

The modern Chronicler says that Jehoshaphat, in the third year of his reign, employed Levites to teach the Law through all the cities of Judah; and using words which belong to his own century not to this, says that they taught the people out of the Book of the Law of Jehovah.‡ He also appointed some of the Levites and of the priests, jointly with the princes, to sit as judges in Jerusalem and the cities of Judah, to declare the judgments of Jehovah, and to decide in all civil and criminal matters. These Judgments may have been those in Exodus xxi.—xxiii. afterwards added to the volume. Amariah was at this time chief priest, and he was perhaps the first who held the high rank which is claimed in Exodus xxviii. xxix. for the eldest male descendant of Aaron. The Levites at this time were declared to be of a lower rank; they were to stand as officers in the presence of the priests.§

This is the first time in the history that we meet with the priests acting as judges since the days of Samuel. King David had sat as judge; his son Absalom had acted as judge; Solomon was famed for his wisdom as judge; and his royal throne was called the throne of judgment. But now the priests also were judges, with a daily increasing power in civil matters. This was naturally brought about by their education, and also by the superstitious belief that they

* Joel iii. 2. † 1 Kings xxii. 41—50. ‡ 2 Chron. xvii. 7—9.

§ 2 Chron. xix. 5—11.

spoke in the name of Jehovah. They spoke with an authority higher than that of a judge, and could decide disputed cases without the help of witnesses. A devout feeling made the nation reject the notion that anything ever happened by chance, or that the lot fell otherwise than as ordered by God. So, if a dispute arose in which no evidence could be obtained, the two parties came before the priest, who decided the question by throwing lots. This was called bringing a cause before God.* The religious trust which made both parties accept such a decision is shown in the Proverb—

The lot is cast into the lap,
But its whole deciding is from Jehovah.†

Jehoshaphat, as he grew old, four years before his death, made his son Jehoram his partner on the throne. Jehoram had married Athaliah, a daughter of Ahab, king of Israel, a sister of Jehoram, afterwards king of Israel.‡ Jehoshaphat died in the twenty-fifth year of his reign.

For the history of Jehoshaphat king of Judah, as also, we must suppose, for the history of the kings of Israel who reigned at the same time, we are indebted to the Book of Jehu the son of Hanani.§ This Jehu was a prophet of Jehovah, in the service of the king of Judah. He may have been one of the Levites placed in the northern kingdom when they were re-established there by Jehoram, as he had witnessed the posterity of Baasha overthrown there.|| If so, this would explain the peculiarity of this half century, namely, that we have the history of Israel written with far greater detail than the history of Judah, and yet written in a spirit friendly to Judah rather than to Israel.

We have mentioned one of the most interesting of the Psalms, the 68th, as belonging to this time. The careful reader of it will observe that the battle there spoken of was fought on Mount Zalmon, near the city of Samaria, and in winter; and from the taunt against Mount Bashan, he will see that the enemies who were defeated were the Syrians of Damascus; and yet more exactly from the chariots of God fighting against the enemy, that it was the battle which relieved the city of Samaria from its state of siege when the Syrians were said to have been frightened by the noise of

* Exod. xxii. 8, 9. † Prov. xvi. 33. ‡ 2 Kings viii. 16—18.
§ 2 Chron. xx. 34. || 1 Kings xvi. 1.

chariots in heaven ; and from the hope that Ethiopia would stretch out hands to God, that it was written when Jehoshaphat was planning his voyage on the Red Sea. The enemy to be turned back at the depths of the sea may be the Edomites at Ezion-geber, and the Dogs, who are to have a share of the spoil, may be the Calebites of South Judah, whose name may be so translated. The bold figure of speech relating to the chariots in this poem was copied by the historian, and is thus in 2 Kings vii. 6, spoken of as a matter of fact. We add a portion of this beautiful Psalm :

The Lord gave the word,
Great was the company of those that brought the news ;
Kings of armies fled, they fled ;
And she that tarried at home is dividing the spoil.
Though ye [hills] be lying down among the cattle-stalls,
Ye were as the wings of a dove covered with silver,
And her feathers with yellow gold.
When the Almighty scattered kings upon it,
There was snow on Zalmon.

A hill of God is mount Bashan,
A hill with peaks is mount Bashan,
Why look ye enviously, ye hills with peaks,
At the hill which God desireth to dwell on ?
Yea, Jehovah will dwell on it for ever.

The chariots of God were twenty thousand,
Even thousands of thousands ;
The Lord was among them as on Sinai, at Kadesh.

* * * *

The Lord said " I will turn them back at Bashan,
I will turn them back at the depths of the sea,
So that thy foot may be dipped in blood,
And the tongue of thy dogs have its share of thy foes."

They have seen thy processions, O God,
The processions of my God, my King, in the holy place.
The singers went before, the musicians followed ;
Among them were the maidens striking timbrels.

The writer had perhaps read Jacob's blessing on his sons, in Genesis xlix., as he applies to Mount Zalmon in Ephraim the same figure of speech, for a cattle feeding district, that is there used for Mount Gilboa in Issachar, as lying down among the cattle-stalls.

In this Psalm of Jehoshaphat's reign, we meet with Jah as a name of Jehovah. It was new as a name, but it had been used as a syllable in the proper names of men since the time of David, when the worship of Jehovah became more common, as in Ur-iah, *the light of Jehovah* ; and therefore it

cannot be quoted alone as a proof of the age of a piece of writing. But such names are found chiefly in the latter half of our history ; and the word Jah in Moses's triumphal song, in Exodus xv. 1—21, is one among other reasons for thinking that that poem was an addition to the original narrative, and not written before this time. The words given to Moses,

“Jah is my strength and my song,
And he is become my salvation.”

are also to be found in Isaiah xii. 2, written more than a century after the reign of Jehoshaphat, only so far changed that Isaiah there calls the Almighty Jah-Jehovah. In Chapter xxxviii. 11, Isaiah writes the name Jah-Jah. It is only in the most modern of the Psalms that we meet with the words Hallelu-Jah, or *Praise ye Jah*.

To the eighty years between the time of Solomon and Jehoshaphat's death we may give the authorship of many large portions of the Book of Exodus. So large indeed are these additions that we may call this century the date of our present Book of Exodus, written by the help of the earlier narrative which we have spoken of in the time of Samuel, and to be afterwards enlarged by a few yet more modern additions. In Chap. xviii. Moses joins with himself rulers to help him, exactly as king Jehoshaphat appointed some of the rulers to assist the priests in their duty of deciding causes. The Judgments in Exodus xxi.—xxiii. 19, may be those according to which Jehoshaphat's priest Amariah decided the causes brought before him, when “he declared the judgments of Jehovah.” Hitherto the judges had decided causes, and punished crimes according to their own sense of what was right. We have heard of no laws to guide them. The Ten Commandments are rules to guide simply each man's own conscience ; but these judgments are rules to guide the judge. Few and irregular as they are, they are interesting as the nation's first attempt to give to the judges' decisions the regularity which can alone make life and property secure. They are meant to soften the severity of an uncivilized age. If a Hebrew through poverty sells himself into bondage, he is to be released after six years' service. A thief found in the act of stealing, if in the daytime, may not be slain. For the most part justice was to be dealt out on the simple rule of an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth, a barbarous rule,

but one which everybody could understand, and which was therefore the more likely to be accepted in the place of private revenge.

From Chap. xxiii. 20—33, we learn something of the subject Canaanites. There Jehovah promises to drive them out year by year, little by little; and the Israelites are ordered to break down their idolatrous images and at length to destroy them utterly. This is very unlike the treatment which these tribes received from David, who admitted them into his armies, or from Solomon, who made them bond-servants, while he allowed them their own religion. But from these words in Exod. xxiii., joined to what history tells, we trace the growth of the more priestly policy which now prevails. Under this treatment the Canaanites were more and more made to conform to the religious rites and usages of their better educated masters; and though they kept up their own places of sacrifice, idolatry was less practised. In matters of religion, if we may use a modern expression, their priestly rulers refused to them Toleration but offered them Comprehension, which they readily accepted. The two races, the conquering Israelites and the subject Canaanites, were thus becoming very much united into one nation, with no more difference between them than between the rich and the poor, the educated and the ignorant, the masters and the servants.

These chapters cannot have been written much earlier than this reign. They now, many of them, stand very inconveniently between the Ten Commandments in Chap. xx., the summons to Moses to come near and receive the Tables of stone in Chap. xxiv. 12, and the delivering of the Tables to Moses in Chap. xxxi. 18. With these chapters, we may join the joyful Song of Moses in Exodus xv., which is very unlike the earlier narrative, which makes the Israelites avoid the Philistines, and turn back from the Edomites; thus,

The Peoples shall hear and tremble;
Sorrows shall take hold of the inhabitants of Philistia.
Then the princes of Edom shall be amazed,
The mighty men of Moab, trembling shall seize them.

But those chapters which give to Aaron and his sons a high rank above the rest of the Levites, together with the first part of Leviticus and Numbers, may have been written a few years later.

JEHORAM KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 856—849.

AHAZIAH KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 849.

ATHALIAH QUEEN OF JUDAH ; B.C. 849—843.

JEHOASH KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 843—804.

JEHORAM, the son of Jehoshaphat, was not contented with his father's arrangements, and he began his reign by putting to death his six brothers, whom Jehoshaphat had made in some degree independent of him, by giving to each a fortified city in Judea for his residence.* Jehoram reigned for eight years over Judah, four of which were during his father's lifetime. Against him, the Edomites revolted ; and the kings of Judah never again made themselves masters of that warlike, unsettled people. At the same time, Libnah revolted, and the kings of Judah began to lose their hold upon the South Country, around and to the south of Hebron, the land of the Calebites. This was a district which, when Judah was strong, belonged to the kings of Judah, and when Judah was weak, belonged to the Edomites.

We are not told the cause which made the town of Libnah revolt ; perhaps it was in defence of one of the king's brothers, to whom it may have been given by Jehoshaphat ; but from what we shall afterwards meet with, we may suppose that it was part of the general discontent of the country at being governed for the good of the capital, including the discontent of the Levites of the villages at the lordly conduct of the priests of Jerusalem. The disobedience of Libnah did not continue long.

Jehoram gave one of his daughters in marriage to the priest Jehoiada, whose after rise to the rank of chief priest may have been brought about by this union to the royal family. But such was now the importance of the family of the chief priest that the throne may have gained by the marriage as much strength as it gave.†

AHAZIAH, the son of Jehoram and grandson of Jehoshaphat, then reigned for one year. His mother, Athaliah, was the daughter, or rather granddaughter, of Omri, king of Israel ; and under her influence he joined his uncle Jehoram of Israel in his war against Hazael, king of Syria. The increasing power of Syria had healed the old jealousy between Judah and Israel. Ahaziah, like his father, was not so

* 2 Chron. xxi.

† 2 Chron. xxii. 11.

favourable to the priests as his grandfather, Jehoshaphat, had been. But the shortness of his reign made his opinions unimportant. He was killed, as we have seen, by Jehu the grandson of Nimshi, at Jezreel, at the same time that Jehoram, king of Israel, was killed by that rebel.*

When the news of King Ahaziah's death reached Jerusalem, his mother Athaliah seized the throne for herself. Neither Israel nor Judah had ever been governed by a woman since the establishment of the monarchy. But it does not appear that she was striving for any male in the family. She ordered all the royal family to be put to death, and she thought that her orders had been obeyed; but, as it was afterwards asserted, Jehosheba, the sister of Ahaziah, and wife of one of the chief priests, succeeded in saving and hiding a child of one year old, one of Ahaziah's sons.

The usurping queen, ATHALIAH, was a native of Israel, and no friend to either priests or Levites. Mattan, the chief priest of Jerusalem during her reign, was after his death reproachfully called a priest of Baal, which may mean that he belonged to the northern kingdom, and was not a Levite. Under these circumstances the discontent throughout Judah must have been universal. While the whole weight of the Levites was against her, the more distant parts of the kingdom can have yielded no obedience to her orders. She was supported by a party that was opposed to the priests; and under such circumstances taxes would be badly paid, money would begin to fail in the treasury, and the power of the crown to grow weaker daily, until some one should arise bold enough to attempt its overthrow. During these years the holy vessels of the house of Jehovah seem to have been made use of by the queen, either for the support of her power, or of worship displeasing to the Levites.†

Queen Athaliah reigned in Jerusalem for six years, towards the end of which time a conspiracy was formed among the priests to dethrone her. Jehoiada the priest, the brother by marriage to the late king, gained the confidence of the royal body-guard, and after swearing them to secrecy in the temple, brought out to them a boy of seven years old, who, he said, truly or falsely, was the son of their late king Ahaziah, and had been hidden by his aunt, Jehosheba, Jehoiada's wife, in one of the chambers adjoining the House of Jehovah. He

* 2 Kings viii. 20;—ix. 29.

† 2 Chron. xxiv. 7.

arranged with them that, at the hour when the guard at the Temple was to be changed, the soldiers who were to quit should remain with those that then arrived, and that this double body of troops should proclaim the boy, whose name was Jehoash, as king.

They did so at the time appointed; and Queen Athaliah, who was brought into the Temple by the noise of the trumpets and the shouts, was led out between a file of soldiers, and slain as soon as she was beyond the walls of the temple-yard. The young Jehoash was made to stand upon a pillar in the court of the Temple, in sight of the people, the crown was placed upon his head, and the Testimonials, or two stone Tables of the Law, were held up above him, while the priests anointed him as king. The conspiracy was wholly successful; Jehoash was made king; and as he was only seven years old, the sovereign power rested entirely in the hands of the high priest, Jehoiada. Mattan, the rival priest, was the only other person besides the queen who seems to have been put to death; and by way of justifying his death, he is described as a priest in the temple of Baal.*

This coronation of the young JEHOASH is the only occasion in which the Tables of the Law are mentioned in the history since the Ark which contained them was first placed in the Holy of Holies by king Solomon.

King Jehoash did what was right in the sight of Jehovah all the days that he obeyed the instructions of his uncle Jehoiada the priest. Being a child, and placed upon the throne by him, he was, of course, entirely governed by him. Under the priest's orders, he levied a forced tax upon the people, in addition to the usual free-will offering, for the repair of the temple. This was called a tax upon souls, or a poll-tax, and was probably at the rate of half a shekel a man, as ordered in Exodus xxx. 13. As it is not before mentioned in the history, we may suppose that it was a new tax. Jehoiada placed a chest by the side of the altar, and into that was put the money as it was brought into the House of Jehovah.

The Book of Kings tells us that notwithstanding this supply of money, the repair of the Temple was not completed till after the twenty-third year of the king's reign.

The priests had held it back for themselves, and even when the repairs were finished, they did not then supply the temple with the required gold and silver vessels. The Book of Chronicles, on the other hand, says that the surplus was used for the holy dishes, ladles, and vessels of gold and silver, such as are described in Numbers vii. From these contradictory accounts we learn that at least it ought to have been so employed. The money of the guilt-offerings, and of the sin-offerings, which are now mentioned for the first time, was not brought into the temple, it was the property of the priests.

It is at this time, when the king was a child, and the power of the government, with the command of the troops, was in the hands of the priest, Jehoiada, that we must suppose that the tithe of the land's produce first fell into the hands of the priesthood. During the seven years of Athaliah's usurpation, there may have been no power strong enough to collect this royal tax; and now the king's power had passed into the hands of the chief priest. This will appear yet more probable when we show reasons for thinking that Leviticus i.—xi., and a large part of the book of Numbers, including the laws relating to tithes, were written at this time. But, great as was the power of the priests of Jerusalem, they had not yet attempted the policy of forbidding all sacrifices on the High Places in favour of their own altar. That was not attempted until about a century later.

In the twenty-third year of this reign the king of Israel in his distress besought the face of Jehovah, that is, he sent to Jerusalem to beg for help against the invading army of Syria. He no doubt sent money to purchase that help. Jehoash sent a force to his relief.* That levy of troops may have had a double effect; it relieved Israel for a time from the oppression of Syria, and it relieved Jehoash from the oppression of his own priests.

Jehoiada died at a great age, and his importance was shown by his being buried among the kings of Judah. His son, Zechariah, succeeded him in the priesthood, and perhaps hoped to have the same power in the state. But the king was now no longer a child, and he wished to be independent, and to govern according to his own judgment, or perhaps to be guided by the advice of his princes rather

* 2 Kings xiii. 4, 5.

than by the priests. His servants would not listen to the remonstrances of the high priest, Zechariah, the son of Jehoiada. They conspired against him, and slew him in the court of the Temple, by the command of the king, who had forgotten the service done to him by the father. Zechariah probably left no son, and the priesthood may then have gone to a cousin, as he and his father are not mentioned in the line of priests in 1 Chron. vi., where they otherwise would have been, between Amariah and Hilkiah.

Jehoash was now independent of the priesthood, but he did not prosper after the death of his wise adviser. Hazael, king of Syria, after overrunning the kingdom of Israel, and taking the town of Gath, in the land of Dan, was marching upon Jerusalem. Jehoahaz, who was then king of Israel, could offer no resistance, and the kingdom of Judah seemed in danger. Jehoash, in his alarm, sent to offer a tribute to Hazael to pay him if he would return home, or confine his ravages to the kingdom of Israel. The terms were accepted, and Jehoash sent to him all the gold and other treasures that his fathers had laid up in the palace and in the Temple. Satisfied with this booty, Hazael withdrew and left Jerusalem unattacked.

After a long reign of thirty-seven or forty years, Jehoash was slain in Beth-millo, the castle near the north end of the temple of Jerusalem, by conspirators of the priestly party in revenge for the blood of Jehoiada. He was succeeded by his son Amaziah, who may perhaps have been already for three years his father's partner on the throne.*

It would seem that this reign, when King Jehoash was a child, and the kingdom was governed in his name by a clever, bold priest, was the time in which the priesthood rose in Jerusalem to its greatest dignity. It then surrounded itself with all those circumstances of wealth and ceremony which we see described in the Mosaic Law, but which are wholly unknown in our history until the time of Solomon, and, indeed, only given to Solomon's reign by the partiality of the modern writer of the Book of Chronicles. To this reign we must give the authorship of a further large number of passages in the Books of the Law; beginning at Exodus xxv. The heave-offerings which the people are ordered to bring to Jehovah were the free-will gifts by which the Temple in

* 2 Kings xii. ; 2 Chron. xxiv.

Jerusalem was supported ; and they far surpass in costliness any that can have been thought of before the time of Solomon. The shape of the Tabernacle is copied from Solomon's temple, lessening its measurement by one-half. The description of the cherubs over the ark is of course borrowed from those made for Solomon.

Exodus xxx. 11—16, enacts that the heave offering to the temple shall be levied upon the people as a poll-tax of half a shekel on every male of twenty years old and upward. Before the time of the high priest Jehoiada, the heave offering had been a freewill gift, as described in Exodus xxv. and xxxv. But, as the voluntary offerings were not sufficient for the needs of the temple, recourse was now had to a forced tax. This was called the Atonement money, in return for which the chief priest made atonement for the nation's sins. Every man was to purchase this benefit at the price of half a shekel a year. Now, for the first time, the national standard weight is called the Holy Shekel, as the priests were the persons interested in receiving full payment. In the reign of David it had been called the King's Weight.*

Exodus xxvii. 20—xxix., with the costly garments for the chief priest, the ceremony of his consecration, the title of Sons of Aaron taken by the priests, and the higher rank given to the Sons of Aaron over the rest of the Levites, must be claimed for the time of the high priest Jehoiada.

Chapter xxxv. 4—xl., in which the Tabernacle is made, may be of the same date. Before this time we have only read of Aaron as the servant of Moses, and even as falling into idolatry and making a golden calf ; but henceforth he is the head of the priesthood, and Moses is for the time forgotten.

The chief priest in Jerusalem, and his sons, styling themselves Sons of Aaron, declared that members of their family were the only priests, and that the rest of the Levites were the servants of the Sons of Aaron. The Sons of Aaron reserved to themselves the privilege of making atonement by burnt offerings for the sins of the worshippers, an office which gave them ample sway over the minds of the people. But the chief priest alone had power to enter the Holy of Holies, and burn incense there before the Ark, and to

* 2 Sam. xiv. 26.

come forth and tell the king, or the assembled congregation, that he had received a command from Jehovah, which he then delivered to them.

Among the longest of the passages inserted into the history of the march out of Egypt, are Leviticus i.—xi. and xxi., xxii. These chapters offer to us a more systematic body of ceremonial laws than the other parts of the Pentateuch. They describe the Burnt Offering, the Meal Offering, the Peace Offering, or love feast, the Sin Offering, the Guilt Offering, and the Consecration Offering. Thus the first attempt at giving to any laws the regularity of a code is in the case of those which regulate the gifts to the altar and the priests. They are less connected with the history, and not written as the occasion required ; and therefore they have fewer marks by which their date can be learnt. But they belong to the century now beginning, when the priesthood was at the height of its power. These cannot have been written before the days of Jehoiada, who introduced the poll-tax for the support of the temple. They may be distinguished from the other parts of the book by having the commands for the most part addressed to Aaron and his sons, who hold the rank of priests, while the other Levites are their servants. They are also marked by the new name for the free-will offering, which used to be called a heave offering. But now that the heave offering is made a forced poll-tax, the old command to the people to bring up their pious offerings is no longer of force. Hence a new command is put forth ; and, in addition to the heave offering, now a forced tax, they are exhorted to bring to the priests their free-will offering as a Corban, or *gift*. These gifts must therefore be rather more modern than Exodus xxxv. 4—xl., where the free-will offerings are called heave offerings. Again, these chapters show themselves as older than Numbers xxvi., as they describe Nadab and Abihu's presumption and death ; and older than the prophet Amos, as they forbid leaven to be burnt with an offering to Jehovah ; and older than Deuteronomy xii., where the various offerings are spoken of as having been already ordered ; and older than the Book of Joshua, as there Eleazar is Moses's eldest son then living. In chapter xi. the distinction is introduced between clean and unclean animals, both for food and for sacrifices, a distinction not attended to in the northern

kingdom, where herds of swine were freely reared,* and where, at least in a time of scarcity, asses' flesh was eaten by the poor.†

The tithes are not mentioned among the gifts and offerings in these, the early chapters of Leviticus. As yet they may have been considered as belonging to the king; and though at this time, in the weakness of the monarchy, if collected at all, they must have been collected by the priests, yet they may have been considered as a royal tax, as they were under Solomon.

We have before given the probable date of the original history of the March out of Egypt, under the leadership of Moses, and also of several additions which were made to that narrative. But now the narrative takes a new and more important form. By the addition of Jehovah's speeches addressed to Moses during the march, it becomes no longer the history of a journey, but a body of Jewish law. This important change, this creation, we may say, of the three middle books of the Pentateuch, seems to belong to the time of the high priest Jehoiada. They naturally, at some later time, received the Book of Genesis, with the history of the arrival in Egypt, as a suitable introduction, and from time to time during the two following centuries, a number of further speeches by Jehovah were added as the laws were called for. Then, when it was thought unbecoming to use the name of Jehovah so freely, we shall find the laws put into the mouth of Moses. These form the Fifth Book of the Pentateuch. At a yet later time was written the latter half of the Third Book. Thus though one part of this immortal work was written during the two centuries before this time, and other parts were added during the four centuries which follow, yet it may be said to have received its present religious character from the writer who, in the time of Jehoiada, first added to the history of the march out of Egypt, the national laws in the form of speeches spoken by Jehovah.

We have no reason to suppose that when the ceremonial laws were written, they were published to the people. When giving orders to the people, the priests would not wish to appeal to any book as an authority. They were themselves the only authority in matters of religion. They came forth out of the temple saying that they had learnt

* Matth. xviii. 30.

† 2 Kings. vi. 25.

the will of Jehovah from the space over the Cover of the Ark. A written law places a limit upon despotism ; and a sacred book, when published, is a rival to the priesthood. The priests wrote these laws for their own guidance only.

To this century and a half, we must also give the authorship of a large part of the Book of Numbers, namely chapters i.—xxi., though we find scattered up and down these chapters a few passages belonging to the older narrative, and a few additions of a more modern date. Here the Israelites are described, even on their flight out of Egypt, as a powerful and numerous body, possessed of ample wealth, and governed by an established order of priests. Thus in chapters i.—vi. the males of twenty years old and upwards are said to be six hundred thousand, a number which quite contradicts the older narrative, that they are unable to force a way through the scattered tribe of Edomites. This number is about one half of that reported to David when he counted the people ; and it may have been taken from that, in the same way that the measurements of the tabernacle are half those of Solomon's Temple. Again, the description of manna in chap. xi. 4—15, as being ground in mills, or bruised in a mortar, before being cooked, contradicts Exodus xvi., where it is said to be so soft that it melts when the sun is hot. The author may have read Genesis vi. 1—8, as in chap. xiii. 33, he says that the sons of Anak were descended from the race of Giants, the offspring of the mixed marriages between the Sons of God and the Daughters of Men. He had also read Exodus xxxiv. 7, as in chap. xiv. he quotes a speech in which Jehovah is described as when forgiving iniquity not wholly acquitting, but visiting it on the children to the fourth generation. In chapters xvi. xvii. the sacred rank of the Levites is asserted and is proved by miracles from heaven, when Dathan and Abiram, and their families, are swallowed up alive into the ground for having disputed it ; and Aaron's staff—the staff of the house of Levi—bears blossoms. In chapter xviii. the tithe is mentioned for the first time as a priestly tax. In that chapter, written later than Leviticus i.—xi., the tithe of the land's produce is mentioned as belonging to the Levites, and the Levites are ordered to give tithe of the tithe to the priests. The tithes had been a royal tax, as we

learned from 1 Sam. viii. 15—17, and they would seem to have passed for a time into the hands of the priests upon the decay of the king's power, when the Levites were the only body able to collect such a tax. That portion of the Book of Numbers of which we are now speaking, ends perhaps with chapter xxi.

These portions of Leviticus and Numbers introduce us to an organized moral code of sins and forms of guilt which are to be atoned for by offerings brought to the priest. Here we find ordered the manner and the occasion for bringing the Meal-offering, the Peace-offering, which is to be eaten as a love-feast, the Consecration-offering, when a priest is consecrated, the Sin-offering, and the Trespass or Guilt-offering, for sins of various kinds, and the Burnt-offering, to be wholly burnt. The several feasts, that of the Passover or Unleavened Bread, the Pentecost at harvest, and the Blowing of Trumpets and Feast of Tabernacles in the autumn, together with the Fast-day between the last two, are ordered to be kept with due regularity. The law of vows explains how and when these must be kept, and when they need not be kept, and it regulates the Vow of the Nazarite.

The ceremonial laws, while attempting to regulate the religious practices then thought useful, show a strong priestly wish to bring the people into a state of ignorant obedience to their religious leaders. These books contain no advice that men should offer either prayer or praise to their Maker in any form but that of a holy gift to the priests. Even the moral laws are often directed to the same selfish end; and there were few crimes from which a man might not fancy himself relieved by an offering to the priest and the altar. Every sin committed by a bad man, every blessing from God on a good man, was to bring some profit to the priests. Every ceremonial law, by the possible breach of it, introduced a new sin, with further profit to the priests; for as the Apostle Paul remarks, without the law there would not have been the sin. Even a yet more refined and entangling sin was invented, as it would seem, on purpose to be atoned for by an offering brought to the priests. This was the Error or Sin of Ignorance of Leviticus iv., v., and Numb. xv. 22—31, which a person might fall into either by doing something unawares, or by doing it in ignorance of its being wrong. When after the deed he became aware of the sin,

he then had to cleanse himself from it by his sin-offering : as if a man could defile his conscience, as he may at any moment defile his skin, without knowing it, and then be able to purify his conscience as he purifies his skin, by washing. If he had sinned in ignorance, in the matter of holy things, then a sin-offering will not be enough, but he shall cleanse himself with a guilt-offering. This creation of an artificial sin often brought real sin with it. Instead of its introducing a stricter moral law, it tended to break down the distinction between right and wrong, between innocence and sin. A man who had really done wrong was led to excuse himself by pleading that it was a sin of ignorance. Thus at a yet later time it became necessary to make a new prohibition not to commit the real sin of making false excuses ; “ Say not before the preacher that it was a sin of ignorance,” says Ecclesiastes v. 6.

The right understanding of the religion of Israel, and of the progress of that religion, very much depends upon our giving a correct date to the ceremonial laws which we have been describing. We give this date to them because, first, they seem to have been unknown to Samuel, David, and Solomon ; and secondly, because, from numerous hints in Deuteronomy, and the prophets who slight these laws, and in Ezekiel, where they are highly valued, we judge that they were written before the reign of Hezekiah.

JEHU KING OF ISRAEL ; B.C. 849—822.

JEHOAHAZ KING OF ISRAEL ; B.C. 821—805.

JEHOASH KING OF ISRAEL ; B.C. 807—792.

JEROBOAM II. KING OF ISRAEL ; B.C. 804—764.

ZACHARIAH KING OF ISRAEL ; B.C. 764.

We now return to the kingdom of Israel. Of the reigns of Jehu the grandson of Nimshi, and of his descendants to the fourth degree who ruled over Israel for eighty years, the historians have given us very few particulars. Jehu had been the captain of such forces as had remained to the king of Israel on the east side of the Jordan. He was a wicked bold man, and had been unable to resist the temptation, when he saw the path to a throne open to him. The idolatries of Queen Jezebel, the wife of Ahab, and queen-mother to the next two kings, had made rebellion easy. The city of Jezreel, where king Jehoram was then living, was within

the tribe of Issachar, among a people not wholly friendly to Ephraim; and there Jehu might hope to find supporters. He accordingly declared himself the friend of Jehovah's people. After killing King Jehoram, and Queen Jezebel his mother, at the town of Jezreel, where they then were, and slaying all the king's family in the town of Samaria, he slaughtered the priests of Baal, having called them together into the house of Baal, which Ahab had lately built for them. This was probably on the hill near the town of Shechem, which town the historian may mean by "the city of the house of Baal." He then destroyed the idols and the building, and it was never again restored. Jehu, we are told, continued in the sins of Jeroboam, as to the golden calves at Beth-el and Dan. But these calves had probably long since been destroyed. If not, Jehu would have destroyed them with the other idols. That reproach only means that when he destroyed the idols of Baal, he did not give to the Levites the power which they wished for. His kingdom was in the greatest distress. Hazael, king of Syria, overran it in his attack upon Jerusalem, and laid it waste down to Gath, in the southern land of Dan, and moreover soon held the whole of the country to the east of the Jordan, down to the river Arnon, the boundary of Moab.*

It was near the end of Jehu's reign that Dido, the great niece of Queen Jezebel, whom Jehu had slain, fled from Tyre, and put herself at the head of a body of Tyrian colonists who founded Carthage, on the Lybian coast,† in the country called Phut by Jeremiah and Ezekiel. This event connects the history of Israel, in a very interesting manner, with the early history of Greece and Rome.

Jehu, with all his crimes, had shown ample zeal for the name of Jehovah, and he gave to his son and successor a Jehovistic name; hence to this time we may give the few words in Genesis xii. 7, which say that Abram set up an altar to Jehovah near the town of Shechem. These words may have been introduced into the Life of Abraham to give sanctity to an altar which had been built on a hill near that town; and perhaps the building of the altar and the above words may both belong to this time. Neither can the altar

* 2 Kings x. xii.

† Josephus, Apion, I. 18.

itself have been built, nor these words about it have been written, under a king of Judah, because the priests at Jerusalem allowed no altar to Jehovah but their own. Nor can they have belonged to a much earlier time, because Jehovistic names have been only lately met with on the throne of Israel. Again, as to which of the two hills this altar was built on, it is not likely that such an altar to Jehovah should be built on a hill already dedicated to Baal ; therefore, of the two hills between which the town of Shechem stood, we must suppose that the altar to Jehovah was on Mount Gerizim. The altar to El, spoken of in the life of Jacob, was probably the same as that to Baal, since in the northern kingdom God was worshipped under both those names. It must have existed from the time of Abimelech ; and when it went to decay, gave to the hill on which it stood the name of Ebal, *the Baal-ruins*. We shall have occasion more than once to speak of these two hills and their altars.

The above remarks will fix the date of a part of Judges vi. There Gideon, who may be known to have worshipped God under the name of Baal, because he was named Jerubbaal, is described as destroying the altar of Baal, and as building one to Jehovah, at Ophrah. This can hardly have been written before Jehu destroyed the altar to Baal, at Shechem.

We may here also mention two other Jehovistic additions of very uncertain date, made to the life of Noah. The Elohist writer had said that God commanded Noah to take with him into the Ark two of every living creature, in order to keep the race alive. But the later writer, in vii. 1—5, adds that Jehovah ordered him to take in with him seven of every clean animal ; and in viii. 20—22, he says that Noah sacrificed some of these clean animals on the altar to Jehovah, an act which would have destroyed the race, if he had not saved more than a pair of each. The distinction between clean and unclean animals, which is here introduced, proves the modern date of the passage, and agrees with its Jehovistic character.

In the reign of JEHOAHAZ, Jehu's son, Israel again suffered from the Syrian inroads, under Hazael, [and then under Ben-hadad the Third, the son of Hazael. Jehoahaz in his distress called upon Jehovah ; that is, he applied to Jehoash king of Judah for help. He gave to his son the name of Je-

hoash, in compliment to the king of Judah, and no doubt paid a tribute to Judah; and with Judah's help, before the end of his reign he defeated the Syrians and gained a little relief.*

JEHOASH, Jehu's grandson, the next king of Israel, was even able to recover some little of the territory from Ben-hadad the Third, the son of Hazael, the new king of Syria. He defeated him three times in battle, recovering the cities which his father had lost.† Such indeed was the recovery of Israel, from the low state to which the rebel Jehu had brought it, that Jehoash then renewed the war with Judah after a peace of half a century, and he marched against Jerusalem, and defeated Amaziah in battle and took him prisoner. He entered and plundered the city and the temple, and took hostages for peace on releasing the captured king, and he returned home, after breaking down the wall for the length of four hundred cubits, between the gate of Ephraim at the northern side of the city and the Corner Gate which was near to the Temple.‡ Jehoash was succeeded by his son Jeroboam.

JEROBOAM II., the next king of Israel, was yet more successful than his father. He wisely made peace with Judah; and when the two halves of the nation were not at war with one another, they were usually both prosperous. This peace gave Jeroboam leisure to free his kingdom from the Syrians; and he regained the whole of his northern territory to the south of Hamath and Damascus, and was king over all the land of Israel on both sides of the Jordan. That portion of the land of Hamath which Jeroboam recovered was called Hamath of Judah. This may perhaps be explained by the migration of a body from Judah to settle in that spot, perhaps the migration mentioned in Judges iii. 9. The southern historian says that Jeroboam continued in all the sins of the former Jeroboam the son of Nebat; but he lets us understand that the northern kingdom was never so prosperous as during this long reign of forty-one years.§ Jeroboam had lived at peace with Judah without being tributary to it.

The Chronicles tell us of a register of all the families on the east of the Jordan, made in this reign; when the males of a military age, belonging to the three eastern tribes, were found to be forty-four thousand seven hundred and sixty.||

* 2 Kings xiii. 5. † 2 Kings xiii. 25. ‡ 2 Kings xiv. 8—14.
§ 2 Kings xiv. 23—29. || 1 Chron. v. 17, 18.

If we multiply this by five and a-half, to obtain the number of souls of both sexes, and again by five, as those tribes may be supposed to be about one-fifth of the whole, we should obtain about a million and a quarter for the population of the two kingdoms. This is quite as large a population as the country is likely to have held.

ZACHARIAH, the son of Jeroboam, was murdered by Shalum after a reign of six months.* With him the family of Jehu came to an end. Such are the annals of the kings of Israel during a space of eighty-five years. That these kings had for the most part given their support to the worship of Jehovah, may be supposed from their bearing names containing the syllable Jah.

In the reign of Jeroboam II. the prophet Jonah, the son of Amittai, lived. He was a worshipper of Jehovah, and a native of the town of Gath-hepher in the land of Zebulun.† It is as well to remark here that our present Book of Jonah was not written till perhaps four centuries later.

During the forty years before Jehu's family gained the throne of Israel, the history of the two kingdoms seems to have been found for the most part in the northern writers; but during the eighty-five years that Jehu's family held possession, the northern annals have been very scanty. But in place of any information about the kingdom, we find scattered among the few facts mentioned an account of the lives of two prophets, Elijah and his successor Elisha, full of improbable events, and probably of a very modern age.

AMAZIAH KING OF JUDAH; 806—778.

JEHOASH the late king of Judah had been put to death by conspirators of the priestly party; and his son Amaziah began his reign by putting to death his father's murderers; and the historian mentions as a proof of the humanity of the age that the children of the murderers were spared. He attacked the Edomites and took the city of Petra, a place so strong by nature that on being taken it got the name of Joktheel, or *captured by God*. Before this attack upon Edom he had hired a large army from the northern tribes to help him. But, upon the advice of one of his prophets, he sent them back, and went to the attack and plunder of Edom without them. The Israelite soldiers in disappointment overran and plundered the cities of Judah on their way

* 2 Kings xv. 8—10.

† 2 Kings xiv. 25.

home. This led to a quarrel with Jehoash, and then began again the war with Israel, which had ceased for the last half century. During this time Israel had probably bought the truce by a tribute. But Jehoash had defeated the Syrians and regained strength, and now thought it his turn to gain the mastery over Judah. Amaziah met him in battle at Beth-shemesh, situated between Judah and Dan, but was wholly defeated and taken prisoner. The conqueror, with more humanity than usual, did not put him to death, but contented himself with breaking down four hundred cubits of the wall of Jerusalem, between the Gate of Ephraim and the Corner Gate, with carrying off the treasures of the palace and the Temple, and with taking hostages from Amaziah for his future submission, making Judah for the moment tributary to Israel.

Such was at this time the rank of the chief priest that there was no family more suitable than his from which the heir to the throne could take a wife; and Amaziah married his son Uzziah to the daughter of the chief priest Zadok.* But even this did not allow Amaziah to act independently of the priesthood. He gave them some offence; and on a conspiracy being formed against him in Jerusalem, he fled to Lachish, where he was overtaken and put to death, because he turned aside from following Jehovah; that is because he was not obedient to the priests.† Thus, if we may trust the Chronicles, not only Queen Athaliah but Jehoash and Amaziah, three sovereigns in succession, were put to death for opposing the will of the priests.

AZARIAH OR UZZIAH KING OF JUDAH; B.C. 801 OR 778—750.

The contradictory dates given in the Book of Kings for these reigns make it necessary to suppose that Uzziah, before he was made king, had in name reigned twenty-three years jointly with his father; and this is made probable by finding fifty-two years given to his reign. He was at first guided by the advice of the prophet Zechariah, and during that time he prospered in his undertakings. He was at peace with Jeroboam king of Israel, and thus at leisure to check disobedience at home, and inroads from neighbours on the south, while Jeroboam stood between him and all other unfriendly neighbours. He defeated the Philistines and

* 2 Kings xv. 33.

† 2 Kings xiv.; 2 Chron. xxv.

destroyed the fortifications of Gath, and Jabneh, and Ashdod. He routed the Arabs and Maonites in the south. He strengthened the walls of Jerusalem by towers at the Valley Gate, at the Corner Gate, and at the Turning of the Wall. These last two were probably at the two ends of the east side of the Temple. In these towers he placed engines of war to throw stones and arrows, engines before unknown in Jerusalem.

Uzziah paid great attention to the cultivation of the crown lands and to his herds of cattle, which were an important source of revenue. He had ploughmen and vine-dressers in the mountains and in Carmel; and in the desert he dug wells for his cattle, and built towers for the herdsmen who had the charge of them. He had also other herds of cattle in the Low country and on the Table land. Perhaps the account of the crown lands, of the store-houses for their produce, and of herds of cattle, in 1 Chron. xxvii., which the writer gives to David's troubled reign, belongs to this quiet time. So large a part of the country was unclosed that a great source of wealth was always open to any king who, like Uzziah, should turn his attention to husbandry. The other landowners were, no doubt, doing the same. The wealth of the country was greater than at any former time. The arts of production must have been much improved since Solomon's peaceable and prosperous reign; and now that they were not checked by foolish wars they bore full fruit.

But Uzziah, strong as he was, was not strong enough to quarrel with the priesthood. He rashly chose to act as priest himself, as David and Solomon had done; and he presumed to burn incense within the House of Jehovah. Thereupon the chief priest Azariah collected a body of eighty priests, and went in after him, and had him seized and put in confinement as a leper for the rest of his life. The king was, perhaps, in part bald, he may have lost some of the hair off his forehead, enough to give a cloak to the priest's assertion. The priest, as we see in Leviticus xiii., a chapter written about this time, had the sole power of declaring who was a leper; and in the exercise of this arbitrary power Azariah dethroned the king and put him in a leper-house. His son Jotham was then allowed to dwell in the palace and to sit as judge till his father's death, when he succeeded him.

But the priests were again lords over the throne of Jerusalem. For the history of Uzziah's reign the Chronicler quotes the writings of the prophet Isaiah.* This portion of the prophet's writings is now lost.

To the reign of Uzziah we may give Leviticus xii.—xv. These chapters contain the law of leprosy, and authorize the priests to put a leper into solitary confinement. This may have been written to justify the deposition of the king by the chief priest. These chapters show how low was the state of physical science in the nation. They altogether overlook the art of healing, which the priests treated as irreligious, and as an attempt to oppose the will of Jehovah.†

The law in chapter xiv. about the damp on the plastered walls of a house built of rough stones, there called the leprosy in a house, reminds us that such houses were not in very general use, though now becoming less uncommon. In the cities the wealthy had houses, but many of the people dwelt wholly in tents made of skins, or in booths made of branches of trees; and when we read of the Israelites refusing to fight and fleeing to their tents, it means that they left the camp and withdrew each man to his own place of abode.

SHALLUM KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 763.

On the murder of Zachariah, the son of Jeroboam II., Shallum seized the throne of Israel for himself. He reigned, however, only one month, when he was slain in the city of Samaria by Menahem, who had raised a body of followers at Tirzah, the former capital. Menahem made himself king of the unhappy distracted kingdom of Israel. Usurper succeeded usurper, each preparing the kingdom for its final overthrow.‡

MENAHEM KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 763—753.

The death of three kings within seven months, of whom the last two were murdered, brought the kingdom of Israel to the very brink of ruin. Menahem, who slew Shallum, the last of the three, did not gain a quiet throne. In Tirzah he was king, but before he was obeyed he had to treat the neighbourhood with all the inhumanity with which he would have treated a foreign country. In his reign came a new

* 2 Kings xv. 1—7; 2 Chron. xxvi. † 2 Chron. xvi. 12.

‡ 2 Kings xv. 10—15.

trouble over the land, from a nation that we have not before heard of.

The Assyrians, whose capital city Nineveh lay on the east bank of the Tigris, in the fork between that river and the Great Zab, had latterly become a powerful monarchy. Their kings held sway over all the country watered by the Tigris and Euphrates, to the south of their capital. Their massive palaces prove their wealth ; while the sculpture and the writing on the walls show the civilization of the people. The Assyrian language was allied to that of Israel. Assyria as a kingdom was second only to Egypt. Pul, the king, had lately conquered Syria of the Rivers, or at least a large part of it. He had then overrun Cœle-Syria, and was now entering on the land of Israel. But he retired on Menahem offering to give him in silver the booty that he hoped to gain by fighting. Menahem gave him a large sum, said to be one thousand kikars' weight, which would amount to the improbable value of half a million sterling. In order to raise this sum he made every man of wealth pay him fifty shekels, or five pounds sterling. This is a credible sum, but it quite contradicts the former. The king of Assyria returned home with his booty, and with a knowledge that at a future time more might be obtained in the same manner.

Pul also was probably the Assyrian king who about this time conquered Chaldea.* If, according to the Assyrian custom, he removed the unhappy people from that fertile country, in the neighbourhood of Armenia, and placed them at the southern end of his kingdom, at the head of the Persian Gulf, to cultivate that barren district bordering on the Arabian desert, it will explain how Chaldees are afterwards to be met with so far to the south of Chaldæa.†

Menahem helped to ruin the kingdom of Israel by the way that he gained his throne, and by the way that he kept it, but he reigned for ten years, and was succeeded by his son Pekahiah.‡

We now enter upon the earliest of those valuable writings, the Books of the Hebrew Prophets. Isaiah was born in the reign of Uzziah, but his writings belong to a later time. We have, however, a fragment of another prophet, which seems to belong to this time. It has been joined by

* Isaiah xxiii. 13.

† Strabo xii. iii. 28, and 2 Kings. xxv.

‡ 2 Kings xv. 16—22.

an injudicious editor to the writings of Zechariah, the son of Berechiah, who lived three hundred years later, in the reign of Darius. It is called chapter xi. of that author. In the Gospel of Matthew it is quoted as the work of Jeremiah, to whom we can by no means give it.* It may be claimed for this time by its mention of the breaking off of the treaty between Israel and Judah, which took place in the reign of Amaziah, Uzziah's father, and it may possibly be the work of Uzziah's wise adviser Zechariah, who had understanding in the visions of God.

The three shepherds, or kings, cut off in one month, are Jeroboam II., Zachariah, and Shallum. The wicked shepherd who succeeds them is Menahem; and the young lions who overrun both Mount Lebanon and Mount Bashan, are the Assyrians, who in his reign conquered Syria, and Israel on both sides of the Jordan. The pride or headsprings of the Jordan are laid waste. The prophet speaks as if he had at one time lived in the service of the king of Israel, perhaps Jehoash, and on the war breaking out between Israel and Judah, had claimed his hire, and withdrawn into the latter country in the reign of Amaziah. This fragment, bearing the name of Zechariah, does not rise to the high flight of poetry that is reached by some of his immediate successors; but it is interesting as being the oldest that we now possess and can give a date to.

PEKAHIAH KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 752—751.

PEKAH KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 750—731.

Pekahiah, the son of Menahem, reigned over Israel for two years, when he was dethroned by Pekah, one of his captains, who slew him in the city of Samaria, and then reigned in his stead. Pekah's force, by which he gained the throne, was a body of fifty men of Gilead; hence it would seem that, like the former usurper Jehu, he had been in command of the troops on the east side of the Jordan.

The kingdom of Israel, on the accession of the usurper Pekah, was reduced to a very low ebb, not so much by loss of territory as by its internal weakness and disordered state. We learn from the prophet Amos,† however, that it held sway over Beth-el, and perhaps Gilgal in Benjamin, two

* Matth. xxvii. 9.

† Amos iv. 4.

towns which were on the route from Samaria to the southern ford of the Jordan, and were thus important to the northern king, as long as he had any subjects on the east side of the river. He still held part of Gilead. Beth-el, moreover, was the religious capital for those who worshipped Jehovah in the northern kingdom.

Pekah, in the tenth year of his reign, most unwisely formed an alliance with Rezin, king of Syria, for the invasion of Judah. The kingdom of Israel had been at peace with Judah for fifty years, at first while rising in prosperity under Jeroboam II., and then while going to ruin under Menahem. The two kingdoms had once before been at peace for sixty years. And peace with Judah was now more necessary than ever to Israel, in consequence of the growing power of its northern neighbours. But Pekah madly proposed to Rezin, king of Syria, to join him in a wanton and unnecessary war, to attempt the overthrow of Ahaz king of Judah, and to place a creature of their own on the throne at Jerusalem.* The Syrians, however, did as much harm to Israel their friends, as to Judah their enemies. They marched on the east side of the Jordan ; and while they drove Judah out of Elath on the Red Sea, they trod down poor Gilead as a threshing-floor.

This invasion of Judah by the Syrians was soon stopped by the Assyrians, who, as might have been expected, came down upon Syria and Israel for plunder. This was under Pul's successor, Tiglath-pileser, who was called in by Judah. The Assyrians, after taking Damascus, which was a convenient resting-place for their soldiers, conquered all Naph-tali and Galilee, that is to say, all the land to the north of Manasseh. Tiglath-pileser carried off the people, or such of them as he thought would be useful to him, and placed them as colonists and slaves in some districts of Assyria where skilled labourers were wanted. He also overran the land of Gilead ; and many of the Israelites on the east side of the Jordan, who were yet more open to the attack, were carried off at the same time.† This is the first of the two captivities that came upon the northern kingdom of Israel. The prophet Amos describes the tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh, with those in Gilead who were left behind, as the two legs

* Isaiah vii. 6.

† 1 Chron. v. 26.

of a sheep and the piece of an ear, saved out of the lion's mouth.*

We may here conjecturally mention Gen. xix. 29—38, a few verses written in reproach of the Moabites and Ammonites. They are Elohistie, and by a northern writer. They belong to a time when the northern Israelites were weak enough to be sorely vexed on their eastern boundary by those little neighbouring tribes, and wished to revenge by the pen injuries which they had suffered from the sword. They were written before Israel finally fell under the Assyrians, at least before Psalm lxxxiii. was written, as they are there referred to. We may remark that the art of writing must have been possessed by very few, for such a worthless piece to have been preserved to the time when the books were collected after the captivity.

In the twentieth year of his reign, Pekah met with the fate of so many of his predecessors. He was slain by Hoshea, who seized the throne for himself.†

JOTHAM KING OF JUDAH; B.C. 749—734.

AHAZ KING OF JUDAH; 741—726.

Jotham began to reign over Judah in the second year of Pekah's reign over Israel, after having governed the kingdom for several years during his father's confinement as a leper. His mother was the daughter of Zadok, probably the chief priest, and he governed agreeably to the wishes of the priesthood. Under him the kingdom continued to be prosperous. He was careful not to copy his father Uzziah in entering the House of Jehovah. He built for the temple-yard a new gate called the Upper Gate. And he added to the wall near Ophel the suburb to Jerusalem, at the south end of the temple and on the east side of Zion. He did much to strengthen the whole country by building cities on the hills, or rather putting walls to the hill-top villages, and by putting castles or towers to the thicket-camps, in which the country people often dwelt. He fought successfully against the Children of Ammon, and he made them pay him for three years together a large tribute in silver, wheat, and barley; greediness for booty was the cause of this war, as of almost all the wars.‡

* Amos iii. 12.

† 2 Kings xv. 23—31.

‡ 2 Kings xv. ; 2 Chron. xxvii.

In the ninth year of his reign, Jotham seems to have made his son Ahaz his partner on the throne, as is shown by the son's method of counting the years of his reign. At this time, as mentioned above, Rezin, king of Syria, and Pekah of Israel, were unwise enough to form an alliance for the invasion and plunder of Judah. Whereupon Ahaz was equally unwise, and he sent a large amount of treasure to Tiglath-pileser, king of Assyria, to invite him to come down upon the northern invaders, and he promised to remain his tributary servant. Jotham may have been dead, for Ahaz did not take this unfortunate step before his misfortunes had deeply humbled him. Pekah and Rezin had defeated his army, had come up to the walls of Jerusalem, and had slain one of his sons and two of his chief officers. They had retired, carrying away a large booty, and a number of prisoners to Samaria. Moreover, the Edomites had made incursions on the South Country, some part of whose population was never very unfriendly to them, and had carried away such booty and captives as they could lay their hands upon. The Philistines also had overrun the Low Country up to the Valley of Ajalon, within ten miles of Jerusalem. What Judah suffered at this time from 'his brother' Edom is described in the first chapter of Amos.

Tiglath-pileser readily accepted the treasure and the invitation, and he came down upon Damascus and took that city. He slew Rezin the king, and carried off the people to Kir in Georgia, on the western shore of the Caspian Sea. Ahaz then went to meet the Assyrian king at Damascus, and, according to the usual mode of doing homage to a conqueror, he copied his altar, and probably his form of worship, and introduced them into the temple of Jerusalem. Ahaz received very little help from his new ally. He plundered the temple and his own people to gratify the king of Assyria; and at this the people were probably more displeased with him than if he had been defeated in battle, and they had been plundered in the more usual way. He reigned a tributary to the king of Assyria. Unlike his father, he was in no wise obedient to the priests. If there was any struggle between them, Ahaz was the master; for the priests usually opposed the Assyrian alliance, which had to be pur-

chased with money which they perhaps claimed. Moreover he followed Solomon's example in himself acting as a priest and sacrificing on his new altar. He had the copper altar removed from the place where it had stood, between the Great Altar and the House of Jehovah, to the north side of the Great Altar, meaning to use that smaller altar himself, when he chose to inquire of Jehovah by his own hands, instead of employing a priest. The high priest Urijah was a willing instrument in his hand for the changes thus made in the temple service.

The great altar which king Ahaz built in the middle of the temple-yard was probably of the size and shape of that described in Ezekiel xliii. 13—17, as built of stone, and ten cubits high. The lower portion of it, six cubits high, called the Harel, or *Mount of God*, may have been built by Asa, in neglect of the command in Exodus xx. 26, that it should not be so high as to require steps, and may have called for Exod. xxviii. 42, and Lev. vi. 10, which regulate the priest's clothing when they mount the steps. The upper portion, called the Ariel, or *Hearth of God*, which raised it to the height of ten cubits, was in further breach of that command. That this addition, the Ariel, was now made to it, we learn from its being spoken of in Isaiah xxix. Ahaz also, in compliment to the king of Assyria, carried round the whole temple the shelter, or portico, which before had been built at the king's entrance, and there only. This may have been the original of that which Herod built seven hundred years later. It was useful when the people were gathered into the courts on the sabbaths during the rainy seasons.

Ahaz copied many of the superstitious practices of the neighbouring nations, and like them he made his son pass through the fire. This was probably meant as a ceremonial purification, either to make the boy holy, or to prove that he was so. It was a custom at a later time blamed by the Hebrew prophets, as a cloak for infanticide, a crime from which few nations have been wholly free; it may have been a religious ceremony used to cover the guilt. But the pride which a king feels in leaving an heir, makes us sure that, however much the father may have been wanting in natural affection, the king's son was not put to death by this ceremony.* Deut. xii. 31, tells us that some of the neighbour-

* 2 Kings xvi. ; 2 Chron. xxviii.

ing nations did so destroy their children in superstition ; but Deut. xviii. 10, only forbids the ceremony as a superstitious charm, and as leading to idolatry. Hence we judge that it was not until a yet later time, after Deuteronomy was written, that this superstitious practice was used to cover the most unnatural crime of infanticide.

To the reign of Ahaz belongs the erection of a sun dial in Jerusalem.* This may have introduced more exactness in measuring time than had been hitherto customary with the Hebrews ; but as yet there was no Hebrew word for an Hour. The day was only divided by Day-break, Sun-rise, Noon, Sunset, and Dark. And we must not suppose that the gnomon which threw the shadow sloped in the line of the earth's pole. It was no doubt placed horizontally like many ancient sun-dials now remaining, which thus divided the time of daylight between sunrise and sunset, into twelve hours, which of necessity varied in length with the time of year.

Nor were the longer portions of time measured more accurately. The beginning of every month, like the beginning of the day, was known by observation, by seeing when the new moon rose. The first month in the year was the lunar month in which the barley was in ear, hence called the month of Abib.† And from that lunar month the others were counted by giving to the year some times twelve and sometimes thirteen months. The three great feasts were fixed by the seasons ; the Passover at the full moon of the barley harvest ; the First fruits at the wheat harvest ; and the Ingathering when the grapes and figs were ripe.‡ Towards the end of the monarchy, however, a little more exactness in fixing the feast days is shown in Numbers xxviii. and yet more in Leviticus xxiii., written after the Captivity.

To the foreign tastes of Ahaz we must give the great copper Seraph, or fiery serpent, which was said to have been made by Moses, and was set up on a pole, like a military standard, in the temple-yard, and was removed in the next reign, when the rest of this king's impurities were removed. This serpent was very probably of Egyptian workmanship, and leads us to think that Ahaz, when he found his Assyrian alliance was likely to be his ruin, had asked for help from

* 2 Kings xx. 11.

† Exod. ix. 31 ; xii. 2 ; xiii. 4.

‡ Exod. xxxiv.

Egypt, and, like Hoshea, offered homage to the Egyptian king. This copper serpent was called the Nehushtan, and is described in Numbers xxi. 5—9. To this time therefore we may safely give the authorship of that portion of writing. Such was the unpopularity of Ahaz with the priests, that when he died he was not buried in the royal burial place. He was succeeded by his son Hezekiah.*

The carrying off captives by the Assyrians and Edomites in the late wars brings to our notice a new feature in the history of the world's civilization. Hitherto wars had usually ended with the slaughter of the conquered—at least, of all the males; and their mutilated limbs were often sent home by the victorious general as a present to his sovereign. Such trophies of cruelty were sent by David as a present to King Saul, and such were the presents which Rameses II. received from his generals, as we see on the Egyptian sculptured monuments. But henceforth captivity rather than death was to be the fate of the conquered. If we may not say that the cruelty of the conquerors was softened by their humanity, at least their angry passions were restrained by their cold selfishness. The Assyrians made use of their prisoners on the waste lands of their wide dominions; but such conquerors as could not use their prisoners sold them to those that could.

The misery caused by the invaders of Judah fell, of course, chiefly upon the inhabitants of the open country, and less upon the rulers within the strong walls of Zion. This divided the state into two political parties; and of this we shall see more hereafter, as the invasions become more serious. It made the country less obedient to the capital; and it lessened the power of the ruling priests.

It is to the reign of Ahaz that we must give one of the most beautiful pieces of writing among the Hebrew prophets, that of Joel. It is a noble patriotic outburst of anger against the king's doings, and of encouragement to the people, on witnessing their troubles. The invasion of the Edomites had been followed by that of the Philistines, then by that of the Syrians jointly with Israel, and lastly, to crown the misfortunes, the Assyrians had been unwisely called in by the king, and had added to the troubles which he fancied they would have removed. The prophet compares

* 2 Kings xvi. ; 2 Chron. xxviii.

these nations to so many flights of locusts, each worse than the former; "What the grasshopper hath left the cricket hath eaten; what the cricket hath left the locust hath eaten, and what the locust hath left the great locust hath eaten. Be ye ashamed, O husbandmen;" it was your own doing. Some critics are of opinion that Joel is speaking of real locusts, and not using them as a cover to describe enemies whom it was unsafe to name openly. But the danger was such as fully to justify his caution. Moreover, the Assyrian invader is very clearly pointed to when the prophet asks, "Who knoweth but he will turn back and repent, and will leave a blessing behind him, even a meal offering and a drink offering unto Jehovah your God?" While thus treating of religious matters, and quoting from Exodus xxxiv. 6, the words "Jehovah is gracious and merciful, slow to anger and abundant in kindness," we find no evidence that Joel had read the ceremonial laws of Leviticus and Numbers. They had been written for the use of the priests alone.

Joel's description of an army's march is admirable; "A fire devoureth before them; and behind them a flame burneth. The land is as the garden of Eden before them, and behind them a wasted desert." Equally fine is his call to arms, which has been copied by the later prophets; "Consecrate the war, wake up the warriors, let all the men of war draw near; let them come up. Beat your ploughshares into swords, and your pruning hooks into spears; let the weak man say, I am strong." But though writing in such a time of distress, he trusts in Jehovah; and he promises, like all the prophets, a future of happiness and prosperity for Judah, when Jehovah will judge the nations in the valley of Jehoshaphat, immediately outside the walls of Jerusalem. He thus plays upon the name of the valley, which may be translated *Jehovah judgeth*. He also gives to that valley another name with a double meaning, which may be rendered either the Valley of *Decision*, or of the *Ditch* of the city wall.

We may learn from the style of Joel's writing that his book was written to be read aloud to a circle of listeners. Indeed that was the only way in which it could be made much known when the readers were not many. Some few of those who heard it read, may have asked for copies for themselves. The Book of Joel is rather an oration than an

essay for a quiet reader ; and it marks a new era in the history of learning, when the orator became also a writer, and thus made a regular attempt to have his voice heard by a wider circle. Before this the poet alone had been able to send his words from one end of the land to the other. Though we have already mentioned a chapter in Zechariah, by a writer who had understanding in visions of God ; yet the Book of Joel, as being of far higher value, may be said to introduce us to the age of the prophets, to the golden age of Hebrew literature.

The Hebrew prophet was a man who had the power of writing and of speaking in public, and that poetic genius and earnestness that give persuasiveness and force to the words uttered. He was not a priest, or Levite, or a man appointed to the office ; but he stepped forward of his own accord to the task of warning the nation and its rulers. He was usually opposed to the priests. He was moved by a noble hatred of what he, wisely or unwisely, thought evil. His voice was against sin of all kinds, against injustice, against idolatry, against distrusting Jehovah and looking for Egyptian or Assyrian help. His wish was to preserve to the people their nationality, and to check foreign customs and the introduction of foreign gods. He called upon the people to trust in themselves and in their God. His words were warm with earnestness, with piety, with hope. When the nation was overrun with foreign armies and plundered, he saw in all the hand of a just God punishing them for their sins. He assured them that the day of punishment would be followed by a day of prosperity. He taught them to look forward to that day, the day of Jehovah, as a time when peace would be upon earth, and Jerusalem perhaps give laws to the surrounding nations, and Jehovah be acknowledged as the only God. Writings such as these are sometimes hard to be understood. Earnest feelings poured forth 2500 years ago in a poetic torrent by an Asiatic may easily be misunderstood by a Western reader. While writing sometimes about the future, to a people who were familiar with the past and present, the prophets do not always describe even history clearly. Sometimes they had a reason of prudence for not naming the persons whom they speak about. But by comparing their writings with the Books of Kings and Chronicles, we can for the most part learn the time when each wrote, and the events which gave rise to his feelings.

From out of the Book of Joel it seems necessary to except two small portions as later additions made by some writers who lived after the tribe of Judah had been carried into captivity. One is Chapter ii. 28—iii. 8, in which the writer says that the captives of Judah and Jerusalem will be brought back home. The expressions in this passage will not apply to any but the great captivity in Babylon. There are very few writings in the Bible from which criticism does not require us to remove passages that have been improperly added by the later editor. Of course it is very possible that when Tiglath-pileser carried captive the men of Israel, as above described, there may have been men of Judah among them. We have also been reading of many defeats and unfortunate wars in which men of Judah may have been carried off into distant lands, while the monarchy remained yet standing, but none in which Jerusalem was made captive, before the monarchy was overthrown. The other addition to Joel is Chapter iii. 18—21, written in anger against Egypt and Edom, who were to be punished about the time of the return from captivity.

Psalms lxi. and lxiii. are Elohistie; and seem both to belong to this time, and to have been written by captives, perhaps of Israel, living away from home while the king was safe upon the throne, and therefore before one or other of the two great captivities which put down the kings. The writer of lxi. says—

Hear my cry, O God ; attend unto my prayer.
From the end of the earth I cry unto thee.

But he also says, showing that the monarchy is not yet destroyed—

Thou wilt add days to the king's days ;
His years will be as generations and generations.

The writer of lxiii. says—

O God, thou art my God ; early will I seek thee ;
My soul thirsteth for thee, my flesh longeth for thee,
In a dry and thirsty land where no water is.

Yet he adds—

But the king will rejoice in God ;
Every one that sweareth by him will glory.

These two Psalms are obviously both written by captives living abroad, but before the time of the great Babylonian captivity.

The prophet Isaiah began his life in Uzziah's reign, and he describes a vision that he had on Uzziah's death; but the earliest remaining portion of his writings belongs to the reign of Ahaz. This portion ends with Chapter x. 4, and we must except from it two short sentences, namely, ii. 1—4 and iv. 2—6, which a later editor has taken the liberty to insert in the middle of it. Isaiah's work opens with a mournful remonstrance to the nation for their attention to sacrifices, days, and feasts, and for their neglect of righteousness and justice, and for their running after soothsayers and idols. The Levitical priesthood, which rose into importance by its usefulness, had, as we have seen, used that importance for its own selfish purposes. It had cumbered religion with its ceremonies, and the people had gone astray under these blind guides. Isaiah does not attack the priests, but in the name of Jehovah he threatens the people with the ruin which is coming on them for their sins and vanities; he says that they have had every spiritual advantage, but to no purpose. He describes the Lord in a vision as sending him to warn the people of their danger; but at the same time to promise them that the invasion by Pekah King of Israel, and Rezin King of Syria, shall not be successful. Their real danger is from Egypt and Assyria. He mentions the expected birth of a child who is to be called Emmanuel, or *God with us*. This was said when Hezekiah, the king's son, was about twenty years old, and he may perhaps at that time have taken a wife. In the next chapter Isaiah gives to this child, which proves to be male, and therefore heir to the throne, a series of remarkable titles, such as Wonderful Counsellor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace, which seem so very unsuitable to Ahaz's grandchild, that they have been held to point to a spiritual Messiah. But these titles are hardly more flattering than the names of many kings of Judah would appear, if translated into English; and, far less so than that of Adonijah, one of David's sons, which means *My lord Jehovah*.

From the writings of the prophets we may learn that the Hebrew preachers often allowed their language to pass into metrical prose, marked like the poetry by the parallelism of

the clauses, and very probably accompanied by a musical intonation of voice. As an example take Isaiah, v. 5—7, where he compares Judea to a vineyard—

And now let me tell you what I will do to my vineyard :
 I will take away its hedge, and it shall be wasted ;
 I will break down its wall, and it shall be trodden down,
 And I will make it a waste, and it shall not be pruned nor
 digged ;
 But there shall come up briars and thorns ;
 And I will command the clouds that they rain no rain on it ;
 For the vineyard of Jehovah of hosts is the house of Israel,
 And the men of Judah were the plant of his delight ;
 And he looked for justice, but behold bloodshed,
 For righteousness, but behold a cry.

Chapters ix. 8—x. 4, belong to a time a little later than the foregoing, when the northern kingdom was to be punished for its alliance with Rezin king of Syria, and was to be overrun by the Assyrians, the adversaries of their friend Rezin. The later portions of Isaiah's writings must be left to the next reign.

The writings of Joel, which we lately noticed, those of Isaiah, which we have now come upon, and which are soon to be followed by those of Amos, Micah and Hosea, all published within one generation, show a great awakening of the Jewish mind, and an increase of spiritual religion, while Isaiah and Amos show yet further a revolt against the burnt offerings, and sin offerings, and freewill offerings, which the priests had too much placed at the head of religion. The progress of time, and a wider acquaintance with the neighbouring nations, had brought an increase of knowledge. The idolatries, which the Jews were ordered to shun, may have taught them that their own ceremonies were not more valuable. The Assyrian invasion had given a severe but useful lesson. The fast day, which Joel had called for, the priests weeping between the porch and the altar, had not checked the armies of Tiglath-pileser. Ceremonial religion flourishes only in a time of prosperity ; in a time of distress spiritual religion alone is valued. Such a time of suffering from foreign invasion, and of spiritual improvement within themselves, the Jews were now entering upon, as we shall have to note in the writings of the next century.

The increase of literature, which we meet with about this time, leads to an inquiry as to the materials used for writing.

In the earliest ages poetry asked for no help but the memory. The poem called the Book of the Wars, and Deborah's Song, and at a later time the Psalms, may have been composed centuries before they were written down. But laws need a lasting record which can be referred to, and the Ten Commandments were engraved on Tables of Stone. For other writings we are left to our conjectures. Messages may have been written on pieces of pottery, as in Egypt even at a later time. Money accounts may also have been so kept. The neighbouring Assyrians wrote on clay which they then hardened in the fire. As in modern days the Books of the Law have always been written on rolls of leather, very possibly they may from the first have been so written. But leather is costly, and writings can have had a very small circulation, and indeed very few facts or thoughts could have been committed to writing, until a cheaper material was found. This was the Egyptian papyrus, which probably came into use in Judea gradually; but when and how far we are not told, until the burst of prophetic writing at this time assures us that it was now becoming common. This is confirmed to us a little later by Jeremiah, who tells us that his works were written down by Baruch by means of ink upon rolls which were readily burnt when put into the fire.

The prophets wrote for the public at large, but the number of those who could read was very small. Hence the way in which their thoughts were made known was mostly by their writings being read aloud to an assembled body of listeners.* This indeed appears from the language itself, as the only Hebrew word for Reading means to Call out, or Read aloud. This brought no small advantage to the writers' style; as the best style in all languages is that which is fitted for the ears of a listener, equally with the eyes of the reader.

HOSHEA, KING OF ISRAEL; B.C. 730—722.

Hoshea was the twentieth and last king of Israel since the revolt of the tribes against Solomon's son. Of these, so many had gained the throne by violence, that the murder of a predecessor seemed almost to establish a right to it. Under such circumstances, we need not wonder that the

* Jerem. xxxvi. 10, and 22.

kingdom was hastening to its ruin. Hoshea began his reign with a fruitless attempt to resist the invading army of Shalmaneser, king of Assyria, which, after conquering Sidon and attacking Tyre, overran Zebulun and Naphtali, and then dividing itself into two bodies, crushed yet more severely the country on the coast of the Mediterranean and that on the east of the Jordan.* Upon this, Hoshea submitted, and became the tributary servant of Shalmaneser. After a time however, he thought he could gain a little more independence if he put himself under the care of a more distant master. He therefore sent his tribute to Seve, or So, an Ethiopian king who had become king of all Egypt, and he left off sending his tribute to Assyria. But his Egyptian alliance was of no use to him; and in the sixth year of his reign Shalmaneser's troops came down a second time to the conquest of the country.

Hoshea went forward to meet the invaders in the land of Zebulun, the place where what remained of his kingdom could be best defended; and there his army was routed. "The bow of Israel was broken in the valley of Jezreel," between the hill-country of Samaria and the hill-country of Galilee.† Hoshea never recovered from this defeat. For three years the city of Samaria was besieged by the Assyrians, not, we must suppose, so closely but that it had free intercourse with the surrounding country for supplies of men and food. The severe treatment which the village of Beth-arbel, in Galilee, had received from the invaders, who slaughtered the women and children equally with the soldiers, was a warning to the Israelites, and encouraged them to a brave resistance.‡ But in the third year Shalmaneser gained possession of the place; he made Hoshea prisoner, and put an end to the kingdom of Israel. It had lasted two hundred and fifteen years, during which time it had been always a simple despotism. It had never been a united people. It had no established priesthood like that in Judea, which, by claiming a share of power for itself, very much supported the throne like a body of nobles, and at the same time checked its irregular action.

The southern historian, while saying of Hoshea, as of all the kings of Israel, that he did evil in the sight of Jehovah,

* Isaiah ix. 1. Menander in Josephus, Antiq. IX. xiv. 2.

† Hosea i. 5.

‡ Hosea x. 14.

adds in his favour "but not as the kings of Israel that were before him." From these words we may suppose that he had been in alliance with Judah, and that the young Hezekiah may have wisely thought him a valuable friend in his brave attempt to resist the encroaching power of Assyria.

The king of Assyria, in order to establish his power over the country, removed a large part of the population to a distant part of his own dominions, treating them as his predecessor had treated the Chaldees; and he brought in a new population, on whom he could rely, to keep the rest of the Israelites in obedience. He placed the rulers and landowners of Israel in Halah and Habor, by the river Gozan, as it falls into the Caspian Sea, and also in some of the cities of Media; where many of the Israelites had already been placed by his predecessors, Pul and Tiglath-pileser. On the other hand, he sent down into the land of Israel men from Babylon and Syria, and Cuthah in Elam, who brought in their own customs and their own religion. Some of these strangers wished to worship the God of the country in which they had settled, holding the very common opinion, that in every place the God of that place is the true God; and at their request the king of Assyria sent back one of the captive Israelite priests to introduce or to continue the sacrifices to Jehovah in Beth-el. This worship at Beth-el we may see justified in two passages in the Book of Genesis, namely, xii. 8, and xxviii. 10—22; and also denounced as idolatrous by the prophets Amos and Hosea. As the prophets join Gilgal to Beth-el in their blame, we may suppose that at this time sacrifices were offered at both places, under the protection of the Assyrians; and what is yet more important, that the Assyrians by holding Gilgal had cut off Judea from the fords of the Jordan and from the east. For the future, our history of the Hebrew nation is almost confined to Judah and Jerusalem.*

We have so little information about the population of the northern country before its conquest, that we can by no means determine what it was after the change made by Shalmaneser. It, no doubt, had consisted of a mixed body of Israelites and Canaanites, the former being for the most

part landowners and soldiers, and the latter labourers. But in what proportion these two races lived together, or how far they had intermarried and become one, it is in vain to ask. Shalmaneser wished to remove those only who, by their rank and education, could be troublesome to his government, and those whom he could make use of for their skill. These were the Israelites. But it is reasonable to suppose that many of pure Hebrew blood, and a still greater number of mixed blood, were left behind. Hence we can by no means believe the opinion of the later writers, that from this time the northern tribes wholly ceased to exist in their own country, and that those who remained there were all of Gentile origin. The Samaritans and Galileans of the following centuries were, of course, not Jews, because they were not of the tribe of Judah; but many of them must have been as truly Israelites as some of those who denied them that title, notwithstanding the reproachful name of Cuthæans, by which, as Josephus says, the Samaritans were henceforth called by the Jews.*

The writings of the prophet Amos belong to this time. They carry internal evidence of a very exact date, and we must reject the introductory verse, which gives them to the reign of Jeroboam II. as of no authority. Jeroboam's long reign was the time of the northern kingdom's greatest prosperity, a time very different from that described by Amos. These prophecies were written while the Syrians were being carried off into captivity to Kir by Tiglath-pileser, in the reign of Ahaz, and after Galilee and Naphtali had been carried away captive by the same conqueror, but before the final captivity of Israel in the reign of Hezekiah. Thus Amos wrote thirty years at least after the death of Jeroboam II.; and therefore, when he says that Jeroboam shall die by the sword, we must understand him as speaking covertly of king Pekah, to whom he gives the most reproachful of names when he calls him Jeroboam, after the hated son of Nebat, whose rebellion divided the kingdom. In the same guarded way, Amos avoids naming their dangerous enemies, the Assyrians; and, copying Joel, he calls them locusts, but such unnatural locusts as came up in the rainy season, before the latter grass crop. He calls the Syrians, who are overrunning Samaria, Cows of Bashan,

* Antiq. ix. xiv. 3.

refusing to them the name of Bulls, which is so often given to them in the Hebrew writings. Amos lived for some time in the land of Israel, where he reproached the people for their idolatry. And he was ordered by the priest of Beth-el to leave the country, and to return into the land of Judah, as the writer of Zechariah xi. had been before sent away from the northern kingdom in the reign of Menahem.

Amos foresees the ruin of northern Israel from the Assyrians. The being carried into captivity, the usual fate of the conquered, was awaiting them. He reproaches the Israelites with taking up their tithes every third year to Beth-el, which he considers an idolatrous city. Thus it would seem that, in the northern kingdom, the tithes were to some extent claimed by the priests, though only on the third year. We shall hereafter see, in Judah also, the priests claiming the tithes only on two years out of three, and, later still, only on one year in three. But at what time this tax passed into the hands of the priests, is not clearly shown. The last five verses in the Book of Amos are by a later writer, who lived after the overthrow of Jerusalem and of the temple. Following a custom so common with the Hebrew editors, he has added these few words to say that a day will come when the Temple shall be again raised up and the breaches in the city walls repaired.

Amos had read the history of the march out of Egypt, and of the destruction of the Amorites in Numbers xxi. ; and the lives of Jacob and Joseph in Genesis, as he names the tribes after those patriarchs ; and also the law in Leviticus ii. 11, which forbids burning leaven with the incense. Thus we see that much of the Pentateuch was already written.

The few words in addition to the Life of Jacob, in Genesis xxviii. 10—22, which support the priests of Beth-el in their claim to the tithes, must belong to this century. Jacob there vows to pay tithes to Jehovah in that city. The addition, also, to the Life of Abraham, in Genesis xii. 8, which gives countenance to the altar at Beth-el, by saying that the patriarch set it up to Jehovah, belongs to the same time. These two additions to Genesis, written in opposition to the priests at Jerusalem, and as we must suppose by rival

priests at Beth-el, cannot at the time, nor indeed for many generations after, have formed any part of the Jerusalem copies. They must have been written into the northern copies, and only adopted into the others after the time of the Captivity, when the jealousy between the tribes had ceased.

Whatever feelings of prudence led Joel and Amos to avoid naming the Assyrian invaders, and to speak of them guardedly as a swarm of devouring locusts, made it still more necessary for their successors to write with like care. And hence arose a custom with the Hebrew writers of speaking of their invading enemies, their oppressors, as they usually style them, under cover of some poetical figure or characteristic emblem. Thus, as we have seen, the Syrians, who dwelt in a rich grazing country, are called Bulls, and the smaller Syrian kingdoms Bullocks and Calves; so the Egyptians are called Buffaloes,* and the king of Egypt a Dragon or Crocodile;† the Babylonians are called Wild Beasts of the Reeds, from the reed beds with which their city was surrounded;‡ the Edomites are called Dogs, a translation of the name Calebites;§ and the Arabs are called the Men shorn on the Cheek, because they had not the same strength of beard as the Israelites;|| Nahum calls the king of Nineveh and his family the Lion with several Lionesses and young Lions;¶ the writer of a short paragraph in Jeremiah calls Babylon the city of Sheshak, by writing its name Babel by means of a reversed alphabet,** and lastly, Ezekiel xxxviii. denounces the king of Babylon under the name of Gog of the land of Magog. In most of these cases it was a wise fear of the danger that might arise from speaking openly that led the writer to use a dark poetical expression. He had every wish to be understood by those for whom he wrote; and such examples by no means justify us in looking for a secondary or hidden meaning, except in cases where such meaning could not have been expressed without risk of punishment.

In the earlier portion of our history, the land held by the Israelites seemed to be most favourably situated for national independence and prosperity. Their various tribes,

* Psalm xxii. 21; Num. xxiii. 22. † Isaiah li. 9; Fzek. xxix. 3.

‡ Psalm lxviii. 30. § Psalm xxii. 16. || Jerem. xxv. 23.

¶ Ch. ii. 11, 12.

** Ch. xxv. 26; li. 41.

being united into one monarchy, were stronger than any of the tribes by which they were surrounded. Safely might the psalmist of Solomon's reign speak of all attempts against his power as vain.* Even after Solomon's death, when the nation was divided into two monarchies, they were yet both for some time able to hold their ground against their neighbours. But latterly other tribes had learned to unite, or rather, had been forced by conquest to act as if willingly united; kingdoms had grown greater; and henceforth we shall find Palestine most unfortunately placed between two powerful nations; that on the banks of the Tigris and Euphrates, and that on the banks of the Nile. It was the highway by which armies marched backwards and forwards between Western Asia and Egypt. We have seen Northern Israel conquered and destroyed by Assyria; and now we shall note Judah's struggles for a century and a half to uphold its independence, until it sinks in the same way, crushed between its rival neighbours.

Hitherto, on the throne of Nineveh, we have met with the names of Pul, the conqueror of Armenia and Chaldaea; of Tiglath-pileser, the conqueror of Syria and part of Israel; and then of Shalmanezzer, who completed the captivity of Israel, and made Babylon and Judea pay tribute. Thus Nineveh had become the capital of the most powerful kingdom in the world. Its kings, flushed with conquest and the wealth which their conquests brought, employed that wealth in supporting armies to make further conquests, and in building palaces at home. The kingdom of Babylon, and then Elam, on the south-east, and that of Judea, and then Tyre, the Island of Cyprus, and Egypt, on the south-west, were the prizes which the Assyrians now looked forward to as their own. Such may have been among the dreams of Shalmanezzer; he died at the very moment of conquering Israel; and his generals sent the captive Israelites to Nineveh as a present to his successor Sennacherib.†

HEZEKIAH KING OF JUDAH; B.C. 727—699.

When Hezekiah came to the throne, the country of Judea had reached to its greatest wealth and prosperity, from which it was soon to fall. The produce of the soil, which at first barely supported those that tilled it, had increased,

* Psalm ii.

† Hosea x. 6:

first to be able to support a king and his army, and then a wealthy priesthood. It was at this time such that the larger land-owners became a body of nobles, whom we shall find struggling against the priests of Jerusalem for political power.

Hezekiah did not follow in the footsteps of his father Ahaz. His mother was a daughter of Zechariah, probably of that Zechariah who had been the wise adviser of his grandfather Uziah. She perhaps had more influence over her son than over her husband. Hezekiah governed entirely to the satisfaction of the priesthood, and before he had been long on the throne he discontinued the tribute to Assyria, which it would seem that he had been forced to pay. He cut down the groves of Ashera, and broke in pieces a copper serpent called the Nehushtan, which was said to have been made by Moses, but which was probably set up in Jerusalem by Ahaz, and had incense there burnt before it.

The ecclesiastical changes made in this reign were indeed most important, so much so that the scantiness of particulars is very much to be regretted. One of these changes was the removal of the High Places, that is, the forbidding sacrifices to be made in any place out of Jerusalem. Hitherto many cities throughout Judah, as throughout Israel, had each its own High Place, or altar, upon which the Levites of the neighbourhood had offered up their burnt offerings. These, the priests in Jerusalem had long wished to have abolished ; and in the history of those kings who governed agreeably to the priests, the historian has usually added, as one of the king's shortcomings, that the High Places were not removed. This change, so gratifying to the priests of Jerusalem, was at last brought about by Hezekiah.*

Hezekiah made a great ceremonial purification of the temple-yard and of the House of Jehovah, to cleanse it from the sin of idolatry with which it had been polluted in the last reign. This occupied fifteen days of the first month in the year, during which time bullocks and rams were slain and burnt, and their blood sprinkled on the altar. The he-goats had the priests' hands laid upon their heads before they were slain as a sin-offering. The Levites raised

* 2 Kings xviii. 1—8.

the music with cymbals, psalteries, and harps, while the priests sounded with the trumpets; and psalms were sung to Jehovah in the words of David and Asaph the seer.*

Before this ceremony was ended, it was already time to keep the Passover, which Hezekiah had proposed to do in an equally costly manner. But the preparations could not be made without some little further delay, so he appointed that it should be on the full moon of the second month, instead of the first month. In the meantime, he sent runners, not only through Judah, but also through the northern country, inviting everybody up to Jerusalem to the feast. The men of Judah came in large numbers, with some few from Asher, Zebulun, and Manasseh, while the larger part of the northern tribes, and Ephraim in particular, laughed at the invitation. There had been no such celebration of the Passover since the days of Solomon.† But, for its being kept on the second month, we shall find a new enactment introduced into the Law in justification. As soon as the celebration of the Passover was ended, those who had joined in it undertook in a spirit of religious enthusiasm to break the altars, whether idolatrous or not, of those who did not come up to the feast. And this was not limited to Judea. In the weakness of the kingdom of Israel, the men of Judah thought fit to punish the men of Ephraim and Manasseh for having any altar other than that in Jerusalem.‡

We take the account of this grand national celebration of the Passover by Hezekiah from the Chronicles; the Book of Kings, the more trustworthy of the two histories, does not mention it. But that the Passover was so kept by Hezekiah, is probable from our finding it ordered in Deuteronomy, which was written before Josiah had so kept the Passover at Jerusalem.§

In this reign, we are told of two marauding attacks by some men from the southern kingdom upon their weaker neighbours. One body of Simeonites, in search of pastures for their flocks, slew the Maonites on the east side of the valley of Arabah, and seized their lands; while a second body, to the number of five hundred, went to Mount Seir, and there gained a settlement by slaying the Amalekites of that neighbourhood.||

* 2 Chron. xxix.
§ Deut. xvi.

† 2 Chron. xxx.

‡ 2 Chron. xxxi.

|| 1 Chron. iv. 39—43.

Hezekiah, in his wars against the Philistines, routed their forces, and drove them back as far as Gaza. And this is the last time for many years that we hear of these troublesome neighbours. Not that they were henceforth subject to Judea ; but with the larger armies of the great kingdoms which now come upon the stage, this little tribe, which had once been so important, now falls out of notice.*

In the sixth year of this reign, Shalmanezer had conquered the kingdom of Israel, and had carried its chief men into captivity on the eastern side of Assyria ; and had placed in the land of Israel, among other colonists, some brought from Babylon. Hence we learn that Babylon was then tributary to Assyria. But Babylon was now rising in importance. The very next year, B.C. 721, Mardoc-empadus came to the throne of that kingdom, and he would seem to have claimed to be independent of Assyria. Perhaps Hezekiah may have had the encouragement of his example in refusing to send his tribute to Nineveh. The death of Shalmanezer may also have been a further encouragement. Be this as it may, at any rate Hezekiah took that bold step and rebelled against Assyria. This, however, was soon to be followed by its punishment. In the fourteenth year of Hezekiah's reign, B.C. 714, Sennacherib the new king of Assyria, invaded Judea to bring Hezekiah to obedience, and to enforce the payment of the usual tribute. Sennacherib's aim, however, was by no means limited to any task so easy ; he proposed at the same time to pass through the country to Egypt, of course meaning to levy tribute and plunder as he passed. The route by which he came, and the particulars of his march, are doubtful. We may reasonably suppose that the headquarters of the Assyrians in that neighbourhood were at Damascus. Isaiah† mentions the Assyrian army on its way to Egypt as arriving at Aiath, perhaps the same place as Ai, on the east of the Jordan, as crossing over to Migron, as passing through the defile to Michmash, and then threatening Jerusalem. If this was Sennacherib's own army he quickly passed on towards the greater object that he had in view. We next hear of him at Lachish, five-and-twenty miles to the south-west of Jerusalem, on the direct road to Egypt. There Hezekiah sent an embassy to him with a large amount

* 2 Kings xviii. 8.

† Isaiah x. 24—32.

of gold and silver, of which he had stripped his palace and the temple.

This gift, it seems, did not satisfy Sennacherib. Either then, or possibly on a future invasion of the country, he sent part of his army, under the command of his generals, from Lachish, where he seems to have had a permanent camp, to the siege of Jerusalem. The Assyrian army encamped on the high ground near Gihon, at the north side of the city. Sennacherib's generals were well aware that there was a division in the councils within the city; and, before beginning the attack, they addressed themselves to the guards on the walls, and made good use of the arguments which were likely to increase that division. The landowners, the men of Judah, and the country Levites, who had fled for safety within the walls, were highly displeased with Hezekiah and his priestly advisers for closing the High Places and forbidding all sacrifices out of Jerusalem; and the Assyrian generals reminded them of this, and promised that, if they would make peace with Sennacherib they should be well treated, and live every man under his own fig-tree, and beside his own cistern. But they made no secret of Sennacherib's intention to carry the heads of the nation into captivity. Had the tribute been regularly paid, the Assyrians would have left the Jews alone; it was only after the tribute had been withheld that captivity was threatened, and that with a promise of good treatment. All this is to be considered when we attempt to judge between the two parties in the state—the men of Judah, who wished to pay the tribute, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, who refused to pay it.

The guards on the walls, however, did not listen to the Assyrian offers. Moreover, Hezekiah was then prepared to defend his capital, and was not moved by the threats of the Assyrian general, who soon withdrew, and returned towards Sennacherib, whom he now found besieging the city of Libnah, five or six miles nearer to Jerusalem than Lachish, where he had left him.* Sennacherib was on the retreat slowly, because he heard that Tirhakah, king of Egypt, was marching against him, but he took time enough to plunder the towns as he passed. He did not, however, again attack Jerusalem. He probably returned home by the southern

* 2 Kings xix.

ford of the Jordan and by Damascus, the route by which we supposed him to have arrived.

Hezekiah, in preparation for an attack upon Jerusalem, had strengthened the wall that had been broken down eighty years before by the king of Israel, and built a second, or rather a third wall on the outside to inclose a second suburb. He also repaired Millo, the castle, and dug a new pool, or tank, within the city for a supply of water. This was known by the name of Hezekiah's pool. Hitherto the city had been supplied with water from two sources, Solomon's Pool on the south, and the Upper and Lower Pools of the Gihon on the west. Hezekiah turned the water from the Lower Pool of the Gihon, and brought it into his new tank direct from the Upper Pool of the Gihon, as it would seem by an underground pipe; and knowing that he should not be able to guard Solomon's pool from the Assyrians, he broke down the bank and let the water run to waste lest the enemy should make use of it. The city was wholly supplied with water from the pools which caught the rain in the rainy seasons; there were few springs in the neighbourhood, and no army could live on the outside of the walls in the dry season when the artificial pools were broken down.*

There are two or three passages in the prophets which tell us that King Hezekiah had fled for safety from Jerusalem during some part of the Assyrian invasion. Isaiah in Chap. xxii. 3, mentions the flight of the rulers, but does not speak of the king. He addresses the city—"All thy rulers are fled together. They are taken captive by the [Assyrian] archers; all of thee that are found are taken captive." The Prophet Micah, in Chap. i. 15, says, "The glory of Israel shall go to Adullam," meaning that the king, like David, shall flee to some hiding place. And he more expressly says in chap. ii. 13, that the flight took place during the siege; "He that breaketh down is come up before them. They have broken down; and they [the Israelites] pass through the city gate and go out by it, and their king passeth before them, and Jehovah at the head of them." Thus the priests had at the same time carried out the Ark to some place of safety. This was written, as we

* 2 Kings xx. 20; 2 Chron. xxxii. 3, 30.

learn from Jeremiah,* in the reign of Hezekiah. Psalm xi. may be supposed to have been written at this time, by one who refused to leave the city when the rulers fled, as he thought there was greater danger outside than in. He says—

In Jehovah I put my trust; how say ye to my soul,
 'Flee as a bird to your mountain?'
 For, lo, the wicked aim with their bow,
 They make ready their arrow on the string,
 To shoot in the dark at the upright in heart.
 When the pillars [or princes] are broken down,
 What can a righteous man do?

Isaiah in chap. xix. 10, had in the same way called the princes the pillars.

Hezekiah may have been in danger of being taken, and he may have escaped from the enemy with difficulty; as what seems to be the return of this king is described in Zechariah ix. 9, "Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem. Behold, thy king cometh to thee; he is just, and hath been saved, lowly, and riding upon an ass, even upon a colt, the foal of a she-ass." These several passages, which all relate to this time, can hardly be explained without supposing that Hezekiah had for a time quitted the city to avoid the threatened danger.

Thus the history of the Assyrian attack or attacks upon Hezekiah is full of difficulties. We are, however, a little helped by what we learn from Herodotus†—namely, that Sennacherib had reached Pelusium, the frontier town of Egypt, and sat down to the siege of it. We gain another hint from the Assyrian sculptures,‡ and from Psalm lxxviii., that in this distant undertaking he trusted for his supplies to the Tyrian ships, and that these were scattered in a storm. This and the Babylonian rebellion may have been the cause of his hastily breaking up his camp before Pelusium, and of his hurrying away without waiting to give battle to the Egyptian army that Tirhakah, the king, had sent against him. So unexpected was this move, that the Hebrew historian describes it as caused by the stroke of an angel, which slew a large part of his army. He withdrew in the night; and when the Egyptians, in the morning, entered

* Jerem. xxvi. 18.

† Lib. ii. 141.

‡ "Bonomi's Nineveh," 3rd Edit. Fig. 53.

his camp, they found the ground strewed with dead bodies.

While the main body of the Assyrians was plundering Judea on the route to Egypt, a part of the army turned aside to plunder the fertile valleys of Moab ; and the distressed inhabitants fled to the highlands from the Assyrian lion. Nor did this happen once only. After an interval of three years the same calamity came upon Moab a second time.* This seems to place an interval of three years between Sennacherib's first and second invasion of Judea. But the order of events in Hezekiah's reign is sadly confused. Now and during the coming century Edom was subject to Moab ; and the capital of Edom, whether called Sela,† or Mibzar,‡ is spoken of as a city of Moab.

In these years of trouble to the inhabitants of the open villages, not a few of the people sought safety by flight from their homes. Beer-sheba, on the edge of the southern desert, on the road towards Egypt, received many, as we judge from the frequent mention of that place in the Hebrew writings at this time. The prophet Amos in the beginning of Hezekiah's reign, blames the Northern Israelites for rushing to Beer-sheba,§ and afterwards blames the men of Judah for rushing to that spot and raising an altar to Jehovah in that town.||

But Beer-sheba and the neighbourhood were not far enough removed from the danger ; and as the Assyrians moved southward the people of southern Judea, putting their wealth on the backs of their camels and asses, took refuge in Egypt.¶ There, on the eastern bank of the Nile, they may have found many of their own race ; and thither in after centuries they were followed by others who, like themselves, fled from invading armies. Thus was at last formed the important colony of Jews in the Delta.

Hezekiah's change of policy in favour of a brave resistance, seems to have been accompanied with a change of advisers. His favourite Shebna, who had made himself unpopular by his boastful style of living, and had been ruler of the royal household, was for a short time removed from his high post ; and Eliakim the son of Hilkiyah was appointed to his place. This was done with the warm

* Isaiah xv., xvi.

§ Amos v. 5.

† Isaiah xvi. 1.

|| Amos viii. 14.

‡ Isaiah xxv. 12.

¶ Isaiah xxx. 6.

approval of the prophet Isaiah, who had counselled resistance and promised success.*

The retreat of the Assyrians from the land of Judah was soon followed by the serious illness of Hezekiah, which brought him to the point of death. This is memorable from the king's conversation with the prophet Isaiah, who promised him that he should recover.† The statement that Isaiah, to convince him that he had power to promise him his recovery, made the shadow on the sundial go backwards, seems to have been created out of the not uncommon figure of poetry by which the decline of life is compared to the lengthening shadow.

The historians do not tell us of any after invasion of Hezekiah's kingdom by the Assyrians. But we may be sure that Sennacherib did not leave the little kingdom of Judea independent. Eliakim, who may have advised resistance, and the withholding of the tribute, was shortly afterwards removed from his post in the government;‡ and the later policy of Hezekiah, with the policy of his successor, both make it probable that Hezekiah ended his reign as a tributary to Sennacherib.

Hezekiah had begun his reign by stopping the High Places to please the priests of the capital; but before the end of his reign he made another change, which would seem as if made in the very opposite direction. This was the raising the Levites of the whole kingdom almost to an equality with the priests, the sons of Aaron, who had the care of the Ark. These latter, ever since the establishment of the priesthood in Jerusalem, had been claiming a superiority over their brethren in the smaller towns, till, in the reign of Jehoash, by the power of the chief priest Jehoiada, their claim was fully established, and the Levites were declared to be their servants. But, under Hezekiah, the Levites claimed, and were allowed, to join the priests on equal terms in offering up burnt offerings on the altar in Jerusalem.§ Hezekiah also made a new appointment of the courses of the priests and Levites in the service of the Temple. He lowered the age at which the Levites entered upon their duties, from the thirtieth year, at which it had been fixed in Numbers iv., to the twentieth year. But this

* Isaiah xxii. 15—24.

† Isaiah xxii. 25.

‡ 2 Kings xx. 1—11.

§ 2 Chron. xxix—xxxi.

change was not approved by the Levites themselves ; and the new law of Numbers viii. fixes it at the twenty-fifth year. He placed a Levite, not a son of Aaron, in one of the most important posts, that of receiver of the tithes. This, indeed, is the first time that we have heard of the tithes in the kingdom of Judah since we were told in the Book of Samuel that they would be levied by the king for the expenses of his government. Under Hezekiah's new arrangements, they may have been collected with greater regularity than before. It would seem as if the tithe, having been at first a royal tax, was become a priestly tax, as we have seen it in the kingdom of Israel, from the simple circumstance that the influence of the priests was made use of in its collection. During the last century the throne, in its weakness, had so often received support from the Levites, that the Levites were becoming its masters. Any supply in money that the throne needed beyond the produce of the royal estates, required the help of the Levites for its collection ; and the Levites of the provinces may have been more willing that the tax should be gathered in, now that the produce was carried to the temple for safe custody, and their own order was allowed, with the priests, to have a control over its expenditure.* We shall hereafter see a number of new enactments introduced into the Mosaic Law, agreeably to the changes spoken of above. They seem to have been made to meet the lessened wealth of the people, which followed upon the Assyrian ruinous occupation of the country.

Hezekiah died after a troubled reign of twenty-nine years, leaving his throne to a child, probably a grandson, who had no choice but to be an obedient servant to Sennacherib.

The rebellion of Hezekiah against Assyria, may have been encouraged, as we have said, by the revolt of Babylon, a city which now rises into notice. It has not left to us such noble ruins to prove its high civilization as Egyptian Thebes and Assyrian Nineveh ; but in some sciences it was before them both. Its records of accurately observed eclipses are even now the foundation on which our ancient chronology rests. The earliest of these is an eclipse of the moon in Hezekiah's reign, in the first year of Mardoc Empadus who, in the latter years of Shalmanezzer's reign, held the

* 2 Chron. xxxi.

tributary throne of Babylon. He is called Berodach Baladan in the Bible. In the reign of Sennacherib this king declared himself independent, and instead of sending his tribute to Nineveh, sent a present to Hezekiah at Jerusalem, hoping that the weaker and more distant power might be a less troublesome friend than the Great King of Assyria. Babylon was becoming independent of Nineveh during the same centuries that Lower Egypt was becoming independent of Thebes ; and probably from the same causes. The changes in the arts of life, in the art of war, and in the course of trade, were now giving those advantages to the fertile plains nearer to the river's mouth that had belonged to the more inaccessible city nearer to the mountains. In Hezekiah's reign the Assyrians were the formidable enemies of the Jews ; but in one hundred years later the Babylonians will be their worse oppressors.

The ruinous occupation of the country by the Assyrians brought with it great political changes. Some of these are told by the historians ; and others we may safely imagine. The invaders had carried off all the cattle and all the moveable wealth that they could seize. For three years the fields had been untilled. The population had been lessened ; and when the Assyrians withdrew they left the cultivators of the soil miserable, and the priests and nobles in the cities reduced to poverty. By the end of Hezekiah's reign the great power of the priesthood was gone.

To the beginning of his reign, when the priests made atonement for the Temple, and purified it from his father's transgressions, we must give Leviticus xvi. which describes the ceremony, and then orders that it shall for the future be a yearly ceremony. One remarkable custom, which is to be used on such an occasion, is the releasing a goat, called the Scapegoat, into the desert to carry off the sins which are to be atoned for. This may be compared to the custom mentioned in chapter xiv., of releasing a bird to carry off with it the remains of the leprosy, when the disease seems healed. From the name of the scapegoat, Azazel, we learn that it had been originally a female, though the priests, for reasons of their own, now ordered that it should be a he-goat. The custom was most likely not an invention by the priests. They merely adopted an old superstition into their religious code. In after centuries the superstition

was again somewhat changed ; and the goat Azazel became a wicked demon haunting the desert. The Satyrs which were thought to be living in the desert may have grown out of this superstition.* In the Book of Enoch one of the wicked angels is named Azazel.

To the same time we may give Leviticus xvii., which forbids all sacrifices elsewhere than before the tabernacle of Jehovah, agreeably to Hezekiah's command to stop the sacrifices on the High Places. This law, if strictly interpreted, would have forbidden all eating of animal food at a distance from Jerusalem. The mistake is carefully corrected in Deut. xii. 15 and 21.

Psalms lxxxiii. may perhaps be given to the beginning of Hezekiah's reign, as it enumerates the several enemies that about the same time attacked the land of Judah, such as the Edomites, the Philistines, and the Tyrians, while the Assyrians also gave their help to the children of Lot, as it styles the Moabites and the Ammonites. The writer thus shows his acquaintance with the life of Abraham in the Book of Genesis, where Lot's parentage of Moab and Ammon is described. He had also read the Book of Judges, as we see by his knowledge of Deborah's and Gideon's wars. This Psalm seems to belong to a time when there was no warfare between Judah and Israel, and when Assyria having been the ally of Judah had not yet become its open and formidable enemy. This date for our Psalm is also made probable by its agreement with Isaiah xvii. 12—14, which the Psalmist had, perhaps, read.

There are also several of the Psalms which belong to a time a little later in the reign, and were written on the occasion of Sennacherib's invasion and retreat. Psalm xlv. rejoices in Hezekiah's new pool which supplied the city with water from the spring of the Gihon by means of pipes underground and therefore safe from being cut by the enemy :—

A river and its streams make glad the city of God,
And the holy place of the tabernacle of the Most High.
God is in the midst of her, she will not be disturbed.

On the retreat of the Assyrians, the people are invited to come out and note the tokens of disorder, which they had left behind on their hurried march :—

* Isaiah xiii. 21 ; xxxiv. 14.

Come, behold the doings of Jehovah,
 What an overthrow [of the enemy] he hath wrought in the land
 Making wars to cease unto the end of the land.
 He breaketh the bow, and cutteth the spear in sunder,
 He burneth the chariots in the fire.

Psalm xlviii. exults in the strength of the city, in the retreat of the threatening army, and in the destruction of the Tyrian vessels, which, as we learn from the Assyrian sculptures, were employed to carry supplies to the army of Sennacherib at the siege of Pelusium :—

Great is Jehovah, and greatly to be praised
 In the city of our God, on his holy mountain.
 Beautiful in height, the joy of all the land is mount Zion ;
 On the north side is the city of the great King.
 God is known in its palaces as a tower of defence.
 For, lo, the kings were assembled, they passed by at once.
 They saw it and so they marvelled ;
 They were troubled and fled away hastily.
 Fear took hold of them there,
 Pain, as of a woman in childbirth.
 Thou breakest the ships of Tarshish with an east wind.

Psalm lxxvi. describes the destruction of Sennacherib's army at the siege of Pelusium, and the appearance of the camp when the Egyptians entered it in the morning :—

The stout hearted had become a booty,
 They were dozing in their sleep,
 And none of the men of might found their hands :
 At thy rebuke, O God of Jacob,
 Both the rider and the horse were cast into a deep sleep.

In this Psalm Jerusalem is called Salem, a name by which it is nowhere else called except in the life of Abraham.

Psalm lxxviii. was written after the northern kingdom was destroyed ; as God

Forsook the tabernacle of Shiloh,
 The tent in which he had dwelt among men,
 And delivered its strength into captivity.

It was written after the High Places had been declared blameable ;

For they provoked him to anger by their high places,
 And moved him to jealousy by their graven images ;

but before the captivity of Judah, and the destruction of the temple of Jerusalem ; as

He chose the tribe of Judah,
Mount Zion which he loved ;
And he built his sanctuary like a citadel,
Like the earth which he hath established for ever.

It may be compared to the Book of Hosea, which it is like in its blame of Ephraim, and in its use of early history.

For the history of Hezekiah's reign we are in part indebted to the writings of the Prophet Isaiah. He began writing in the reign of Ahaz ; and we have already had to notice the first nine chapters of the Book bearing his name. The remainder of Isaiah's writings begin at chap. x. 5, and end with chap. xxxix. The chapters that follow these are by various later authors ; and even out of those which we are now giving to Isaiah we must except large portions which are easily recognized as relating to the Babylonians and the later centuries.

Of Isaiah's writings, chap. xxiii. is a lament, with some little boast, over Tyre, the Fortress of the Sea, whose revenue is the corn seed of the Sihor, or Nile ; and over Sidon, which is to be ruined by the Assyrians, as Chaldea has been ruined by them ; while Tarsus is henceforth to be free, and to spread abroad like the Nile when it overflows. Chap. xxviii. is a reproach to the northern tribes for their not following Jehovah, with a warning that they will be over-run by a great conqueror, Shalmanezzer ; and also a warning to the rulers in Jerusalem, who think that they shall escape the destruction by a treaty made with Death and Hell, probably that with Egypt. But Jehovah will destroy the invaders as David destroyed the Philistines. Chap. xxix. contains a lament for Jerusalem : " Woe to Ariel, Ariel, [or the Lion of God] the city where David dwelt, it shall be to me an Ariel [or hearth of God]" ; but it also contains a promise that the invading enemy shall not be successful. Chap. x. 5—34, is an eloquent threat of woe against the Assyrian king Sennacherib, who is described as a rod in the hand of Jehovah to punish the Israelites, but who is rising in rebellion against God, with as little reason as if the axe should boast itself against the hand that holds it. It describes him as smiting Judea on his way to attack Egypt ;

but it threatens that Jehovah will smite him on the way to Egypt. It describes his route; having come from Damascus, "He is come to Aiath [the Ai or Aim of the Hebrews], he hath crossed over [the Jordan] to Migron; at Michmash he hath laid up his baggage; they have passed through the passage; * * * he shaketh his hand against the Mount of the daughter of Zion, the hill of Jerusalem." Chapters xiv. 24—xvii. is a threat against the Assyrians; against the Philistines; against Moab; against Petra the capital of Edom, then under the rule of Moab, which shall again send its tribute of rams and wool; against Damascus, which shall be ruined together with Ephraim; and against the rabble of smaller tribes. Chap. xxii. mentions the flight of the rulers out of Jerusalem at the time of the siege; the king was no doubt among the fugitives. It contains a warning to the inhabitants of Jerusalem that while preparing for the siege of their city they should also look for help to Jehovah who made it; and a threat that Hezekiah's favourite minister Shebna shall be put aside for Eliakim, who is to keep his power in the palace like a nail fastened in a sure place. But it would seem that Eliakim's power did not last long. A later writer added a verse to say that "the nail in a sure place" shall be removed. Eliakim's power may have ceased when Hezekiah ceased to follow the wishes of the priestly party. Lastly, chapters xxx. and xxxi. contain a threat against those who desert their country and go down into Egypt as a place of safety, particularly against the inhabitants of the southern parts of Judea, the Beasts of the South Country, as they are called, who on many occasions showed themselves little zealous for the nation's welfare. Here the nickname of Rahab, *the Boaster*, is given to Egypt for its holding out false hopes of help against the Assyrians, "For Egypt is vanity, and will help to no purpose; therefore have I named it the Boaster that sitteth still." The Egyptian little horned serpent, and the fabulous flying serpent are both here mentioned.

Chapters xxxvi.—xxxix. are a portion of history relating to what was perhaps the second Assyrian invasion, and to Hezekiah's illness. It is the same as what we read in our Book of Kings, but it adds a poetical prayer written after the captivity in Babylon in the name of King Hezekiah; and it omits all mention of the first invasion

and of Hezekiah's sending his treasure as a tribute to the king of Assyria, an act of humiliation particularly painful to every man of patriotic feelings. Isaiah had written a history of his own times, embracing about half a century. An earlier portion relating to the reign of Uzziah is spoken of in the Chronicles ; but this latter portion relating to Hezekiah is all that now remains to us. To this, however, has been added a part of xxxix. in the form of prophecy relating to the captivity in Babylon. Isaiah had read the Book of Judges, and mentions out of it the slaughter of the Midianites at the rock of Oreb.

Other large parts of the Book of Isaiah we put aside for the present, as having been written by other authors and at various later times. If we except a few inserted sentences, these later writings seem to have been added to the Book by the blunder of the scribes ; it does not appear that the authors meant to pass off their writings as the work of the prophet Isaiah.

Difficult as it is to form an opinion of when the several large parts of the Pentateuch were written, still more difficult is it to see when the later additions in the middle of the narrative were made. But in numerous cases it is extremely easy to see that such sentences are after additions. Thus in the history of the descent of nations from Noah, the original writer had made the Arabs, Assyrians, and Babylonians, children of Ham ;* and perhaps brought from Shem only the Chaldees, Hebrews, and children of Abraham.† It is in contradiction to this that a later writer, in Genesis x. 22—xi. 9, makes Shem to be the father of the Elamites, the Assyrians, and of the Arabs, even to Hazramaveth or Hadramout in southern Arabia, and to Ophir on the Nubian coast, places that could hardly have been known to a Hebrew writer before the time of Solomon's voyage down the Red Sea. To this the writer was led by the study of language, by observing that most of these people spoke dialects of one common tongue, which might be called Arabic or Shemitic. He may have been led to class the Elamites in the same family of nations, by knowing that they formed part of the Assyrian army during Sennacherib's invasion of Judea.‡ Had he lived when they formed part

* Gen. x: 7—12.

† Gen. xi. 10—27.

‡ Isaiah xxii. 6.

of the Persian army under Cyrus, he might have classed them differently. This same study of language led him to find a reason or an occasion for the introduction of so many different languages into the world, or dialects into the Shemitic race; and this he did in the building of the tower of Babel. He derives his own nation not from Cheshed, the Chaldees, as that name had lately followed a forced migration of the people to the neighbourhood of Babylon, but from Arep-cheshed, a name which had not been carried southward.

In this account of the descent of nations the Arab races are said to dwell between Mesha, a town on the Persian Gulf, and the holy mountain Sinai, called "Sephar, the mountain which was of old." It is by the help of this name, Sephar, or *written*, called Shephar in Numbers xxxiii. 23, that travellers may now recognize Mount Serbal as the Mount of God spoken of in Exodus xix. Wady Mucatteb, the *sculptured valley*, is full of inscriptions cut on the face of the rocks; and similar inscriptions mark the pathway to the very peak of Serbal, cut there by pious pilgrims from Egypt who visited that holy spot.

But again, these Arab tribes, which one writer had made so distant from the Israelites as to call them children of Ham, and a second had brought nearer by calling them children of Shem, a third writer in Genesis xxv. 1—6 brought still nearer to the family of Israel by ranking them as children of Abraham. This later passage must be held to be contradictory to the original Life of Abraham, which certainly meant us to understand that he had only two sons.

The name of Mount "Sephar, the mountain which was of old," in this addition to Genesis x., leads to the opinion that the pious custom of visiting the holy spot, where the Law was said to have been delivered by Jehovah to Moses, was not new even in the time of Hezekiah. It was already called "the mountain which was of old." The Hebrew names, which we now read sculptured on the rocks, may have been cut many centuries after this reign; but the Jewish pilgrims who cut them were only following the custom of earlier pilgrims. By the time of Hezekiah the mount of God was already called Mount Sephar, or *written*; and Numbers xxxiii. 1—49 was certainly written by a traveller, who had walked over the ground from Egypt to

the holy mount, with the narrative of the Exodus in his hand, to which by his own observation as far as the mountain, and by the help of his imagination afterwards, he added the names of stations which are not in the older narrative.

The list of places at which the Israelites encamped on their route out of Egypt in Numbers xxxiii., is of a late date, and may here be mentioned. It seems to be more correct in its geography than the account in the earlier books, which by the map we may learn had been thrown into disorder. It shows that the encampment of the Israelites at the well-known burial-place of Taavah and then at Hazeroth, the *Village* of Paran, in Numbers xi. 34, 35, should be placed before the fall of Manna in the fertile valley of Paran in Exodus xvi. 13; and before the arrival at the Mountain of God, in Exodus xix. That this chapter was written by the help of our present books, which it enables us to correct, is shown from the fanciful names given to some of the stations. Thus Rissah, *dew*, is the place where "the dew lay around the camp," Exodus xvi. 13; Haradah, *tremblings*, is where "the people trembled," Exodus xix. 16; Makeheloth, *assemblings*, is where "they assembled themselves," Exodus xxxii. 1; and Tahath, *the bottom*, is "the bottom of the mountain," where Moses broke the Tables of the Law, Exodus xxxii. 19.

To an early part of Hezekiah's reign, when the northern Israelites fled from their homes, and some took refuge in the southern desert, we must give Genesis xx. and xxi., which describe Abraham as living in that neighbourhood, at Beer-sheba. It was written to support the right of the Israelites to the wells in that desert, a right which was denied to them by the herdsmen of the place. These chapters describe Abraham's falsehood in saying that his wife Sarah was his sister, and thus injure a character which the original writer held up for us to admire. But the Elohist writer did not accept Abraham as his hero; and chap. xxi. 33, which is Jehovistic, is probably a rather later addition.

One of the most remarkable additions to an early narrative is Genesis xiv. 1—16, which was written after Sennacherib's retreat from Judea, and was then woven into that part of the Life of Abraham, which was written in David's

reign. Sennacherib had retreated hastily, as described in the above-quoted Psalms, and, as it seemed, without a cause. He had probably been recalled by troubles in Babylon. The Jews followed his retreat even beyond Damascus, picking up the spoil which he left behind. And as though to laugh at the Assyrians, when the danger was over, the kings of Elam, of Ellassar or Assyria, of Shinar or Babylonia, and the king of Nations, are described, first, as attacking five little villages on the shores of the Dead Sea, and then as being defeated by Abraham's three hundred and eighteen servants, who pursue them beyond Damascus and pick up the spoil. The original narrative had described Abraham as defeating some enemies; but who those enemies were does not now appear, as the description of them has been removed to make way for the Assyrians.

Numbers ix. 1—14 also seems to belong to the reign of Hezekiah. It contains an answer to the question which arose when that king wished to celebrate the Passover, and when the preparations were not completed in time for the ceremony to take place in the month of Abib, at the spring equinox. This passage repeats the directions for keeping the Passover which had been first given in Exodus xii.; but it adds the further command that if at any time a man shall have been hindered from purifying himself for the occasion by the fourteenth day of the first month, then he shall keep the feast on the fourteenth day of the second month. To these chapters are naturally joined chapters vii. and viii., which describe the same gifts to the altar, and which, moreover, lower the age at which a Levite is to enter upon his duties, from his thirtieth year, at which it had been fixed in Numbers iv., to his twenty-fifth year. A part of chapter xvi., in which Korah the Levite is punished for claiming the rank of a priest, seems to have been written in blame of Hezekiah's giving to Kore, a Levite, the high post of having the charge of the holy things of the temple. "Ye take too much upon you, ye sons of Levi," said Moses. All that is woven very inconveniently into the blame of certain Israelites who claimed the rank of Levites.

The writings of the prophets Amos and Isaiah, which teach the little value of offerings and sacrifices, compared with moral duties, cannot have been pleasing to the priests, although they did not go so far as to teach that it was

unwise to make any offerings to the altar. Perhaps those prophets had not themselves arrived at such an opinion. They were proposing a religious reformation, but they were not proposing to quarrel with the priesthood. They may be compared to Luther at the beginning of his career, before he had written against the Papal authority. Whether, if the country had been left at peace, they would have had any followers who would have gone a step further, it is now in vain to conjecture ; but in the mean time came the Assyrian invasion under Sennacherib. This so lessened the wealth of the country, and the people's power to send up offerings to Jerusalem, that when these offerings came up in lessened quantities, the priests could hardly have thrown the blame on Amos and Isaiah.

The history of Balaam being asked to curse Israel, in Numbers xxii. and xxiii., cannot be more modern than this time, because it is quoted in Micah and in Deuteronomy ; and there are several words in it which forbid us to place it much earlier ; such as Parable for a poetical speech, Jacob and Israel as joint names of the nation, and Buffalo as a figurative name for Egypt.

Psalm lxxxvii., which uses Isaiah's name for Egypt, and calls it the Boaster, was probably of this time, while the poet could yet sing with pride of his country and its capital city. The writer of this last psalm says,—

I will allow mention of the boaster [or Egypt],
And of Babylon, to those that know me ;
Behold Philistia, and Tyre, and Ethiopia ;
[They may say] ' This man was born there.'
But of Zion it will be said,
' This and that man was born in her,
And her the Most High himself establisheth.'
Jehovah will count, when he writeth up the peoples,
' This man was born there.'

The writings of Isaiah make frequent use of a poetical name for the Hebrew nation, calling it the house of Jacob ; and the Psalms of Hezekiah's reign and later sometimes call the Almighty the God of Jacob. This name seems to have been made use of in order to avoid the confusion that often arose from the word Israel having two meanings, sometimes meaning the whole Hebrew nation, and sometimes the northern tribes only. Thus Isaiah says, in chap. ix. 8,

“The Lord sent a word unto Jacob (the twelve tribes), and it hath fallen upon Israel” (the northern tribes). But this attempt to escape from a misunderstanding was not very successful. Being introduced in opposition to the word Israel, some writers used it to mean Judah. Psalm lxxvii. describes the two halves of the nation as “Sons of Jacob and Joseph;” and Obadiah calls them “the house of Jacob and the house of Joseph.” But these Jehovistic writers seem by Jacob to mean Judah. Indeed it was soon found that the new name would bear a double meaning, quite as readily as the old name. Thus Hosea, a little later, calls the northern tribes Jacob, saying in chap. x. 11, “I will make Ephraim to carry a rider; Judah shall plow, and Jacob shall break the clods for him.” So also does Micah, saying, in chap. i. 5, “What is the transgression of Jacob, is it not Samaria? And what are the High Places of Judah, are they not Jerusalem?” But later still, on the return from the captivity, when the wish arose among some to cancel the distinction between the two halves of the nation, the writer of Isaiah xlv. 5, shows his wish that the names of Jacob and Israel should no longer have different meanings; he says, “One shall say, I am Jehovah’s, and he shall call himself by the name of Jacob; and another shall subscribe with his hand unto Jehovah, and surname himself by the name of Israel.” And yet later in Numbers xxiv. 17, and Psalm xxii. 23, the double name of Jacob and Israel is used with a careful wish to wipe out the distinction between the two halves of the nation. The only passages in which we find the two nations clearly and distinctly named are Zechariah x. 6, and Ezekiel xxxvii. 19, where they are called the house of Judah and the house of Joseph.

Chapters xxv.—xxix. of the Book of Proverbs, are said in the first verse to have been written in the reign of Hezekiah. They have not the regularity of the older parts of that book, and many of them show a more humane and less selfish spirit. They show that the moral feelings of the nation had been not a little softened in the last three centuries. Thus, we have not before met with such advice as, “If thine enemy be hungry give him bread to eat; and if he be thirsty give him water to drink;” or as, “Thine own friend and thy father’s friend forsake not;” or as, “He that hasteneth to be rich, will not be guiltless;” or as, “He that giveth to the poor will not lack.”

We know by the authority of Jeremiah, in chap. xxvi. 18, that the prophet Micah wrote in the reign of Hezekiah; but from Micah's own writings we could hardly learn it, as the tenor of his argument is very obscure. The tribute sent to Lachish, which Isaiah does not mention, Micah seems to point to when he says that in the chariot sent from that city were the transgressions of Israel, and that was the beginning of sin to Zion. The payment of the tribute brought no peace, and it was followed by the flight of the king and nobles from Jerusalem, "they pass through the city gate, and go out by it; and their king passeth before them, and Jehovah at the head of them." The Book of Micah shows a knowledge of the Books of Exodus and Numbers, quoting, in chap. vi., the doings of Moses, Aaron, Miriam, Balak, and Balaam. But short as is the work of Micah, even from this we must except some passages as by later hands. Such are chapters iv.—v., which were probably written after the people had returned from Babylon, and such is chapter vii., written perhaps during the discomfort on the return from captivity, excepting verses 11—13, written at a yet later time, when the walls of Jerusalem, were soon to be rebuilt by the permission of the king of Persia.

We must claim also for the reign of Hezekiah chapters ix. and x. of the prophecy of Zechariah. They were written against the land of Hadrach, perhaps Assyria, and against Damascus, its resting place, from whence its armies entered Canaan. The writer, who closely resembles Isaiah, boasts that Jehovah 'will encamp about his temple, against the army of the enemy, against it when it passeth by, and against it when it returneth.' He thus describes Sennacherib's double march through the land of Judea. The pride of Assyria is to be brought low, and the sceptre of Egypt to depart. No tribute collector is to remain in Judea, and Ephraim is to be brought home from captivity. Hence these chapters were written after the captivity of northern Israel, and after the Assyrians had retreated from Judea, and when the kingdom of Judah was again free from the invader. The historian, indeed, in the life of Hezekiah, does not tell us of that king having fled from Jerusalem on either occasion of Sennacherib's approach, but such a flight here seems spoken of, as the king is described as returning to Jerusalem, "just, having

been saved, lowly, and riding upon an ass." Out of these chapters, however, we must except ix. 11—17, the work of a very late time.

The prophecy of Hosea is of this time. It is a continual reproach against both halves of the Hebrew nation, but more particularly against Israel, for Jehu's murders at Jezreel, for forsaking Jehovah, and for looking to Assyria and Egypt for help. But it also contains promises that when the nation again seeks Jehovah she shall be forgiven. The people are blamed for sending tribute or bribes to Jareb, that is, to Sennacherib, king of Assyria; and they are warned not to worship at Beth-el, now nicknamed Beth-aven, or, *house of idolatry*; "Go ye not up to Gilgal, or to Beth-aven, nor swear as Jehovah liveth." We have seen in the book of Amos the same reproach thrown upon Gilgal and Beth-el, where some of the priests of Jehovah had settled, having been sent there from the captivity by the king of Assyria. When Hosea reproaches Ephraim as idolatrous, saying, "Thy Calf, O Samaria, hath cast thee off;" and when he quotes the southern proverbial reproach against the north, "Let them that sacrifice, being men, kiss the Calves;" we merely notice that the priests of Jerusalem thought all the northern priests idolatrous.

If we may understand Hosea iii. 2, as meaning that fifteen shekels of silver were equal to a homer and a half of barley, we should have barley worth about two shillings and a half the bushel. But the meaning of the passage is too doubtful for us thus to obtain the value of silver.

Hosea wrote after the captivity of Israel; because he asks in chap. xiii. 10, "Where is now thy king?" He is the only Hebrew writer who shows a knowledge of the pyramids of Egypt. Those wonderful tombs near Memphis seem to have been in his mind when he says, in chap. ix. 6, that if the people go down into Egypt, they will die there, and Memphis will bury them. His references to the early books of the Bible are numerous and important; as they tell us that such were already written, and in circulation. He quotes the book of Exodus for history, and also the book of Judges, the first book of Samuel, and the books of Kings. And he had read the account of Adam's disobedience in the beginning of Genesis. He advises the nation to call God not my Baal, *lord or master*, but my husband, a name meant to express

the same feelings which Christians cultivate when they address the Almighty as Our Father.

Hosea, speaking of the nation in its childhood, says, in chap. xi. 1, "I called my son out of Egypt." These words have been taken prophetically ; and critics are of opinion that they led to the belief that Jesus Christ had been brought out of Egypt, and that they were the cause for the narrative in the second chapter of Matthew's Gospel being written. By the same mode of reasoning we may suppose that these words made some editor of the Life of Abraham think it necessary to bring that patriarch out of Egypt ; and it was probably not till after the time of Hosea that Genesis xii. 10—xiii. 4, was written, in which Abraham is carried into Egypt, and then brought back again to Beth-el and Ai, from whence he went thither. The narrative is copied out of chapter xx., and it thus makes him a second time declare his wife to be his sister. The writers who added these chapters to the Life of Abraham have done much to injure his character.

In Genesis xxvi., Isaac is told by Jehovah not to go down into Egypt. Hence that would seem to have been written after chapter xii., which describes Abraham's journey into that country, and after Isaiah xxx. 6, had blamed the flight of the Jews into Egypt. This chap. xxvi. gives the sanction of the patriarch Isaac to the Altar to Jehovah at Beer-sheba, in opposition to the priests of Jerusalem. The few words in chap. xxi. 33, which give Abraham's sanction to the same Altar to Jehovah may also have been added at the same time to that Elohistic chapter. Beer-sheba at the very southern limit of Judea, in the desert between Judea and Egypt, had probably sheltered many Jews who had fled thither from Assyrian cruelty. This chapter was probably written by one of them, as we have supposed that chapters xx. xxi. had been written a little earlier by a man of northern Israel who had lived there.

MANASSEH KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 698—644.

Manasseh, the next king, called the son of Hezekiah, was only twelve years old when he came to the throne. The child mentioned in Isaiah ix., as heir to the kingdom, would by this time, had he lived, have been about thirty-five years old ; and hence he may have been the father of Manasseh,

and Manasseh the grandson of Hezekiah. Unlike some of the other kings who began their reigns in childhood, Manasseh seems to have fallen into hands strongly opposed to the priests. He allowed the worship on the High Places which Hezekiah had at one time stopped. This would seem a praiseworthy act in favour of the inhabitants who dwelt at a distance from Jerusalem. It left every person at liberty to carry his religious offerings to the priests in his own neighbourhood; but it thus lessened the income of the chief priests. In the struggle for wealth and power between the capital and the country at large, Hezekiah had in this matter at first taken the side of the priests and of the capital, but he had been forced to change, and had latterly governed according to the wish of the country party and the Levites. So the young Manasseh's advisers took the side of the country with its mixed races of people. For doing this the king was charged with encouraging idolatry of various kinds, and with copying the worship which had been introduced into Israel by Jezebel the Tyrian princess, the wife of Ahab, and with causing his son to pass through the fire. This last was a superstitious ceremony, first introduced by king Ahaz, which in this case can only have meant the making the boy jump, or perhaps even ride on horseback, through the flames, as a ceremonial purification, or to prove his sacred character.*

Manasseh's reign was quiet but not prosperous. He was, no doubt, wholly at the mercy of the king of Assyria, and paying such tribute to him as could be raised out of the ruined country. On failure of the tribute, or on some signs of disobedience, the king of Assyria, a successor of Sennacherib, probably Esarhaddon, sent an army against Jerusalem, and carried off Manasseh a prisoner to Babylon. This must have been after the conquest of Babylon by Esarhaddon B.C. 680. After a time Manasseh was released, and allowed to return to his kingdom, but of course to remain tributary to the king of Assyria. This is the third or fourth time that Jerusalem had been entered by a foreign army, and its temple plundered, since Solomon placed in it the golden Ark containing the Tables of Stone on which the Law was written. These misfortunes may explain how it was possible for the Ten Commandments, when hereafter

* 2 Kings xxi. 1—18.

copied into the Book of Deuteronomy, to be in part changed from those which we have seen in the Book of Exodus.

A few words inserted into the middle of a prophecy by Isaiah, chap. vii. 8, speak of a final destruction of Ephraim, a little less than sixty-five years after the death of Ahaz, or in the middle of Manasseh's reign, about B.C. 670. Perhaps at this time Esarhaddon, king of Assyria, carried off a further body of captives from Northern Israel, as we hear that he sent into the scantily peopled country some more Assyrian colonists. These new comers seem readily to have adopted the customs and even the religion of the country ; and two centuries later we find their children asking to be considered as Jews.*

Manasseh was released and sent home to govern Judea, of course in the belief that he would be an obedient servant to the king of Assyria. But if we are right in our dates, his return was very soon followed by the death of Esarhaddon. This may have released Judea from its bondage ; for we find that Manasseh was so far his own master that he very much strengthened the wall of Jerusalem on the north and east sides, from the north-west corner of the city, near the valley of the Gihon, to the Fishgate at the north-east corner, and thence round to the suburb Ophel, on the south side of the temple-yard. There he raised it to a very great height. Thus he would seem to be the builder, or rather the finisher of that gigantic piece of stone-work, which at the south-east corner of the temple-yard, rose out of the ditch to the height of one hundred and forty feet, built of stones as remarkable, even in the time of the apostles, for their size as the wall was for its height. Jotham had begun this part of the wall near Ophel, three reigns earlier ; and no doubt Ahaz and Hezekiah, while living in fear of the Assyrians, had also carried this great work forward ; but the Chronicler gives the chief share of it to Manasseh.

Manasseh after his return from Babylon, changed his policy ; he put away the idolatry which he had before encouraged, and repaired the altar in front of the House of Jehovah. But he did not stop the sacrificing on the High Places. The priests of Jerusalem had evidently lost

* Ezra iv. 2:

that power which in the reign of Hezekiah had for a time allowed them to require all burnt offerings to be sent up to Jerusalem.

During the latter half of Manasseh's reign Necho I. and then Psammetichus I. were kings of Egypt; and Assurbanipal, the effeminate Sardanapalus, the son of Esarhaddon was king of Nineveh.* We are not told that Manasseh suffered from these neighbours on either side.

Manasseh reigned fifty-five years, a longer period than that of any other of the kings. But he held his power with difficulty against frequent attempts at rebellion, made by the priestly party in Jerusalem. These were not crushed without the city being filled with blood from one end to the other. It is a reign of which we have very few particulars. This may in part be explained by supposing that for the greatest part of his life he continued, against the will of the priests an obedient vassal of the king of Assyria.† The Hebrew writers are agreed in blaming those kings who bought peace by paying a tribute, and in praising those who refused. But when we consider the overwhelming superiority of the invaders in men, in horses, and in weapons, and the certain misery which they brought on all the country, except Jerusalem and a few strong places, we see that resistance was rather an act of madness than of wise patriotism.

In the reigns of Ahaz and Hezekiah, when danger from the Assyrians was overhanging Judea, the prophets uttered many noble words of trust and encouragement; and when the Assyrians withdrew and the danger was over for a time, the poets wrote many Psalms of triumph and thankfulness. But afterwards when it was found by sad experience that all resistance to the overwhelming power of Sennacherib and Esarhaddon was useless, and the people had no choice but to yield their liberty, and to purchase their lives and peace by paying a tribute, the prophets were silent; and if the poets yet wrote any Psalms they are free from all mention of public events. Hence we can give no writings to Manasseh's long reign.

The words in Isaiah vii. 8, spoken of above, foretelling a further misfortune to Ephraim are our earliest example of the corruption of the prophetic writings by a pretended

* G. Smith's History of Assurbanipal. † 2 Chron. xxxiii. 1—20.

prophecy written after the event. They spoil the sense of the passage. Unfortunately we shall meet with many more such before the end of our history. It may seem an ungracious task to discover such a blot in writings which we value so highly. But by its discovery the blot is removed. When the alloy is taken away the pure metal shines the brighter.

AMON, KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 643, 642.

Amon, the son of Manasseh, reigned but two years, when he was slain by his servants, who had conspired against him. It would appear as if the cause of this revolution was the king's not walking in the way of Jehovah, or in other words, not according to the will of the priests ; for his death, which was caused by the people of the capital, was immediately revenged by the people of the country, who put the conspirators to death, and gave the crown to Josiah, Amon's son, a child of eight years old.*

JOSIAH, KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 641—611.

For the first eight years of Josiah's reign we have no events recorded ; we may suppose that he was tributary to the king of Assyria, and that he was governed by the country party which had put him on the throne, the party opposed to the high priests and nobles in Jerusalem. The country people who dwelt in the open villages, were naturally those who most dreaded invasion, and were most willing to purchase peace by a tribute. But in the eighth year of his reign Josiah changed his policy, and put himself into the hands of the priests. This change was made at a time when the Assyrian power was weakened by a war with Babylon. In his twelfth year Josiah began to stop the sacrifices on the High Places in favour of the temple of Jerusalem.† But in so doing he seems to have acted with moderation. The inhabitants of Jerusalem and the men of Judah had lost their chief cause of quarrel when the fear of invasion was over. And Josiah perhaps limited his attack to those High Places where the worship had been idolatrous. The priests of the other High Places continued to serve and be served at their own altars.‡

* 2 Kin i xxxi. 19—26.

† 2 Chron. xxxiv. 1—5.

‡ 2 Kings xxiii. 1—9.

Josiah at the same time defiled Topheth in the Valley of Hinnom, on the south side of Jerusalem.* This was a spot which had been lately treated as an altar, on which fires were lighted, and where children were made to pass through the flames, perhaps originally as a ceremonial purification, but sometimes to cause their death. The superstitious ceremony had been introduced by Ahaz, and had been practised by Manasseh, perhaps only for sons. Those two kings did not thereby kill their sons. But when the common people adopted the superstition, it seems to have been used as a cloak for child-murder, for sons and daughters alike. In Deuteronomy, written in Josiah's reign, it is forbidden only as a superstition, together with divination and serpent-charming.† But Josiah did not succeed in stopping it; and Jeremiah, writing only a few years later than the publication of Deuteronomy, says that the children were really burnt to death.‡ This shocking practice tells us of the misery of the people who could be driven to such an unnatural crime; and the manner in which it was spoken of, when the word "fire" was dropt, and it was called "passing the children through to Moloch," leads us to fear that it had become sadly common.§

In the eighteenth year Josiah set himself to repair the House of Jehovah, as the repairs of the Temple by Manasseh seem to have been confined to the fortifications of the temple-yard. He was now able to gather in money for this holy purpose from the northern half of the country, where the sway of the foreigners was weakened, as well as from his subjects in Judea. From the words of the prophet Jeremiah, we may suppose that the Holy of Holies no longer held the Ark which had been called the seat of Jehovah; as he tells the people to forget it altogether, for not the Ark but the city of Jerusalem is Jehovah's throne.|| As it was necessary for this sacred chest to have a golden cover, it was naturally carried off every time that Jerusalem was plundered; and there may have been no Ark in the temple since Manasseh was carried prisoner to Babylon. The Chronicler says that Josiah again placed an Ark in the Holy

* 2 Kings xxiii. 10. † Deut. xviii. 10. ‡ Jerem. vii. 31.

§ Jerem. xxxii. 35.

|| Jerem. iii. 16, 17.

of Holies.* From Jeremiah's words we should think this doubtful ; but if true the priests can have had no difficulty in copying from the Book of Exodus on to new stones the Ten Commandments, in the old words so far as they wished.

At that time the king was very much governed by men of remarkable intelligence and liberality ; Hilkiash, the high-priest, the father of Jeremiah, and Achbor, and Shaphan, the king's scribe, or secretary of state, of whose family we shall hear more hereafter. From after events we learn that these men did not follow the narrow priestly policy, which for two centuries had made a quarrel between the people of the country and the priests of Jerusalem. When the workmen were repairing the Temple of Jehovah, Hilkiash sent word to the king by Shaphan that he had there found a Book of the Law. To Hilkiash and Shaphan we seem to owe chapters iv. 44—xviii. 8, and chapters xxviii. —xxx. of Deuteronomy. These chapters support Hezekiah's policy of forbidding all sacrifices, except at one only place ; but on the other hand they declare the little value of all such sacrifices ; and they enact that when the Levites of the country come up to the capital they shall share equally with the priests, and they thus overthrow the power of the one family which had hitherto held that rank. Rivalry and jealousy may have had some share in writing these laws ; but they were for the most part an improvement on the old laws. Shaphan carried the book to the king, and read some sentences to him out of it. These were passages which threatened God's wrath upon the nation for their sins and idolatries ; and they caused great alarm in the king's mind. The book was called the Book of the Covenant, and the words which are either quoted or referred to are contained in our Book of Deuteronomy. We thus learn when part at least of the Book of Deuteronomy was first made known, and we may say, when it was written.

The king then commanded the priests to inquire of Jehovah what was to be done ; and strange to say they went to take the advice of Huldah, a prophetess ; and she repeated the threats contained in the newly found book against the people for their forsaking Jehovah.† They may have chosen her as their adviser because of her ignor-

* 2 Chron. xxxv. 3.

† 2 Kings xxii.

ance, as it has been often thought by the superstitious that the utterances of those who have no human knowledge are most likely words from heaven. Josiah then summoned the people to meet him in the courts of the Temple, where he stood upon his pillar and read to them out of the book; and the people all undertook to obey the laws therein written, and to walk after Jehovah. Josiah had all the idolatrous vessels and altars removed out of the temple, with the image of the goddess Ashera, and the statues of horses to the chariot of the sun which stood at one of the gates to the temple-yard.

Josiah then celebrated the Passover in Jerusalem with great splendour and ceremony; such a Passover, says the historian, had never before been kept in all the days of the kings of Israel and Judah. This, however, may not have stopped the celebration of the feast in the various cities throughout the country.*

The publication of Deuteronomy marks a decline of the priests' power. When the priests were most powerful it is true that they wrote the ceremonial laws in Exodus, Leviticus and Numbers; but they wrote them only for their own use. Those laws had not been written for the people; and but few of the people could have been able to read them if they had been made public. The priests never quoted the laws as an authority; they were themselves the only authority in religious matters. But latterly the prophets also had undertaken to declare the will of Jehovah, by simply appealing to every man's conscience and good sense. The speeches and writings of the prophets had made more inquirers and more readers. The priests therefore, perhaps unwillingly, had to make the same appeal to the people. For this the laws in the older books were unsuitable; and though referred to in Deuteronomy they are now put forward in a new and amended form, a form written for the people. The publication of this new book looks like an attempt by the priests to regain from the prophets some of the weight which they had been slowly losing. Before this time the laws would seem to have been for the use of the priests alone; but now the priests think that they can strengthen their declining power by appealing to a written sacred volume. When Deuteronomy was brought out of

* 2 Kings xxiii. 1-23.

the temple, the other books of the law, though not mentioned, were probably not kept back, but simply thought less suitable to be read to the king and the public. Indeed Jeremiah tells us that the Law of Jehovah, meaning probably the older books, was already being circulated by the pen of the scribes, and that the people boasted of it as a national possession.*

When Josiah's servants were repairing the Temple they paid the workmen's wages in silver ; and in order to do so they melted the metal, to divide it into small sums.† This is the nearest approach to modern money that we have yet met with ; but we must not suppose that the silver was made into real coins, each marked with figures or characters by which its value was shown. That was a convenience not known to the world till some time later, and not known to Judea till the time of the Maccabee princes. Hitherto, and for some time longer, the precious metals were paid away and received by weight ; the shekel was a weight not a coin, but yet it might be convenient to melt the silver into small lumps before paying it away.

It was in the year B.C. 625, the year before that of which we have been speaking, that Babylon again threw off the yoke of Nineveh. It had before done so in the reign of Hezekiah, when Berodach Baladan refused to send up his tribute, but it had afterwards sunk before the stronger power ; and Esarhaddon in the middle of Manasseh's reign pushed aside its king, and united it to the Assyrian crown. But now by some revolution, about which history gives us no hint, the Chaldees, who as we have supposed, had been brought by the Assyrians from the north, and placed as colonists and bond servants in the neighbourhood of Babylon, rise into rank and power. We find a Chaldee dynasty seated on the throne of Babylon ; and Nabopolassar, a Chaldean, again makes Babylon independent, and aims at the conquest of Nineveh.

This war between Babylon and Nineveh for a few years left king Josiah without a master. But it was only for a few years. Assyria and Egypt had each for a century past thought themselves equally entitled to receive a tribute from the Hebrew nation, and we shall presently see that as

* Jerem. viii. 8.

† 2 Kings xxii. 9.

soon as Jerusalem had nothing to fear from Assyria, it was in equal danger of being conquered by Egypt.

And here we remark on the changed use of the word Chaldean in the Bible. It had been the name of a tribe placed by Strabo the geographer at the sources of the Euphrates, between Armenia and Syria,* from which country tradition had brought Abraham southward. But from the time of Nabopolassar, a Chaldean is another name for a Babylonian ; and by a second change, before the end of our history, after the Greek conquest of the country, the Sooth-sayers of Babylon are the only people known to us as Chaldeans.

In the meantime a new and unexpected trouble burst over Judea. This was an inroad of Scythians, who coming down from Tartary, from the northern and eastern sides of the Caspian Sea, had some of them poured over Media, and some turned upon Asia Minor, while a third body had marched through Josiah's kingdom on their way to Egypt. These last plundered and laid waste the open country, while the frightened inhabitants fled to the walled cities. These the invaders had neither time nor skill to attack. They were turned back by the Egyptian king Psammetichus before they reached his country.† The desolation brought upon Judea by the Scythians seems described by Jeremiah. The description of these barbarians, and of the alarm which they occasioned, is among the most striking parts of Jeremiah's writings :—

Declare ye in Judah, and publish in Jerusalem, and say, “Blow ye the trumpet in the land.” Cry with a full voice, and say, “Assemble yourselves, and let us go into the fenced cities.” Set up the standard toward Zion ; flee in haste, stay not ; for I will bring evil from the north, and a great breaking up. The lion is come up from his thicket, and the destroyer of nations has moved his camp. He is gone forth from his place to make thy land desolate ; and thy cities shall be laid waste without an inhabitant.‡

And again :—

Lo, I will bring upon you a nation from far, O house of Israel ; Jehovah hath said it. It is a mighty nation, it is an ancient nation, a nation whose language thou knowest not, neither understandest thou what they say. Their quiver is as an open sepulchre, they are all warriors. And they shall eat up thy harvest and thy bread,

* Strabo. XII. iii. 28, 29 ; Xenop. Anab. IV. iii. 4.

† Herodotus, I. 104. ‡ Jerem. iv. 5—7.

which thy sons and daughters should eat ; they shall eat up thy flocks and thy herds ; they shall eat up thy vines and thy fig trees ; they shall break down thy fenced cities, wherein thou trustest, with the sword.*

These invaders are again described in Deuteronomy, in nearly the same words :—

Jehovah will bring up against thee a nation from far, from the ends of the earth flying as an eagle, a nation whose tongue thou shalt not understand, a nation of fierce countenance, which will not regard the person of the old, or show favour to the young.†

The historians of this reign do not mention these enemies by name. But we learn from Ezekiel, chapter xxxix., that these barbarians, whom he speaks of under the name of Gog of the land of Magog, on reaching the southern end of the country, not attempting to cross the desert into Egypt, turned northward along the shores of the Mediterranean Sea, and there perished on the road, no doubt because supplies and plunder both failed them.

Together with the Scythians another distant nation now comes forward to our notice, namely the Medes, whose capital city was Ecbatana, situated between the river Tigris and the Caspian Sea. They were invited by the Babylonians to join in a revolt against their common enemies the Assyrians of Nineveh. With the Medes came also the Persians ; and even the distant Bactrians, who may have been a race of Scythians, rushed to the overthrow of the last king of Assyria. The history of the Medes and their rise is obscure. From the Greek historian, however, joined to the Assyrian inscriptions in the cuneiform character, we glean that this king of Assyria was Assurbanipal the son of Esarhaddon, the Sardanapalus of the Greeks, whose luxurious effeminate character readily explains his overthrow.‡ But the Babylonian annals are more accurate ; and from them and the Hebrew writings we learn that in the thirtieth year of Josiah's reign, B.C. 612, Nineveh was conquered by Nabopolassar, the Chaldee king of Babylon.

Great was the joy of the Jews. For more than one hundred years their sufferings had come from the Assyrians. The northern tribes had been carried into captivity by them.

* Jerem. v. 15—17.

† Deut. xxviii. 49, 50.

‡ Diod. Sic. ii. 23—27. Smith's History of Assurbanipal.

The southern tribes had been repeatedly invaded by them, and had suffered severely from their cruelty and their exactions ; and the woe with which Isaiah and the other Hebrew prophets had threatened them had now fallen upon them. Nineveh was conquered, and Judea was free from all foreign tribute, and the northern tribes had now no master. Josiah was able to enforce the wishes of his priests, so far as to stop the sacrifices at the High Places throughout Samaria. The altar at Beth-el, the particular object of their dislike, was then destroyed, and its priests put to death. Josiah for the moment may have had dreams of making his kingdom, like Solomon's, reach from the Euphrates to the southern desert, as the northern and eastern tribes had now no master. But he had neither strength nor time for such a conquest. Short was the relief even to his own subjects. In the very next year the Egyptian army entered the country, to take possession of such plunder as the Assyrians had left for them.

Egypt had latterly undergone many changes, and at this time the city of Sais, on the west side of the Delta, was the seat of government. Sais was a city as much Greek as Egyptian ; Greek traders had settled in large numbers on that side of the Delta ; the kings of Sais had introduced not only Greek letters but Greek arms and discipline, and they usually had a body of Greek mercenaries in their pay. These Greek soldiers were far superior to any soldiers of the surrounding nations, and they gave a superiority to every king that engaged their services. At present we hear of them only in the Egyptian army, but within a century we shall find them holding the front post even in the Persian armies.

Psammetichus, who was king of Egypt at the time of the late inroad of the Scythians, was succeeded by Necho II. shortly before the overthrow of Assyria ; and the ruin brought upon that country by Babylon was probably the cause of his now venturing upon such a great undertaking as his march to the river Euphrates. His aim was not to attack Jerusalem. At the moment he meant no further injury to Josiah's kingdom than to let his soldiers live upon it as they passed through it. He probably brought his army by sea, and he was on his route from the coast to Carchemish on the Euphrates, and had reached Megiddo,

sixty miles to the north of Jerusalem, when Josiah rashly led his forces against him. The Jews were defeated in the battle, Josiah was slain by an archer, and his body carried back to Jerusalem to be buried. Josiah, during the larger part of his reign, had been governed by the priests ; and they said that Jehovah overthrew him for the sins of his father, Manasseh, whose opposite line of policy had saved his country from ruin during his long reign.*

The quiet reign of Josiah was as eventful in Hebrew literature as in the politics of the neighbouring nations. A large part of the Book of Deuteronomy as we have said was then written ; beginning at chap. iv. 44. It is a new and corrected edition of the Mosaic law. The changes which may be noted in it, when we compare it with the older form of the law, mark the nation's advance in civilization, and its better views of religion. It begins with a slight mention of the former narrative of the march, and thus it does not need the four introductory chapters which have been added to it. In what we must consider the original portion of the book no mention is made of Joshua and Caleb ; their names had not yet been introduced into the narrative.

The speeches in this more modern book of the law are put into the mouth of Moses, and Jehovah no longer appears as himself uttering the commands. In the Ten Commandments the Sabbath is to be kept, not because God created the world in seven days, but because he brought the nation out of the land of Egypt. Wrong thoughts as well as wrong deeds are now forbidden. The former Command had said "Thou shalt not covet," or try to seize what is not thine own ; but the newer law says "Thou shalt not desire thy neighbour's wife." The people are ordered to love Jehovah, their God, with all their heart, and with all their soul (vi. 5) ; a command more nearly approaching Christianity than any we have before met with. God's punishments are looked upon as a father's chastisement for our amendment (viii. 5). The threats against the Canaanites are repeated from Exod. xxiii. ; but now that the conquered race has been wholly woven into that of their masters, the threats are made more violent because they hurt nobody ; the Canaanites are not, as before, to be driven out year by year, and little by little,

* 2 Kings xxiii. 26—30 ; 2 Chron. xxxv. 20—27.

but they are to be wholly destroyed, together with their images, and groves of Ashera (vii).

The attempt made by Hezekiah and Josiah to put down the worship on the High Places is strongly enforced, and all offerings are to be made and feasts to be observed in The Place which Jehovah shall choose for the dwelling-place of his name, that is in Jerusalem. The distinction between Sons of Aaron and Levites is denied ; all the tribe of Levi are called priests ; and when they come up to The Place which Jehovah shall choose, they are to have like duties and like portions with those who dwell there (xviii. 1—8). The three great feasts, namely, the Passover or Unleavened Bread, the Feast of Weeks or First Fruits, the Feast of Ingathering, which is now called the Feast of Tabernacles, are to be kept at The Place, and not in any other city (xvi. 1—17). This command in Deuteronomy is in direct contradiction of the old law, that every family should keep the Passover at home. Many passages in this book tell us of the lessened wealth of the people since the Assyrian occupation of the country. The classes which do not themselves produce wealth were the chief sufferers ; and the Levites are now counted among the poor who need relief. The Levites are no longer able to claim the tithe as their own. It is to be eaten as a peace offering or love feast by the owner and his household and the poor Levite ; not at home, but at The Place xii. 17—19. And even this command is afterwards made yet lighter to the owner, when it is ordered that the tithe of the first and second year only is to be brought up to The Place, to be eaten there before Jehovah by its owner, his household, and the Levite (xiv. 22—29). The tithe of the third year may be eaten at home, but like that of the other years, it is to be shared with the Levite, the stranger, the fatherless, and the widow (xiv. 28—29). Hence it is evident that the rulers, whether king or priests, had not been able to levy this land-tax, which had at first been claimed by the king, and then by king and priests jointly. The collecting of the tithe would seem to have wholly ceased before it was ordered to be brought up to Jerusalem in this very unoppressive way.

A slight is thrown on some of the laws which in the Book of Exodus follow the Ten Commandments, by the writer's saying that when Jehovah delivered the Commandments

“he added no more” (v. 22). The Gifts to the altar, the Burnt Offerings, Sacrifices, Tithes, Heave Offerings, Vows, Freewill Offerings, and Firstlings, though not described, are ordered to be duly paid (xii. 6). This shows a full acquaintance with the Book of Leviticus. Permission is given to eat animal food in any city (xii. 21). This permission was needed, because Leviticus xvii. seemed to have forbidden it.

The law about clean and unclean animals, which in Leviticus is laid down in general terms, is here made more clear by the animals being named (xiv). And a doubt seems to have arisen about the hart and the roebuck, or gazelle, which as being wild could not have been seen to chew the cud, and thus were thought not wholly clean. Hence it was ordered that, like a lame animal, they might be eaten, but might not be sacrificed to Jehovah (xvii. 1, continued by a few words at the end of xii. 15.)

Chapters xviii. 9—xxvii. seem to be of a later date. Chapters xxviii.—xxx. contain the threats read to King Josiah.

Deut. xxix. 23 mentions the overthrow of four villages, Sodom and Gomorrah, Admah and Zebiiim, as if all overthrown at one time by Jehovah's wrath. But the early tradition in Gen. xix. only speaks of Sodom and Gomorrah as so destroyed; and from Hosea xi. 8 it would seem as if Admah and Zebiiim had been destroyed at a much later time. Now travellers are of opinion that the bed of the Dead Sea has been slowly and gradually sinking, and causing a rise of the waters over the neighbouring shore. This may have brought about the slow destruction of Admah and Zebiiim, without its being noticed in the history. When at last Admah and Zebiiim were quite destroyed by the water, it is not remarkable that they should be classed with Sodom and Gomorrah, as if all destroyed at the same time, and for the same reason.

There are two passages in this book which seem much better fitted for an earlier part of the monarchy than either for the reign of Josiah, or for any later time. Thus chap. xvii. 14—20, after telling the people not to choose a foreigner for their king, gives some advice how he should govern, that he should not multiply his horses and wives, and silver and gold, and that he should write for himself a copy of this law out of the book which is laid up with the priests. This

advice seems as if meant for Solomon, and may have been copied from the book which we have spoken of in his reign, and which was said to have been written by Samuel, containing "the manner of the kingdom." The other passage is chap. xx., which contains advice about foreign conquests, and the siege of cities at a distance. This may well have been borrowed from a book written when David's wars were fresh in the writer's memory; but is very unsuitable for the nation in its weakness.

The few words containing part of the march of the Israelites, in Deut. x. 6, 7, are clearly out of place. They belong to the earlier narrative; and by the help of Numbers xxxiii. we may conclude that they should stand somewhere between Exodus xxxii. and Numbers xiii.

To the reign of Josiah, after the Book of Deuteronomy had been written, rather than to the reign of Hezekiah, we must give Numbers xxviii., xxix., which describe the offerings which ought to be brought to the altar, and the national celebration of the several feasts. The Book of Deuteronomy had, for the first time, ordered a national celebration of the Passover, forbidding its celebration in other cities; and it had also for the first time told us of the Feast of Weeks, when it was to be celebrated, and why it received that name; and these chapters give directions about that feast, and the national celebration of the other feasts, as though the reader was well acquainted with such a national celebration. They also fix the fast to the tenth day of the seventh month. This was nearly the same as fixing it to a given day of the week. Since the first day and the fifteenth day were always sabbaths, the tenth day never could be so. This arrangement was brought about by allowing some weeks to have eight days. From the command that the fifteenth day and the twenty-second day of the tenth month, the Sabbaths with which the Feast of Tabernacles begins and ends, should be days of restraint from work, we learn how little the more general command to keep the Sabbath holy was at this time attended to, except in the matter of sending the required gifts to the priests.

Here we seem to have bid farewell to the ceremonial additions to the Mosaic Laws in Exodus, Leviticus, and Numbers. These laws were for the guidance of the priests and Levites, and were not addressed to the people at large.

They were meant to uphold and increase the importance of the priests of Jerusalem, and often at the cost of the Levites throughout the rest of Judea ; and they lessened the comfort of the scattered flocks of worshippers. After the Assyrian invasion in Hezekiah's reign, the strength of both parties was changed ; and the later laws in Deuteronomy, and the latter chapters of Leviticus, favour the equality between the priests and Levites, and are mostly moral and social. The Mosaic laws teach us that an established body of priests is by no means an unmixed good. The Jews were a very religious people ; and their religious earnestness was the creator of the priesthood, not the priesthood of the religious earnestness. The Psalms are full of devotional feeling, and full also of encouragement to offer prayer and thanks to God. The writings of the prophets also give encouragement to the same religious duties. But the priests were too eager for their own importance and power to advise any man to address his Maker except through their hands. From the first to the last of the Mosaic laws there is no encouragement whatever given either to prayer for blessings desired, or to thanks for blessings received, except through the sacrifices at the altar on Mount Moriah. This is shown even in the language. "To fill a man's hands," that is to give him something to carry to the altar, of which a part would be his own, are the words used for "to consecrate him as a priest."

In the reign of Josiah, when he may for a year or two have thought himself king of both halves of the nation, was probably written Numbers xxvi. 4—62, containing a second register of the twelve tribes. It seems to be compiled by the help of the former register in chapter i. That it was not written much before this time appears from its speaking of the death of Nadab and Abihu, which is described in Leviticus x. It differs from the former register by giving the names of the families which came out of Egypt ; and thus like the so-called Roll of Battle Abbey, it sheds honour upon those living when it was written. But the writer can have had but poor authority for the names in most of the tribes ; as at no time after Solomon's death can a joint survey of both halves of the nation have been made, and we have no trace in it of those families which were of importance in David's and Solomon's reigns. Half a century after Josiah's reign all

knowledge of most of these families was swept away by the Captivity. Two only—the Pharezites and the Zarhites, are then known to us. In this register neither Joshua nor Caleb are mentioned. Joshua's name had not yet been brought into the narrative of the march out of Egypt, or at least he was only known as Oshea, not yet as Jehoshua. This forbids our placing this register of the families much later.

The Book of Nahum also is of this time, and its noble heart-stirring eloquence, not even falling below that of Joel, well declares the excitement of the time, the hopes and fears raised in Jerusalem, when the news reached that city, of Nabopolassar's successful attack on Nineveh

Jehovah is slow to anger, and great in power, and he will not wholly acquit. Jehovah hath his way in the whirlwind and in the storm, and the clouds are the dust of his feet.

Much of it must be read as an impassioned speech, spoken with action and change of voice, so that the hearers should know who was spoken of even when not named,

With an overflowing torrent he will make an utter end of the people thereof, and darkness shall pursue his enemies.

When the speaker says, "Though I have afflicted thee, I will afflict thee no more," a tender tone would show that Judah was addressed. Then an angry look would mark an address to the hated Nineveh,

Jehovah hath given a command against thee, that no more of thy name be sown. I will make thy grave, for thou art vile.

Behold upon the mountains the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace.

The destroyer is come up against thee [O Nineveh]. Guard the fortress, watch the road, make thy loins strong, fortify thy power mightily.

And [queen] Huzzab shall be taken captive; and her maidens shall sigh as with the voice of doves, beating upon their breasts.

The following passage is a fine example of the sublime in oratory, rising step by step from quiet to awful violence. Longinus would have admired it, and Quintilian would have thought it perfect. The speaker doubtless first by his action called upon his hearers to listen to the slight sounds at a distance, becoming louder as they grew nearer, until the noise of war-chariots was recognized. Then by a change of look he bade them strain their eyes and they would see the flash of the soldiers' polished weapons. Lastly he shud-

ders with exultation over the slaughter of the Assyrians.

Woe to the city of bloodshed, it is wholly false and full of robbery ; it letteth not the prey to escape.—There is the noise of a whip, and the noise of the rattling of wheels, and of prancing horses, and of jolting chariots.—The horseman lifteth up both the bright sword and the glittering spear.—And there is a multitude of slain, and a great number of carcasses, and no end of corpses. They stumble over their corpses.

Well might the nation rejoice over the city which for four generations had overrun their country and slaughtered the inhabitants without mercy. Well might the prophet say, "Nineveh is laid waste ; who will bemoan her ?" It remains uncertain whether Elkosh, the village in which Nahum lived, was in Galilee, or on the banks of the Tigris. If it was in the latter district, then the prophet was there in captivity, and he must have felt a double interest in watching the overthrow of his country's great enemy, and his own taskmasters.

JEHOAHAZ KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 610.

Great was the grief in Jerusalem for the death of Josiah and the defeat of the army by the Egyptians, heightened no doubt by disappointment. The people had enjoyed a few years of independence while Nineveh was being overthrown ; and Babylon had not yet risen to take its place as their oppressor, when this new danger burst upon them.

Shallum, the fourth and youngest son of Josiah, was at once declared king. He took the name of Jehoahaz, or *helped by Jehovah*. But his reign only lasted for three months. He had been chosen by the country party, called the men of the land, to the exclusion of his elder brothers, probably for political reasons. He was set up by those who wished to be friendly to the Assyrians. But resistance, whether attempted or not, was in vain against the Egyptian army. Necho came down to Jerusalem, deposed Jehoahaz, and carried him off as a prisoner, first to Hamath, in Syria, and thence to Egypt.

The Greek historian calls Jerusalem, Kadytis, meaning Kedesh, the *holy* city, a name often given to it. Necho set up in Jehoahaz's place his brother Eliakim as king, on Eliakim's consenting to govern as an obedient servant. Jehoahaz, or Shallum, remained a prisoner in Egypt till his

death.* He was carried to Egypt by sea, from some port on the Syrian coast to the mouth of the Nile; and this voyage seems spoken of in Deuteronomy xxviii. 68.

We have no reason to suppose that the Egyptians carried on warfare in the same cruel and destructive spirit as the Assyrians did. The Jews never speak against them with the same bitterness. They fought for tribute rather than for plunder. They did not wish to carry away the people as captives. But the soldiers of course lived upon what they could seize; and each invading army left the country poorer and weaker than before.

JEHOIAKIM KING OF JUDAH; B.C. 610—600:

Eliakim, when made king in his brother's stead by Pharaoh Necho, followed his brother's example, and changed his name to Jehoiakim. He changed it from *Supported by God*, to *Supported by Jehovah*. This was no doubt done to please the priestly party in the state. He was in everything a servant of the Egyptian king, and at his command he raised a heavy tribute from his people.†

The king of Egypt was not strong enough long to keep possession of Judea and its tribute. In the third year of Jehoiakim's reign, Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, or, if not yet king, acting as general for his father Nabopolassar, came out to struggle for that unhappy country. Necho sent an army to meet him. But the Egyptians were defeated by the Babylonians at Carchemish on the Euphrates, and Jehoiakim then bought off the plunder of his unhappy country by promising to become the tributary servant of Nebuchadnezzar. The Egyptians were wholly driven out of Canaan.‡

Nebuchadnezzar, when carrying off home the Jewish tribute, carried away also several Jewish children to be educated in Babylon, and to remain as slaves in his palace. Among these was Daniel.§ Of the after life of these young Jews we know nothing, as what we now read about them seems to be fable. All that we know is that Daniel while in Babylon made for himself a name, which, like that of

* 2 Kings. xxiii. 30—34; 2 Chron. xxxvi. 1—4; Jeremiah xxii. 11; Herodotus, ii. 159.

† 2 Kings xxiii. 35.

‡ Josephus, Ant. x. vi. 1; 2 Kings xxiv. 1—7. § Daniel i.

Solomon, became proverbial for wisdom, and like that of Noah proverbial for righteousness. Seven years after they had been taken to Babylon king Jehoiakim was put to death by the Babylonians, and his son and the Jewish nobles carried into captivity; and it is highly probable that Daniel, a trusted inmate of the palace, may have been able to do such services to his unfortunate fellow-countrymen that they may have looked upon him as the king of Babylon's chief adviser.

In the meanwhile, with these dangers hanging over the nation, with the grave doubt how they could be best avoided, whether by quiet submission to the Babylonians, or by a brave resistance, the quarrel between the two parties became very violent. The prophets, or any who ventured publicly to give advice, did so at the risk of their lives. Each party might naturally think that the other was bringing on the nation's ruin. Religion added earnestness to the struggle, for each party claimed to know the will of Jehovah; and the religious teacher put himself forward as the political adviser.

In the reign of Josiah the prophet Jeremiah had begun rebuking the people and the rulers for their sins, but in the fourth year of this reign he comes still more forward warning them, at the risk of his life from the priestly party, that they had forsaken Jehovah their God, and that their misfortunes were all brought upon them as a punishment. He advised submission to Babylon. Urijah was another prophet who was equally bold in blaming the rulers. He seems to have advised resistance to Babylon and friendship with Egypt; and his words gave such offence to the king and the princes of the other party that he had to flee into Egypt. There, however, he was by no means safe. Jehoiakim sent after him; Necho gave him up to the messengers, and he was brought back to Jerusalem and put to death. Jeremiah's words on the other hand offended chiefly the priests, and though his death was called for by his enemies, he was protected by the princes. Ahikam the son of Shaphan one of the nobles, whose family belonged to the party which advised quiet submission to the overwhelming power of Babylon, was on this occasion Jeremiah's good friend.* On another occasion Jeremiah was put in the stocks by the priest Pashur for advising submission to the Babylonians.†

* Jeremiah xxvi.

† Jeremiah xx.

But nothing daunted by this violence, he employed the hand of Baruch, his friend and scribe, who wrote down his words; and under the protection of one of the sons of Shaphan, Baruch read them to the people from a chamber of the Temple which overlooked the public court.*

Jehoiakim remained for three years obedient to Nebuchadnezzar, but in his seventh year he broke his promises, he was rash enough to rebel, and his falsehood and his rashness led to his ruin. Nebuchadnezzar again brought up an army against Jerusalem, and made himself master of the city. Jehoiakim had probably been encouraged to rebel against the Babylonians by the priestly party, who may have reckoned on receiving help from Egypt; but no help came from Psammeticus II., who was then on the throne of Sais. Jehoiakim was deposed in the eleventh year of his reign, so he may have been able to resist the Babylonians for two or three years. The first change in Jehoiakim's counsels, from being tributary to the Egyptians who put him on the throne, to being tributary to the Babylonians who defeated the Egyptians, was brought about by the chances of war. But his second change, his breaking his promise and attempting to be independent of the Babylonians, was his own unwise act, or the act of the priestly party around him; and it caused violent struggles, which, says the historian, filled Jerusalem with innocent blood, which Jehovah would not pardon. The Book of Chronicles tells us that Jehoiakim was carried off to Babylon; but this is contradicted by Jeremiah, who says that he was buried with the burial of an ass, after being dragged along and cast forth beyond the walls of Jerusalem.† The Book of Kings also, the more trustworthy of our two authorities, does not mention Jehoiakim's being carried captive to Babylon, but says that he slept with his fathers,

During the several attacks of the Babylonians upon Judea in the reign of Jehoiakim, the neighbouring peoples, the Moabites, the children of Ammon, and the Edomites, were all overrun; and the cities of Moab, which had been at rest since the invasion by Sennacherib, were plundered and destroyed. Their conquest by the Babylonians is described in Jerem. xlviii. and xlix., but without order of events.

* Jeremiah xxxvi. † 2 Kings xxiii. 34—xxiv. 7; 2 Chron. xxxvi. 5—8; Jeremiah xxii. 19.

From the title of Pasha of Moab, which we meet with soon after this time as a name for the head of one of the chief families of Jerusalem,* we learn that Nebuchadnezzar, either when he dethroned Jehoiakim, and placed Jehoiachin on the throne as his servant,† or yet earlier, when he left Jehoiakim on the throne as his obedient tributary, had appointed one of the Jews to be governor of Moab as a province of his kingdom ; and the person chosen seems to have been the head of the great family of the Zarhites. To accept such a post from the enemy, and to wear the Babylonian robe of office when so many of his countrymen were clothed in affliction, was of course in the highest degree unpopular ; and we shall see him very clearly pointed to in Josh. vii. where we have the history of a mean thief who had stolen a goodly Babylonian garment, and who was of the family of Zarah. He was perhaps Achbor, whom we have met with as one of the nobles of Jerusalem at the end of Josiah's reign ;‡ and by a play upon words he is named Achor, *the troubler*.‡

The prophet Zephaniah also at the same time blames those who wear the apparel of foreigners. Such a dress was very insulting to their countrymen, who had fought against the Babylonians and had been conquered.

The Pharezites and the Zarhites were, at the fall of the monarchy, the two greatest families in Jerusalem. As they both returned home seventy years afterwards in large numbers, we judge that they had counselled submission, and had gone quietly into captivity. They were probably among those whom Ezekiel blames as refusing to go up into the breaches, to make up the wall, and to stand in the battle in the day of Jehovah. They had perhaps gone out of the city into the Babylonian camp before the last fatal day. Such men were traitors in the eyes of those who staid in the city ; and Genesis xxxviii. may have been written at this time, with strong political feelings, by one of the priestly party, in order to give a base origin to Pharez and Zarah, the supposed founders of those powerful but now unpopular families.

During the reign of Jehoiakim, when the Chaldees of Babylon, after having delighted the Jews by destroying the

* Ezra viii. 4:

† 2 Kings xxii. 12.

‡ Josh. vii. in the Greek ; and 1 Chron. ii. 7.

Assyrian power, were now in their turn moving down upon Judea to its plunder and ruin, the prophet Habakkuk wrote his short work. He describes the enemy as a terrible and dreadful nation, who will laugh at every fortress, and take it by heaping a mound against it, and will gather up captives as sand, or rather "as fishes of the sea." For it was the cruel custom for a conqueror to spread his army into a line reaching across the whole country and to drive all the inhabitants before it; and this was called "taking them in drag nets."* Habakkuk's beautiful hymn gives to him a high place among the Hebrew poets. The bold description of the Almighty, as a warrior riding in a chariot to victory over the Assyrians, may be compared to the figure of the Pagan Jupiter on a Greek vase; but we shall in vain look round for a poet of any nation who can have given him a hint for his grand picture of the world's awe and alarm, when the power of Nineveh was overthrown by Nebuchadnezzar:—

The mountains saw thee and they trembled,
 The overflowing of the water passed by;
 The deep uttered his voice, lifting up his hands on high.
 The sun and moon stood still in their dwelling;

By the light of thine arrows they [the Chaldeans] moved on,
 By the shining of thy glittering spear.
 Thou didst march through the land in indignation,
 Thou didst trample on nations [the Assyrians] in anger.
 Thou wentest forth for the salvation of thy people.

[But now] I have heard; my bowels tremble,
 My lips quiver at the sound [of the Chaldeans].

Not less to be admired is the poet's more quiet expression of devout religious trust, notwithstanding the ruin and misery with which his country seems to be threatened:—

Although the fig-tree shall not blossom,
 Neither shall fruit be on the vines;
 Though the labour of the olive-tree shall fail,
 And the fields shall yield no food;
 Though the flock shall be cut off from the fold,
 And there shall be no herd in the stalls;
 Yet will I rejoice in Jehovah,
 I will joy in the God of my salvation.

At the end of Jehoiakim's reign, when he was a prisoner

* Herodotus vi. 31.

in the hands of the Babylonians, but before his fate was known, whether he was to be at once put to death, or to be sent to end his days in Babylon, chap. xix. of Ezekiel was written. It is a lament for Jehoahaz and Jehoiakim. It does not mention Jehoiachin, who had not yet been placed on the throne. This is the earliest portion of the Book of Ezekiel. If, as Josephus says,* some of his writings were of the reign of Josiah, they are now lost.

To this time we may give the prophecy of Zephaniah, limited, however, to chapters i. and ii. It is said in the Introductory Verse to be of the reign of Josiah ; but it seems to belong to a time about ten years later ; as the ruin coming on the country is not that brought by the invasion of the Scythians in Josiah's reign, but the more serious invasion by the Babylonians, which embraced the whole of the country, with Moab and Ammon on the east, and the Philistines on the west. Nineveh is also a desolation. Punishment is to come on the princes and on the king's children, and on those who wear the apparel of the foreigners, meaning those who have taken office under the Babylonians.

A priest of the name of Zephaniah is mentioned in the Book of Kings as being among the captives who, soon after this time, were carried to Riblah on the Orontes, and were there put to death. He may possibly have been our prophet, the son of Cushi. We must distinguish him from Zephaniah the son of Maaseiah, of Jerem. xxix. 25, who was recommended by the captives to the rank of chief priest at the beginning of the Captivity.

JEHOIACHIN KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 600.

Jehoiachin, the son of Jehoiakim, was eighteen years old when he was allowed by Nebuchadnezzar, the conqueror, to mount his father's throne. But, at the end of three months, Nebuchadnezzar changed his purpose, and determined to crush to the very ground the kingdom of Judah. He came himself with his army. The route from Babylon is up the Euphrates to Tiphseh ; then westward to Helbon, the modern Aleppo ; and then southward to Damascus. From Damascus, the army might march on either side of the

* Antiq. x. vi.

Jordan. Nebuchadnezzar came on the east side of the river, and leaving Rabbah, the city of the Ammonites, on his left hand, he crossed the Jordan at the southern ford. He met with no serious resistance. The young king, with his mother and a body of the nobles, went out to meet him and gave themselves up to him. Nebuchadnezzar entered Jerusalem with his army, and then carried into captivity the king and his nobles, taking with them the treasures of the palace and of the Temple. He, at the same time, carried off from Jerusalem every priest, every soldier, and every skilled workman, to the number of ten thousand men, leaving none behind but the poorest sort of people, including the larger body of the Levites. Many of those who were left were as willing to serve under the Babylonians as under their Jewish masters.*

The captivity of Jehoiachin took place in the year B.C. 600, the eighth of Nebuchadnezzar's reign; and for the future this year, instead of being called the 1st of Jehoiachin, was called the 1st of the Captivity, and this date was for some time used as the era from which the years were counted.

It was during Jehoiachin's short reign of eleven months, and at its unhappy close, that chapters xii.—xiv. of Zechariah were written. In them Jerusalem is spoken of as the prize for which the nations were struggling, but as "a burdensome stone for all the peoples, and all that burden themselves with it will be cut to pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered against it." The two parties in the state, whose want of agreement sadly weakened their power of resisting the invader, are here spoken of, the country party which usually counselled submission, and the city party which attempted resistance; and the writer shows his preference for the Tents of Judah, as against the inhabitants of Jerusalem. The prophets are blamed for their false visions and bad advice. The grief for king Jehoiakim is compared to that for king Josiah, called "the mourning of Hadadrimmon in the valley of Megiddon," where Josiah was slain. The mourning families of Nathan and Shemei, we may recognize as those of Elnathan and Shemeiah in Jerem. xxxvi. 12.

Jehoiachin is called the man of Jehovah's friendship, who is to be smitten, the city is to be taken, and one half to go

into captivity. The writer was one of those left behind, and probably not an inhabitant of the city. He foretells a time when Jehovah will smite the people that have fought against Jerusalem, and lastly that the nations shall come up there to worship Jehovah at the Feast of Tabernacles. The few last words, foretelling that the dealers shall be turned out of the temple, belong to a late time after the return from Captivity.

ZEDEKIAH KING OF JUDAH ; B.C. 599—589.

Nebuchadnezzar on the conquest of Jerusalem placed on the throne, if it then could be called a throne, Mattaniah, the young king's uncle, still holding the lawful king a prisoner in Babylon, as the best means of keeping the wrongful king obedient. Mattaniah, on being made king, followed the example of his predecessors, and changed his name to Zedekiah.

There are only two or three of the nobles whose names are known to us, and whose fate calls for notice, at this time of misfortune. Ishmael the son of Nethaniah, of the great family of Elishama, escaped to the children of Ammon on the eastern side of the country.* Of those families which had advised submission to Nebuchadnezzar, and were allowed to remain in Jerusalem, that of the sons of Shaphan, the friends of Jeremiah, was the most important. We may conjecture that they were at the head of the great families of the Pharezites, who with the Zarhites saved their lives by yielding on seeing that resistance was useless, and who at the close of the Captivity returned home to be the chiefs of the nation. Jaazaniah one of that family acted as chief priest during the reign of Zedekiah, while Jehozadak, called also Jehoiada, the hereditary chief priest, was in captivity. This was no longer the important office that it used to be ; but it gave some dignity if not much power to the holder. The great body of priests in the Captivity were not pleased that it should be held by one who had been opposed to their views, and who was not of a priestly family ; they claimed that their voice should be heard in the appointment ; and they wrote word from Babylon, that they wished Zephaniah the son of Maaseiah, a priest and of a less powerful family, to have that post.† Ezekiel, writing in

* Jerem. xl. 14.

† Jerem. xxix. 25.

captivity with all the spiritual pride of a martyr, accuses Jaazaniah the son of Shaphan, and the seventy elders who were joined with him, as polluting the Temple with idolatry and burning incense in their unlawful censers.* The elders thus acting as priests were not of priestly families, probably none of them were of Levitical families; and hence Ezekiel's displeasure.

This appointment of seventy elders, which followed upon the removal of the priests, may have laid the foundation for that governing body, which we shall hereafter meet with under the name of the Sanhedrim, or High Council; and we shall find passages added to the Pentateuch to support that Council's authority.†

Zedekiah remained obedient and tributary to Babylon for nine years, but perhaps never without a hope that the Egyptians might one day relieve him. In the beginning of his reign he sent an embassy to Babylon, choosing for that duty Elasah the son of Shaphan and Gemariah the son of Hilkiah. These were both of the party favourable to submission to Nebuchadnezzar; and by them Jeremiah sent a letter to the captives, advising them to live quietly as good subjects to the conqueror.‡

In his fourth year he went to Babylon himself, probably summoned there by his master, Nebuchadnezzar. He was accompanied by his chief chamberlain, Seraiah, and therefore probably went with his wives and some degree of state; but we cannot believe in the genuineness of the letter from Jeremiah, which a late writer says that Seraiah carried to the captives.§

In his ninth year, perhaps relying upon a promise of help from Hophra, king of Egypt, Zedekiah ventured to rebel, though against the earnest remonstrance of the prophet Jeremiah, who warned him that the Egyptian army would not be able to save him. He had also been encouraged by messengers who came to him from the Jews who had escaped to Tyre and Sidon, Edom, Moab, and the children of Ammon.|| These men were in distress, and being led by their wishes, may have fancied that these little peoples among whom they were living would make an effort to help Zedekiah against the

* Ezek. viii.

‡ Jerem. xxix. 3.

† Numb. xi. 16—30; Exod. xxiv. 1—11.

§ Jerem. li. 50.

|| Jerem. xxvii. 3.

Babylonian tyranny, under which they all trembled. But they gave Zedekiah no help ; and Nebuchadnezzar again sent an army to besiege Jerusalem, and to reduce the Jews to obedience.

The prophet Ezekiel, who was among the captives, was placed on the bank of the river Chaboras, in Syria. He describes the route by which Nebuchadnezzar came.* Thus, if we draw a line from Damascus, the invader's head quarters, to the Dead Sea, it will pass through a spot where a road turns off eastward to Rabbah of Ammon. This spot must be "the parting of the two ways," of which one led to Rabbah, and the other to Jerusalem. From thence Nebuchadnezzar came southward to Ai, which town he plundered, as we learn from Jeremiah xlix. 3, to the alarm of the two neighbouring towns of Heshbon and Rabbah. From Ai he crossed the Jordan to Jerusalem. By the help of this march we may place Ai, by guess, at about fifteen miles from the Jordan, and at an equal distance from Heshbon and Rabbah ; and may safely say that it is the town called Aiath, on Sennacherib's march, already described, and also that called Aim, on the route of the Israelites out of Egypt. Both these words are merely plural forms of Ai, and mean *the mounds*.

Zedekiah, in his alarm at the danger, put forth a proclamation that all Hebrew bond-servants should be allowed to go free, in the hope of gaining, as a support to his throne, a large body of men whose oppressed condition made foreign conquest no matter of alarm to them. They were paupers, who, when in want of food and clothing, had sold themselves and their children to their wealthy neighbours ; and they had lost all care for the welfare of their country. The Jewish Law, in order to stem this growing evil, had ordered that the power of sale should be limited to six years, and that every seventh year these bond-servants should be let free, that the foreign servants alone should be kept in bondage for life. But the rich had very little regarded that law, and the Hebrew bond-servants rarely found release in the Sabbath year. Now, however, the nobles promised to obey the proclamation of Zedekiah ; and to mark the solemnity of their promise, they cut a calf in twain and walked between its two halves. This, in the Hebrew lan-

* Ezek. xxi. 19—21.

guage, is called Cutting a Covenant. But the siege of Jerusalem was for a short time interrupted by the arrival of an Egyptian army, and then the proclamation of freedom to the bond-servants, and the solemn covenant were at once forgotten.

The Chaldees, however, shortly returned in greater force ; the Egyptians retired, and left the country ; and when they were gone, the Chaldees spread themselves over the land, in search of food and plunder. While Jerusalem was strongly fortified, the selfish policy of its rulers had left the other towns for the most part open and helpless. Lachish in the south, and Azekah, a small hill fortress about fifteen miles to the north west of Jerusalem, alone could for the moment save themselves by their walls. But the main body of the invaders gathered around Jerusalem. There they renewed the siege, and built forts around the city to starve it into surrender.

During this reign, as during the former reigns, Jeremiah had warned the people that they could not resist the Babylonians ; and at this time Zedekiah had shut him up in the watchhouse to forbid his advising the people to submit, and very possibly in order to save him from worse treatment ; and he directed Jeremiah to pray to Jehovah for him. But the priests and nobles of the other party, taking him out of the watchhouse, threw him into a loathsome dungeon-pit, where he certainly would have died if the king had not sent to have him drawn out and released. Zedekiah had great trust in Jeremiah, and under his advice, would probably then have made his submission to the Chaldees ; but while he hesitated how to act, some of his nobles would not allow him to yield ; while those who saw that all resistance was useless against such an overwhelming force, had already gone out of the city, and saved their lives by giving themselves up to the enemy. A little later Zedekiah would have done the same, had he not feared the taunts of these men even more than ill-treatment from the conqueror. In a short time famine prevailed, and further resistance was impossible. Zedekiah, at the head of his soldiers, fled by night, by the way of the gate between the king's garden and the temple. He was overtaken by the Chaldees at Jericho, on his way to the southern ford of the Jordan, and brought as a prisoner to Nebuchadnezzar at Riblah, near

Hamath, in Syria. There Zedekiah's eyes were put out, his sons were slain, and, in the eleventh year of his reign, he was sent in chains to Babylon, where his nephew Jehoiachin, was already a prisoner.*

Thus ended the Jewish monarchy, if it may not be said to have ended eleven years earlier, with the captivity of Jehoiachin. Ezekiel, living in captivity, does not give to Zedekiah the title of king, but styles him a rebellious prince. He had made a treaty with the Babylonians and bound himself by an oath; and he broke his oath. The falsehood of the two brothers, Jehoiakim and Zedekiah, did much to ruin the country. They suffered by their own fault, the younger brother Jehoahaz, and Jehoiachin the son of Jehoiakim, had suffered in innocence.

From this year Ezekiel counts the years as from a new era; and the year B.C. 589, the twelfth of the captivity, the eleventh of Zedekiah, is called the year when the city was destroyed.

Deuteronomy xxviii.—xxx., present difficulties which make it necessary to mention them again here. These chapters were part of the original work. They contain the Curses which frightened king Josiah, when they were read to him. They contain words which seem to be quoted in 2 Kings xxii.† But then on the other hand they seem to mention the captivity of Jehoahaz in Egypt,‡ and that of Jehoiachin in Babylon.§ Hence we are led to conjecture that after having been written before the captivity of those two kings, they had alterations made in them about twelve years later. Of Jeremiah's friends who brought the book out of the Temple to Josiah, some who were yet alive were allowed to remain in Jerusalem, and they may have made these slight alterations.

Deuteronomy xiv. 22—29 is a correction of chap. xii. 18, made thus early, or perhaps in Jehoiakim's reign. It makes the payment of tithes yet more easy, by saying that they need be taken up to the capital only on two years, but on the third year they may be eaten in the city where the owner lives. Chap. xv. 1—18, is of Zedekiah's reign, containing his proposal that the rich should release their poor debtors who had sold themselves into bondage. It

* 2 Kings xxiv. 17—xxv. 7; Jerem. xxxii.—xxxviii.

† Deut. xxix. 25.

‡ Deut. xxviii. 68.

§ Deut. xxviii. 36.

renews the law of Exod. xxi. 1—6, which had said that every bond-servant ought to be released on the seventh year, counting from when his service began. But in Zedekiah's reign, when the evil of bond-service reached to all the poor, he proposed that they should be all released at once; and this law, in order to check the evil for the future, proposes that there should be such a release every seventh year.

Our records are too scanty to give us much insight into the state of parties among the Jews; but their rulers, as we have seen, were by no means all of one mind as to what was the wisest course for them to have taken in these difficult times, when they were attacked by such powerful enemies. During the last twenty years they had been five times conquered and brought to the state of a tributary kingdom by Nebuchadnezzar, having four times rebelled against his power, or been made tributary to Egypt. There were two parties in the state, those who counselled a brave resistance to Nebuchadnezzar, and looked to Egypt for help, who were for the most part the priests, the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and those who thought that all resistance to such an overwhelming power was foolhardy, and who counselled a wise submission. These were, for the most part, the country party, called the people of the land. Those who wished to submit must have been thought apostates; those who wished to resist were thought fanatics. The prophet Jeremiah always counselled submission and obedience; and certainly the after events go far to prove that he was right, and that no bravery could have enabled the small and divided nation to resist the great power of Babylon.

Beside these two political parties there was the large mass of the poor, the tillers of the soil for the landowners, the hewers of wood and drawers of water for the cities, the men whom Zedekiah had tried to gain by obtaining for them a release from their debts and bondage. Being uneducated and oppressed they had little weight in the state, they had little other wish than to avoid the evils which fell upon them when the country was overrun by invaders, who spared neither sex and lived by plunder. They can have given very little strength to the party who resisted Nebuchadnezzar.

Jeremiah describes in various chapters the misery of the

unhappy Jews during these last years, when the Babylonians, like ravenous wild beasts gathered from all sides, not content with killing all who resisted and ill-treating the helpless, had devoured, destroyed, and trodden under foot the pastures, leaving those whom the sword had spared to perish by famine. The young men went in vain to the tanks for water, the mothers had no food for their babes. The superstitious practice of passing children through the fire, which King Josiah and the Book of Deuteronomy had wisely endeavoured to check, was then used as a cloak for child murder.* Such was the sad state of the country, that its final conquest, the carrying off the upper class into captivity, and the reducing the lower class to the state of bond-servants, brought no increase, and in many cases a relief to this misery.

The last days of the monarchy are rich in literature. The Book of Joshua now appears in the form of a continuation to the Book of Deuteronomy ; and like Deuteronomy it teaches the more modern view of its being our duty to love Jehovah. It contains the history of the tribes crossing the Jordan, and of their conquest of the land of Canaan, a list of the kings conquered, with a minute account of the boundaries between the tribes, such as they existed when the whole country was in a settled state. Its history, written so long after the events, is of little value. It is contradicted by the more trustworthy Book of Judges, and First Book of Samuel. From its mention of the Zarhite in chap. vii. who stole the Babylonian garment, we see that it was not written till after a member of that family had been made Pasha of Moab by Nebuchadnezzar. The only ancient writing quoted is the Book of Jasher, a poetical work of David's reign, which says that the sun stood still while the Israelites completed the slaughter of their enemies. But as a geographical description of the land of Canaan chapters xiii.—xix. are most valuable. The writer, however, or rather a later editor, was not without the political feelings of his own times ; for in the tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh, he mentions no towns except those necessary for the description of the boundaries, but in all the other tribes he gives full lists of the towns and villages. The list of boundary towns may have been taken

* Jerem. vii. 31 ; xxxii. 35.

out of one ancient document, and that probably of David's or Solomon's reign, before the kingdom was divided by Israel's rebellion; the lists of the other towns may be out of another document. From the Book of Joshua, as we now have it, we must except chapter viii. 30—35, which belongs to the time of the dispute about Ebal and Gerizim; and chapters xx.—xxii., containing the list of Levitical cities, because in chapter xiii. 14 and 33, the writer, like all the writers before the Return from Captivity, says that the Levites are to have no inheritance but the offerings to Jehovah. We must except also chapters xiv. and xv. 13—19, relating to Caleb the son of Jephunneh, and the town of Hebron; and also chapter xv. 2—4, which gives wider southern limits to the land and contradicts the foregoing verse.

Having thus put aside the additions afterwards made to the Book of Joshua, there remains a Jehovistic account of the conquest of all Canaan, by which it was reduced to such a state as we do not find there before the end of David's reign. Moreover, this is founded on a survey of the land made probably in the time of David or Solomon. And apart from these wide conquests, related in a rather contradictory manner, we trace a slight line of march, by which the invaders, crossing over the Jordan with the priests and the Ark of Jehovah, come to Gilgal, Jericho, Beth-el, and Ai, and set up the Tent of Meeting at Shiloh; and lastly, all the tribes are assembled at Shechem. At Shechem they leave, not the Jehovistic Tables of the Law, they are in the Ark at Shiloh, but the book of the Law of God, possibly the Law which once stood between Exod. xix. 6 and 7. Joshua is then buried in the land of Ephraim, as are Joseph's bones, and as is Eleazar the son of Aaron, the last on the hill of Phinehas, Aaron's grandson. That Phinehas the son of Eli should have given his name to a hill in the land of Ephraim is not improbable; but that Phinehas the grandson of Aaron should have done so, and that before the death of his father Eleazar, is highly improbable. The name of Phinehas seems to have been taken from one family and given to the other.

The Book of Joshua, though written in continuation of Deuteronomy, is not in the same spirit. It has no preference for Jerusalem, "the Place which Jehovah shall

choose " as it is called in Deuteronomy. Our Book shows traces of an earlier Elohist narrative, in which possibly, as in the original history of the march out of Egypt, the name of the hero, the son of Nun, was not Jehoshua, but Oshea, as it yet is in Numbers xiii. 8.

No two men could be more unlike than Ezekiel and Jeremiah, the two chief writers of Zedekiah's reign. They were both priests, and had both from their youth seen ruin hanging over their country ; but they had learned different lessons from the same misfortune. Ezekiel had encouraged resistance against the invading Babylonians, and was carried into captivity ; Jeremiah had advised submission, and was left in Judea. And their religious writings were as unlike as their fates. They both acknowledged that the temple was no longer the one place where Jehovah could be fitly worshipped. But Ezekiel, when ruin came, still clung to the value of sacrifices, and incense, and the rest of the ceremonial law, to the superior holiness of the priests, and to the belief that the worship of Jehovah through the hands of the priests was the only acceptable worship. Jeremiah, on the other hand, had at an early time thrown off these narrow views ; he looked for personal righteousness, he reproached priests and people alike with their sins, and endeavoured to draw a lesson from the nation's misfortunes, which might lead to its moral improvement. Jeremiah though a priest may properly be called one of the prophets. Ezekiel would have scorned the title, as meaning nothing but rebellion and mischief.

While Zedekiah was yet upon the throne the priest Ezekiel, living in captivity in Syria, on the river Chaboras, a tributary branch of the Euphrates, was there writing his visions. He had been carried off by Nebuchadnezzar in the Captivity of Jehoiachin, and left there while other prisoners were sent on to Babylon. He describes his receiving power to utter the word of God, which he had first swallowed in the form of a book-roll. This had been given to him by Jehovah, who came to him in a storm of lightning and wind from the north, seated on a slab of crystal, carried by four cherubs. In the sixth year he has a vision of the elders in Jerusalem burning incense before a number of unclean idols ; whereupon Jehovah, carried upon the wings of the cherubs, leaves the city in displeasure to make

his Sanctuary for a time among the men of the Captivity. (i.—xii.) Thus Ezekiel shows us his political, or rather ecclesiastical, feelings; he supposes that all the Jews who were left behind in Jerusalem were given up to idolatry.

Chapters xiii.—xiv. 11, are against the prophets who, like Jeremiah, counselled peace, and did not fight at the wall when the Chaldees stormed the city. Those who consult them are also blamed. Chapters xv. xvi. are against Jerusalem and Judea. Judea is compared to a lewd woman, as again in chapters xxii. xxiii. Chapter xx. 1—44 is against the Elders, against the neglect of the command that the Sabbath should be kept holy; but Ezekiel shows his trust in God's goodness, by promising that the whole house of Israel shall be brought back from captivity. In chapter xx. 45—49, he sets his face against the men of the South Country, whom Isaiah had before denounced, for their desertion of the rest of the nation. In chapter xxi. he sets his face against Israel, and describes the route by which Nebuchadnezzar marches against that wicked prince Zedekiah, whom he does not style a king. In chapters xxii. xxiii. he reproaches Jerusalem, and then the two halves of the nation under the figure of two lewd women, one named "Her own tent," and the other "My tent in her," who are described in coarse disagreeable terms as falling in love with the Assyrians and Babylonians. In chapters xxiv. xxv. Nebuchadnezzar besieges Jerusalem; and the Children of Ammon with Moab, Edom, and the Philistines, are threatened.

Of the several denunciations against Egypt, chapters xxix. 1—12, and xxxii. 17—32, may perhaps be by Ezekiel. In neither is Babylon mentioned. It would have been unsafe for a captive to have spoken openly. In the former Egypt is blamed for not helping the Jews when such help was needed. In the latter, namely chapter xxxii. 17—32, Ezekiel describes the under-world, the abode of the wicked, in a manner which shows that intercourse with Babylon and the east had brought some new views into the Jewish religion. At the back of the pit of destruction, the Assyrians and Elam and Edom, and other unfriendly nations, are there laid in their graves, but able to speak and think, and bearing their shame. Pharaoh, when he goes down to them with his rabble, will be com-

forted at meeting them. We shall find this view of the world below further enlarged in some of the later chapters added to the Book of Isaiah. In the other chapters against Egypt that country is blamed and Babylon is not blamed ; and hence they could not have been written by Ezekiel.

In chapter xxxiii. 21, 22, the writer while in captivity is told that Jerusalem has been destroyed. Ezekiel was a priest, but he is usually counted among the prophets, though those writings which alone we can give to him have very little of the lofty inspiring tone which entitles a writer to that honoured name.

The writings of the prophet Jeremiah have come down to us in a sadly confused state, some parts of them having had additions made to them by after writers, and many parts being put in their wrong places. They are dated in the reigns of Josiah, Jehoiakim, and Zedekiah, and seem to have been written in the following order.

Chapters i.—xvii. 18, may have been of the reigns of Josiah and Jehoiakim. They contain the prophet's warnings to his countrymen against their sins, against their fondness for foreign customs, and against their looking to Egypt for help, and a threat of the ruin which was coming on the land, first perhaps from the Scythians, a people whose language they do not understand, and then from the Babylonians. They will come like fishermen, and carry off all the people in a drag-net, and then like hunters they will hunt for those that have escaped, chasing them upon every mountain and out of the holes in the rocks. These writings are in a melancholy tone, with very little of poetic fire. Jeremiah often uses the words of Deuteronomy, calling Egypt "the iron furnace," and speaking of the "words of the covenant ;" and like Deuteronomy he shows a lessened value for ceremonies, and in particular he contradicts Exodus and Numbers by saying that God, when he brought the people out of Egypt, gave no commands about sacrifices and burnt offerings. From this portion we must except a few verses, which look like after additions, namely, x. 1—16, and xvi. 14, 15. Moreover, chapter xiii. 1—11, which describes the prophet as taking his girdle to the river Euphrates, seems to belong to the Book of Ezekiel, who lived upon its banks, rather than to the writings of Jeremiah.

Chapter xxvi. contains a narrative of the prophet's warning the people in the reign of Jehoiakim that Jerusalem will soon be overthrown as the city of Shiloh was. By this freedom of speech he gave great offence to the priests, as discouraging resistance to the Chaldees, and they would have put him to death if he had not been protected by Ahikam the son of Shaphan, who was one of the heads of the country party. In verse 18 we find a quotation from the prophet Micah.

In chapters xviii.—xx. Pashur the priest, who was the chief officer in the Temple, puts Jeremiah in the stocks for advising submission, and for saying that the city will be destroyed by Nebuchadnezzar in punishment for the king's rebellion. Jeremiah calls him not Pashur, or *Safety around*, but "Terror on all sides."

Chapters xxxv. and xxxvi. are also of the reign of Jehoiakim. The Rechabites, the Arab drivers of the chariots, are praised for their obedience to their law of not drinking wine, obedience which the Jews would do well to imitate. The prophet makes use of the hand of his friend Baruch the scribe to write his warnings that the Babylonians would conquer and destroy the country; and being himself not free, Baruch reads them to the people on the day of a public fast from the chamber of Jeremiah's friend, one of the sons of Shaphan, which overlooked the northern court of the Temple. Jeremiah and Baruch have to hide themselves from the displeasure of the king.

We then have six portions of the history of Zedekiah's reign, each more or less dated, so that they can be placed in order, but not so written that they will follow one another as parts of a whole.

Chapter xxii. is of the reign of Zedekiah. Jeremiah tells the people not to weep for the dead, meaning king Jehoiakim, but for Shallum, or Jehoahaz, who is gone into captivity in Egypt, and will return no more. Jehoiakim they are not to mourn for, he is to have the burial of an ass. Coniah, or Jehoiachin, has been cast off like a despised idol, and is to be conquered by the Babylonians. Here the prophet clearly declares his political opinions. He has no regard for the two kings who rebel against Babylon, and are carried into captivity there; he reserves his pity for Shallum, the king who resisted the Egyptians and was con-

quered. Zedekiah, who is not named, but called This Man, is not to prosper but is to die childless.

Chapters xxvii.—xxix. relate to the reign of Jehoiakim and to the fourth year of Zedekiah's reign, if we except xxvii. 7, and xxix. 10—14, two after insertions. Jeremiah exhorts the people to submit quietly to Nebuchadnezzar. He assures them that Judah, Edom, Moab, the Children of Ammon, Tyre, and Sidon, have no choice but to be the servants of Nebuchadnezzar ; and he rebukes the prophet Ananiah, who advises resistance. He writes to the captives in Babylon advising them to live as good citizens, and he rebukes them for claiming the right to fix upon Zephaniah the son of Masseiah, as the proper person to succeed to the office of high priest in Jerusalem.

Chapters xxiii. 9—xxiv. contain a warning against false prophets, who profess to have a Burden, or message from Jehovah. If they have a dream let them tell the dream, but the use of the word "Burden" in such a sense is to be blamed. Jeremiah compares the Jews of the Captivity who live quietly in Babylon to good figs, while Zedekiah and all those who resist the Chaldees are like bad figs.

Chapter xxxiv. relates that Zedekiah had rebelled against Nebuchadnezzar ; Nebuchadnezzar had sent his army against Jerusalem to reduce it to obedience, and Zedekiah, in his alarm, had taken the wise step of declaring all the bond-servants free, in the hopes of finding them more willing to fight for him. But as soon as the danger was less pressing the promise of freedom was forgotten ; and Jeremiah foretells that the city will be taken and burnt.

Chapter xxi. Zedekiah sends Pashur the priest to inquire of Jehovah ; and Jeremiah again tells him that in submission to the Chaldees is his only chance of life.

Chapter xxxii. 1—35. In the tenth year of Zedekiah, Jeremiah is shut up in the watch-house by the king ; and while there he buys of his cousin a field in Anathoth, in the land of Benjamin, while it was within the power of the Chaldees' army, thus showing his opinion that the land would soon be quiet and prosperous.

Chapters xxxvii., xxxviii. Zedekiah had rebelled against Nebuchadnezzar ; Nebuchadnezzar had sent his army against Jerusalem to reduce it to obedience ; Pharaoh Hophra had sent an Egyptian army to the relief of Zedekiah ; and the

Chaldees had retreated from before the city. Jeremiah was going out of the city to take possession of his field in the land of Benjamin ; but he is put in prison as one wishing to desert to the Chaldees, and he remains in the watch-house till the city is taken. He would probably have been put to death by the nobles if the king had not befriended him. He warns the king that his only chance of life is to quit the city, and give himself up to the Babylonian generals ; and Zedekiah would have done so, but that he feared being laughed at by those Jews who had from the first been prudent enough to join the Chaldees.

Chapters xxxix.—xliii. contain the history of the taking of the city. Nebuchadnezzar comes up against it in the ninth year of Zedekiah's reign, and his army takes it in the eleventh year, when Zedekiah flees away, but is overtaken, has his eyes put out, and is carried captive to Babylon. Nebuchadnezzar gives orders that Jeremiah shall not be hurt ; and the prophet is released from the watch-house by Nebuzar-adan, the Chaldee general, and he withdraws from the ruins of the city to Mizpah, where Gedaliah, the Jewish governor of the province under the Chaldees, fixes his residence. After Gedaliah is killed, Jeremiah is carried off against his will by Johanan and his followers into Egypt. From his threat that Jehovah will break the pillars of Bethshemish, we learn that the two obelisks were then both standing in front of the temple of Heliopolis. One of these was afterwards removed by one of the foreign conquerors of Egypt to ornament his own capital.

Chapter lii. is a short history of Zedekiah's whole reign, in nearly the same words as 2 Kings xxiv. 18—xxv.

Thus Jeremiah's writings contain many particulars of his own life ; but the confused state in which we now have them makes it difficult to follow the narrative.

Some part of Jeremiah's prophecies may have been written in Egypt ; but it is more probable that he did not dwell long on the banks of the Nile, and ill treatment may soon have brought his life to a close. None of his writings show any great acquaintance with Egypt, or prove a lengthened residence in that country.

There is not a little resemblance between Jeremiah's writings and the Book of Deuteronomy. He was the son of Hilkiah, and very probably of that Hilkiah who in Josiah's

reign found the Book of the Law in the Temple, and who was perhaps the author of Deuteronomy. Thus Jeremiah was by birth and education a priest, in which respect he differs from the elder prophets, whose glowing words and inspiring thoughts roused their hearers into action, and often in opposition to the priests. The priests, while the monarchy flourished, were men in authority ; they had their modes of usefulness, and the unpaid, self-appointed prophets had theirs. But now, in Jeremiah's time, that the priesthood is overthrown with the monarchy, and the priests are outcasts, they are led to make themselves useful and important, by addressing themselves to the people as the prophets did of old. It was not till the priesthood had lost its wealth and power that the priests rose up to be prophets.

There is so close an agreement between Psalm xxxi. and the writings of Jeremiah, that he has been thought to be author of it. The writer says :—

I was the reproach of all mine oppressors,
But mostly among my neighbours,
And a fear to mine acquaintance.
They that saw me in the street fled from me.
I was forgotten as a dead man out of mind ;
I became like a broken vessel.
For I heard the evil report of many, [saying]
"Terror is on all sides."

These last two lines are from Jéremiah xx. 10. In two other lines the Psalmist speaks as if he had been in Jerusalem when it was attacked by Nebuchadnezzar, saying :

Blessed be Jehovah, for he wrought marvellously
His loving kindness to me in the besieged city.

Moreover, like Jeremiah and Deuteronomy, the writer calls the false gods "Vanities."

Jeremiah, says the Chronicler, lamented for King Josiah ; and the singing men, and singing women also, repeated Lamentations for that king, which were probably committed to writing. It is upon the strength of this remark that the Book of Lamentations has been called the work of Jeremiah. It contains five melancholy poems mourning over the ruin of the city, and the misery of the inhabitants, and devoutly acknowledging that they were brought upon them for their sins ; "the Lord hath cast off his altar, he abhorreth his

sanctuary, he hath given up into the hand of the enemy the walls of her palaces." The first four of these poems are alphabetic, each verse beginning with a letter of the alphabet in its due order. They were so written in order to assist the memory of the singers. The same artificial arrangement is used in several of the Psalms. The first two may be by Jeremiah. The second contains his favourite words "Terrors on all sides," and says that the king and princes are among the nations. The third is probably not Jeremiah's, but it contains no marks by which we can put a date to it. The fourth and fifth are much more modern, and will be mentioned hereafter.

NEBUCHADNEZZAR KING OF BABYLON.

Nebuzar-adan, the Babylonian captain who was sent by Nebuchadnezzar to the command of Jerusalem, then began his work of destruction. He broke down the walls of Jerusalem, he burnt the temple and the king's palace, and the houses of the chief men. He broke in pieces all the metal work and vessels of the temple, whether gold, silver, or copper, and sent it off to Babylon. Seraiah, the chief priest, the grandson of Hilkiah, with several men of rank, and sixty others, who were found in the city, he took to his master at Riblah, in the land of Hamath, where Nebuchadnezzar had them put to death. Another body of prisoners, including those who in the beginning of Zedekiah's reign had promised obedience, were sent off to Babylon as bond-servants, and none but the poor of the land were left in the city. This was in the nineteenth year of Nebuchadnezzar, B.C. 589.

Nebuchadnezzar then appointed Gedaliah, a Hebrew of rank, who had not entered into Zedekiah's rebellion, to be the governor of the land. He was of the family of Shaphan, which had taken part with Jeremiah in the endeavour to persuade Zedekiah to submit quietly to Nebuchadnezzar, the family which had given a high priest to the Temple in Zedekiah's reign, when the priests who counselled resistance were in captivity. Gedaliah fixed his residence at Mizpah, a town in the neighbourhood of Jerusalem, as the city itself was too much in ruins to be a suitable spot to live in. He exhorted the people to live quietly and

industriously as servants of the Chaldees.* There Jeremiah also came to live as in a place of safety ; he had throughout advised the people to submit quietly to a fate from which they could not escape, and he had therefore been spared by the Chaldees.

But there were two leaders yet in arms against the Chaldees, though with no power to resist them. One was Ishmael, of the family of Elishama, who had fled across the Jordan to the Ammonites. He soon afterwards returned, and slew Gedaliah the governor as being a traitor to his country, and again escaped to the Ammonites in safety. The other was Johanan, who, having quarrelled with Ishmael, and obtained the leadership of such forces as had belonged to both, withdrew slowly towards Egypt as a place of safety ; since his little body of men was quite unable to resist the troops that Nebuchadnezzar might send against him.

Johanan on his retreat carried the prophet Jeremiah with him, for the double reason that, as a friend of the Chaldees he could intercede for him with Nebuchadnezzar, and that, as a priest, he could tell him the will of Jehovah. Jeremiah gave him the advice that he had given throughout, to submit to the conquerors. But Johanan would not trust his advice, but continued his retreat, and carried Jeremiah and his friend Baruch with him into Egypt. This brave little band of patriots, the remnant of Judah as they called themselves, settled at Tahpanhes, a town on the east side of the Delta,† where a century earlier a former body of their countrymen had found safety from the armies of Assyria.

Four years later Nebuzar-adan sent off a third body of captives to Babylon, making with those before sent off by Nebuchadnezzar and himself four thousand six hundred men,‡ exclusive of the soldiers taken in battle.

While the Babylonians were carrying off the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and the treasures of the temple, there were other enemies plundering the villages, and adding largely to the misery of the country. Of these the Edomites were the most hostile and the most important. They overran Judea, even to the walls of Jerusalem, calling upon the Chaldees to raze it, raze it, even to its foundations.§ The Philistines,

* 2 Kings xxv. 8—26.

† Jerem. lii. 30.

‡ Jerem. xl—xliii.

§ Psalm cxxxvii. ; Obadiah.

the Moabites, and the Ammonites, each on their own side, now that the Jewish superiority was destroyed, rushed in for their share of such plunder as had escaped the Chaldees.* So dreadfully had the Israelites on the east of the Jordan been slaughtered by the Assyrians and Babylonians on their marches through them, that their country was left almost empty of people; and the wandering tribes of the eastern highlands, the Children of Ammon, now came down into the plain, and dwelt in the cities of Gad, on the very spot from which they had been driven by Sihon, king of the Amorites, before the Israelites arrived there from Egypt.† The Tyrians, still keeping to their own calling as merchants, found their profit in carrying away the Jewish children, which the others had seized, and selling them as slaves to the Greeks.‡ The lawless inroads of these little tribes were not only more insulting, but probably more cruel, than that of the conquering Babylonian army; and it is very possible that the captives carried to Babylon suffered a fate by no means worse than that of the peasants who were left at home.

The short prophecy of Obadiah was written while the Jews were yet smarting under the mortification and humiliation of not having been able to defend themselves from their despised neighbours, the Edomites; and it is a threat of punishment that was coming upon that nation from the Babylonians. The Edomites had overrun Judea, and, as it seems, had come up to the very walls of Jerusalem—had “drunk upon the holy mountain,” as the prophet says—when the Chaldees were in possession of the country; and they shall hereafter be made to drink the cup of bitterness in their turn. Many of Obadiah’s words may be found in chapter xlix. of Jeremiah, or rather in Baruch’s addition to Jeremiah, in the threat against Edom; one writer must have copied from the other, and of the two Obadiah seems most likely to be the original. It is in vain to inquire where Obadiah was living when he wrote these few words. He was perhaps one of those who had escaped southward from the invading armies of Nebuchadnezzar; but as he does not mention the Babylonians he was probably not wholly safe out of reach of their power.

* Ezekiel xxv.

† Jerem. xlix. 1.

‡ Ezekiel xxvii. 13; Joel iii. 6.

The Jews who at this time escaped to Lower Egypt, and again made a settlement on the east bank of the Nile, must have much of the credit given to them for the school of philosophy which then rose in Heliopolis. In that city Jews, Greeks, and Egyptians met on equal terms, under the rule of the kings of Sais. The three languages were there all spoken; and the union of the three streams of thought in one channel produced at Heliopolis a school which was looked up to by the neighbouring nations for the next three centuries. It was from Heliopolis that the Greek philosophers Pythagoras and Solon drew their opinions; they both were in Egypt a few years later than Jeremiah; and to Heliopolis Plato afterwards came to study. When this school arose, Homer and Hesiod, of the Greek writers that now remain to us, had alone been written. It is, therefore, far from improbable that the later Greek writers may have profited much by the Jewish thoughts which then reached Athens from Heliopolis. From thence Acusilaus, whose history of the Creation, under the name of his *Genealogies*, we have already spoken of, may have borrowed his views, which so closely resemble the beginning of the Book of Genesis; and what is yet more important to remark, from thence Æschylus may have gained his higher notions of the Greek gods, so superior to those of Homer and Hesiod.

Chapters xlv.—xlix. 33 of Jeremiah should rather be called the writings of his friend Baruch, who was carried with him into Egypt, and may there have written them. They are denunciations against some of their nation's enemies; and they cannot have been the words which Baruch wrote down from Jeremiah's mouth, as mentioned in chapter xxxvi. 33, since those were against Zedekiah and Jerusalem.

These writings by the scribe Baruch are mostly borrowed from those of other prophets. They describe the ruin brought by Nebuchadnezzar's armies upon the countries through which they passed. That against Egypt describes Jehovah coming up and overwhelming the country like the inundation of the Nile, and is in part borrowed from Amos ix. 5. The Jews who had fled to Egypt fear that they shall not be safe there from the Babylonians. The mercenary soldiers whom Necho had hired, probably Greeks, will not fight for him. The writing against Moab is in part bor-

rowed from Isaiah xv., and in part from Numbers xxi. 28, 29, where the early wars of the Amorites are described. That against Edom is also to be found in Obadiah ; but the date of Obadiah is too uncertain to show which was the original.

THE JEWS IN CAPTIVITY.

Of the suffering of those Jews who were sent off to Babylon as captives, we have no account. Whatever these were at first, they were probably lessened after a time. The captives were treated as colonists, and were required to pay some large proportion of the produce of their labour to their masters. But in addition to what they may have suffered from hard labour, with scarcity of food and raiment, a body of high-minded and educated men, many of noble birth, smarted severely under the insults of their task-master, and groaned over the recollection of their homes, their gardens, and their fields, which they had left, of their capital city and temple which had been burnt, and of their religious ceremonies which had been brought to a close. As their troubles forbade their keeping the feast days, they very naturally added to the number of their fast days. The law had ordered a fast to be kept on the tenth day of the seventh month, that is, in our October ; but now they appointed fast days on the ninth day of the fourth month, on the seventh day of the fifth month, and on the tenth day of the tenth month.* That in the tenth month was for the beginning of the siege of Jerusalem ; that in the fourth for the day when the Chaldees entered the city ; and that in the fifth for when the Temple and palace were burnt to the ground. Of these the last was naturally the fast thought the most solemn. They were all fixed on such days of the month as were not sabbaths. The first day, the eighth, the fifteenth, and the twenty-second, were sabbaths ; an arrangement which can only have been kept by giving to some weeks eight days each.

While in captivity the Jews wrote no history of their sufferings ; but some of the most valuable of their religious writings are by men living at this time at a distance from home. In the Book of Psalms there are many which were written in this sad time by captives pining to return, and mourning over their country's woes. Psalms xiv. and liii.,

* Zech. viii. 19.

which differ in little more than in the use of the words God and Jehovah, both begin with blame for those whose trust in God was failing under their disappointment ; thus :—

The fool saith in his heart there is no God,

And they end with a prayer for a return home ; thus :—

O that the salvation of Israel were come out of Zion !
When Jehovah bringeth home the captivity of his people,
Jacob will rejoice and Israel will be glad.

Psalm lxxxix. may be of this time, as it points to the defeat of the Egyptian army by Nebuchadnezzar, and then to the overthrow of the Jewish king who is spoken of as if yet alive. Thus :—

O Jehovah, God of hosts, who is like unto thee ?
Strong art thou, O Jah, and thy truth is round about thee.
Thou rulest the pride of the sea ;
When the waves thereof arise thou stillest them.
Thou hast broken the Boaster [or Egypt] as one slain.
Thou scatterest thine enemies with thy strong arm.

It cannot therefore be from any want of power that the Jews are allowed to be overthrown :—

But thou hast cast off and abhorrest ;
Thou hast been wroth with thine anointed one ;
Thou hast set aside the covenant made with thy servant ;
Thou hast profaned his crown to the ground ;
Thou hast broken down all his fences ;
Thou hast brought his strongholds to ruin.

The new opinions which the Jews learnt in Babylon about the inhabitants of heaven, and which we shall meet with in the Book of Job, are shown in the following lines :—

The heavens do praise thy wonders, O Jehovah,
Thy truth also in the assembly of the Holy Ones ;
For who in the skies can be compared to Jehovah ?
Who of the sons of the gods can be likened to Jehovah ?
God is very terrible in the council of his Holy Ones.

The Psalm divided into xlii. and xliii., is one of the most interesting specimens of Hebrew poetry, both for the beauty of the thoughts, and for the judicious use of pauses and repetitions. Here an unhappy captive, a native of a northern tribe, asks in a melancholy recurring burden :—

Why art thou cast down, O my soul ?
 And why art thou disquieted within me ?
 Hope thou in God ; I will yet praise him ;
 He is the health of my countenance and my God.

And he answers :—

My soul is cast down within me ; for I remember thee,
 Far from the land of the Jordan, and the peaks of Hermon.
 Far from the little hill [of Sacrifice].

Psalm lxxx. also seems to be the work of a captive poet of the tribe of Benjamin, whose feelings were with the northern tribes ; he does not mention Judah ;—

Give ear, O shepherd of Israel,
 Thou that leadest Joseph like a flock ;
 Thou that dwellest between the cherubs, shine forth.
 Before Ephraim and Benjamin and Manasseh
 Stir up thy strength and come for our salvation.
 Bring us home again, O God,
 And cause thy face to shine, and we shall be saved.

This last couplet is used three times as a recurring burden. This peculiarity here, and in the last-mentioned Psalm, shows that a greater attention was at this time being given to versification in the poetry.

Living among their conquerors and task-masters, as the Jews now were, in whatever spot a writer might be dwelling, the caution required of him would naturally show itself in his writings. Thus in Psalm xxxix. an unhappy poet says :—

I will guard my ways lest I offend by my tongue,
 I will keep a muzzle on my mouth,
 While the wicked man is before me.

Equally cautious is the writer of Psalm xxxviii., who says :—

They that seek my hurt speak mischief,
 And imagine deceits all the day long.
 But I am as a deaf man, and will not hear,
 And as a dumb man that cannot open his mouth.
 Thus I am as a man that heareth not,
 And in whose mouth are no arguments.

Chapters xxvi., xxvii. and xxix.—xxxii. 16, of the Book of Ezekiel, though for their date they might perhaps have been written by the prophet, yet in the larger portions prove them-

selves to be by another writer, since they show greater enmity to Tyre and Egypt than to Nebuchadnezzar. This could not have been Ezekiel's feeling. They begin with a threat against Tyre, which Nebuchadnezzar attacks. Then follows an interesting account of the trade of Tyre. The writer, living abroad, but not in Captivity, may have dwelt at Tyre, but more probably at some place once dependent on Tyre, such as the island of Cyprus, or Tarsus in Cilicia. There he could have gained both his knowledge of the Tyrian trade, and his hatred of the Tyrians. He threatens Egypt, and promises to Nebuchadnezzar that the conquest of that country shall be the wages of his army for serving against Tyre. He shows some geographical knowledge of Egypt, which is described as reaching from Magdolon to Syene. He may have visited that country. Sin or Sais is now the capital of Egypt. Cub or Nubia is mentioned for the first time by that name.

From the trade of the city of Tyre, which this writer describes at some length in chapter xxvii., we may learn from whence the Israelites had been receiving many of those articles of trade which their own country did not furnish for them. Egypt was at all times famous for its linen, and, indeed, was almost the only country in which flax was grown. Tarshish, or Tarsus, is said to have furnished silver, but this we may suppose these Cilician traders brought from Greece, the only known seat of the silver mines. It was customary with the merchants, in order to keep the trade to themselves, to conceal as far as possible from whence they brought their goods. Tarshish also furnished iron, perhaps from Cyprus, and lead, and another white metal, by some translators thought to be tin, but more probably a mixed metal, the refuse of the silver mines, as, in chapter xxii. 18, 20, Ezekiel classes it with the dross of silver, as of little worth. Tin, when it first became known to the ancients, was as valuable as silver. Ivory and ebony came from Dedan, on the Persian Gulf; the seafaring men of that town probably brought them both from Zanzibar, on the coast of Africa. Horses and mules came from Togarmah, or Armenia. The Arabs to the east of Canaan sent sheep and goats, and the Arabs to the south of Canaan sent spices and gold. Arabia had been thought to be the seat of the gold-mines before Solomon sent his ships down the Red

Sea to Ophir, on the Nubian coast ; and when the trade on the Red Sea was discontinued, the Nubian gold again, as before, came through Arabia. Arabia sent also the sweet-scented cane and cassia. From this chapter we also learn how far the geographical knowledge of the Hebrew writers reached. The town of Aden, on the coast of Arabia, was perhaps the most southerly spot known to them, the Greek isles, and Phut, the north coast of Africa, perhaps including Carthage, the most westerly ; while the most northerly was Meshech, a district on the northern side of the Black Sea, which has given its name to Muscovy. Towards the east it is through this writer, for the first time, that we hear of any country so distant as Persia. If a circle be drawn upon the map at about one thousand miles from Jerusalem as its centre, it will include all that was known of the world in the time of Solomon. For the time of the Captivity, the circle must be drawn at fifteen hundred miles from the same centre.

EVIL-MERODACH KING OF BABYLON ; B.C. 564—562.

In the thirty-seventh year of the Captivity, Evil-Merodach came to the throne of Babylon as successor to Nebuchadnezzar ; and the treatment which the conquered Jews received from their masters was at once changed for the better. Jehoiachin, who had been in prison, and wearing the dress of a prisoner, was then brought into the royal palace, and treated with the respect due to his rank.* There can be no doubt but his countrymen, whether in Judea or in captivity, all felt their chains lighter. Evil-Merodach reigned only three years, but the better treatment of the captives continued until their release, about a quarter of a century afterwards.

Psalm cvi. was written at this time, when the writer, praying for a return from the Captivity, had by no means foreseen the manner in which the return home was to be brought about. That it was written after the accession of Evil-Merodach to the throne of Babylon, appears from the Psalmist's thankfulness for the milder treatment which the Jews then received from their conquerors. He says that God :—

* 2 Kings xxv. 27.

..... remembered for them his covenant,
 And repented according to his great kindness.
 He made them to be pitied
 In the sight of all those that carried them captives.

He runs over a few of the chief events of the march out of Egypt, as told in the Books of Exodus and Numbers. But he seems to have read those books before the chapters were put in their present geographical disorder; as his events follow according to the list of stations in Numbers xxxiii. rather than as we have it in the history.

Though the captives were not yet released, those Jews who had fled to other countries were at liberty to return to Judea, as appears by Jeremiah xliv., which belongs to this time. It was written after the death of Hophra, king of Egypt, which happened about the time that Evil-Merodach came to the throne of Babylon. The writer, who may have been Baruch, using Jeremiah's name, reproaches the Jews with remaining in Egypt, where they had now spread themselves, not only in the east of the Delta, but in Noph or Memphis, and Pathros or the Thebaid. His charge against them of idolatry may not have been deserved; the real cause of his displeasure was their want of patriotism.

THE WAR OF THE MEDES AND PERSIANS AGAINST BABYLON.

The better treatment of the captive Jews in Babylon may have been a simple act of humanity; but it probably was an act of policy, brought about by the rise of the Median power, the union of the Median and Persian forces under the command of Cyrus, king of Persia, and the war which Cyrus was then carrying on against Babylon. The history of Cyrus is very obscure, but it is probable that he was engaged in war with the Babylonian power for the greatest part of his life, and for many years before the conquest of that country.

We have a passage in the Book of Jeremiah, chapter xxv. 15—38, written at this time, when the storm was rising, and the nations of the East, which had hitherto oppressed the Jews, were beginning to quarrel among themselves, and to be overwhelmed in their turn:—

Take this cup of the wine of my wrath, says Jehovah, from my hand, and cause all the nations, to whom I shall send thee, to drink of it. And they shall drink and shall totter to and fro, and become

mad, because of the sword which I shall send among them. For lo, I begin by sending evil on the city which is called by my name, and should ye be utterly unpunished? Ye shall not be unpunished.

When the writer thus threatens a punishment from Jehovah on the nations of the earth, he fearlessly mentions Pharaoh, king of Egypt, with the rest, but he avoids any open mention of the Babylonians, whom it might be dangerous to affront. In the most guarded way he says that "the king of Sheshak" shall drink the cup of punishment with the others. Sheshak is the word Babel, or Babylon, written by beginning at the wrong end of the alphabet; and the use of such a method of concealing his meaning is a proof that the writer was not beyond the reach of the Babylonian power.

The writer includes the Medes and Elamites among the nations which he wishes to be punished; and he is not aware that in a few years, or a few months later they will be among the saviours of the Jews. After a time, however, the Jews felt that every defeat of the Babylonians was followed by better treatment of themselves, and even before they heard the name of Cyrus, they began to look forward to the success of the Medes and Persians as their best chance for relief.

During some of these years the great province of Elam, which was situated between Media, Babylonia, and Persia, was conquered by Cyrus; and after having been part of the great kingdom of Babylon, it was now part of the kingdom of Persia. When the Assyrians under Sennacherib besieged Jerusalem, the Elamites had formed a part of the army;* and in Genesis x. 22, the Elamites are classed with the Assyrians and Chaldees, as children of Shem. But we must believe that they were much more allied in language to the Persians or Medes than to the Semitic races, and thus their conquest at this time by Cyrus may have been an easy task. It is mentioned in Jeremiah xlix. 34; and we shall soon find them forming part of the Persian army in its attack upon Babylon.

According to the historian Berosus, Evil-Merodach the son of Nebuchadnezzar was succeeded by his brother-in-law Nergal-sharezer, or Neriglissor, and then by his nephew

* Isaiah xxii. 6.

Laborosoarchod. This last was slain before the end of the year by Nabonned, who then seized the crown; and it was under him that Babylon was overthrown. As Cyrus approached the city, Nabonned marched out to meet him, and being defeated in battle fled to the town of Borsippa. Cyrus then pushed forward the siege of Babylon, which he soon captured. He gave orders that the outer walls of it should be destroyed, and he led his army in pursuit of king Nabonned, whom he took prisoner at Borsippa.* From that time began the reign of Cyrus as king of Babylon, perhaps jointly with the king of the Medes; and two years later, on the death of the Median king, Cyrus became king of the great empire of Persia, Media, Babylonia, and Assyria.

To some part of this quarter of a century we must give Chap. xiii.—xiv. 23, of the Book of Isaiah. Here the writer summons the Medes from the mountains, calls them warriors consecrated by Jehovah for his purpose, and promises that Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees' excellence, shall be overthrown like Sodom and Gomorrah. The king of Babylon will be cast down into the underground world, the abode of the dead, of which the writer gives a picture, not very unlike that of the Greek Mythology, and very possibly borrowed from it. He addresses the king of Babylon: "Hell from beneath is moved for thee to meet thy coming. It stirreth up the departed spirits for thee, even all the leader-goats of the earth. It hath raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. All they shall speak and say unto thee, 'Art thou also become weak as we? Art thou become like unto us?' Thy pomp is brought down unto hell, and the noise of thy psalteries. The maggot is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee. How art thou fallen from the heavens, O Daystar, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, thou who didst crush the nations! For thou hast said in thy heart, 'I will go up to heaven; I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will sit also upon the mountain of the assembly in the recesses of the north;'" that is, upon Mount Olympus, or some such hill where the Pagan gods dwelt. The mention of satyrs among the wild

* Josephus, Apion, i. 20.

animals who are to dance over the ruins of Babylon, may also have been borrowed from Greece. This writer, who lived one hundred years later than the prophet Isaiah, we may call the Isaiah of the Captivity, or rather the First Isaiah of the Captivity, as other chapters, written at this time, seem to be by other authors.

The Isaiah of Chapters xxxii.—xxxv. also rejoices over the expected destruction of Babylon, and using the words of Isaiah xiii. declares that it shall be made a dwelling-place for ostriches, and jackals, and satyrs. The author of these chapters distinguishes himself from the former author, by calling his writings, which he quotes, "the Book of Jehovah," and thus gives us a remarkable proof of the reverence in which these prophetic writings were held even by those who lived at the time; for these writings, the one quoting and the other quoted, were both written within a few years of one another, during the short time that the overthrow of Babylon was being brought about by the Medes and Persians. This writer we may call the Second Isaiah of the Captivity. He looks forward to the return of the ransomed captives to Zion, and to his country being again governed by a king who shall rule in righteousness. But he does not mention the Babylonians by name. And the same caution led him when threatening the Egyptians and Syrians, to speak of the former as Buffaloes, and the latter as Bulls and Bullocks, saying, "There shall be a great slaughter in Edom; and the Buffaloes shall be cast down with them, and the Bullocks with the Bulls, and their lands shall be bathed with blood, and their dust made fat with fatness."

Closely agreeing with this portion of Isaiah, are the few last words of the Book of Joel, Chapter iii. 18—21, threatening Egypt, and more particularly the Edomites, for their violence against Judah in their day of trouble. They may be mentioned here, though the exact date must be doubtful.

Chapters xxxviii. xxxix. of Ezekiel were written when the Persians and their northern allies, the hordes of many peoples, were marching against Babylon, and a return from captivity was already hoped for. The writer prophesies at some length the destruction of Gog of the land of Magog, a name for the Scythians, or rather the unknown barbarians, beyond the knowledge of the geographer. Gog is to perish miserably

in the land of Judea, which he has conquered. The writer seems to be foretelling an event which took place at the time of Ezekiel's birth ; but he is in reality concealing his denunciation of the king of Babylon for the same prudent reason that had made a writer in Jeremiah xxv. call him king of Sheshak. This might have been written by Ezekiel, if we could suppose him yet alive when the Persians were marching against Babylon.

To the same time belongs the last chapter of the Book of Zephaniah. It is historical, but obscure, because no names are given. Jehovah reproaches Jerusalem as a rebellious city, whose princes are roaring lions and evening wolves. He had cut off the nations by making their towers desolate, and their streets waste ; but yet Jerusalem did not receive instruction. So he gathers nations to pour his indignation on them, and to devour their land. He carries off from Jerusalem the proud nobles, and leaves only the poor behind. This writer, unlike Ezekiel, thinks that the poor who were left behind at the time of the Captivity were those who trusted in Jehovah, rather than the proud captives, who had been in Babylon. Lastly, Jehovah has pardoned the people, and will call home the dispersed ones, who are in captivity, grieving at a distance from the Place of Meeting. This is the name now given to the Temple, as in Psalm lxxiv. 4, and Lamentations ii. 6.

In the year B.C. 538, Cyrus, king of Persia, commanding the joint armies of Persia and Media, conquered Babylon. The Hebrew writings tell us of the interest with which the Jews had watched the war, well knowing that any misfortune to the Babylonians must be an advantage to them. The event forms an epoch by which we fix the date of many parts of the Hebrew Prophets. The Book of Daniel* tells us that the Babylonian king Belshazzar was feasting with his nobles within the city on the night that it was taken by the Medes, and that he then perished in the ruins. But from the additions to Isaiah and to Jeremiah, as from Berosus already quoted, we learn that the king was away from his capital at the time, and that the fatal news was brought to him by swift messengers, while he was feasting in safety at a distance. The contradiction may be in part explained by the very probable conjecture that Belshazzar,

* Daniel v.

who perished in the city, was reigning jointly with his father Nabonned, who had escaped to Borsippa. Claudius Ptolemy, the astronomer, omits the name of Laborosarchod from the list given above from Berosus, because his few months call for no notice in a table of years. A similar reason might lead him to omit Belshazzar, if he reigned jointly with his father Nabonned, and also to omit the king of the Medes, in whose name Babylon was conquered by Cyrus; because the Mede, whether named Darius or Cyaxares II., though now king of Babylon, jointly with Cyrus the Persian, calls for no notice in a table of Babylonian years, since the years of Cyrus were also counted as following immediately upon those of Nabonned.

Chapters xlix. 34—li. of Jeremiah are put into that prophet's mouth, as if written in the reign of Zedekiah, and in the lifetime of Nebuchadnezzar. But they belong to a time when Nebuchadnezzar had been dead twenty-seven years. "Declare ye among the nations," says the writer, whoever he may have been, "and publish, and lift up a standard; publish, and conceal not. Say, Babylon is taken, Bel is confounded." "Out of the north there is come up a nation," the Medes, "against her, who shall make her land desolate." When the garrison could hold out no longer, runner is sent to meet runner, and messenger to meet messenger, to tell the king, who is at a distance, "That his city is taken from end to end, and that the fords are seized, and the reed-beds they have burned with fire." This writer also gives to Babylon the enigmatic name of Sheshak, which had been used in an earlier chapter of Jeremiah; but he does not now use it to conceal his meaning, indeed, he carefully explains the enigma; "How is Sheshak taken! and how is the praise of the whole earth seized! how is Babylon become an astonishment among the nations." And the very words which in Jeremiah xlix. 19, had been used when speaking of Nebuchadnezzar, this writer employs rather incorrectly for Cyrus, saying, "Behold he shall come up like a lion from the pride [or head springs] of the Jordan, against the abode of the strong At the noise of the taking of Babylon the earth is moved and the cry is heard among the nations." When borrowing these words the writer forgot that the Medes did not come against Babylon from the sources of the Jordan.

Verses li. 15—19, are out of place. They are repeated from chapters x. 12—16. They are of a yet later date. In verses 59—64 we have a letter said to have been sent by Jeremiah to the captives in Babylon in the fourth year of Zedekiah's reign, very unlike the real letter which he sent in that year, as related in chap. xxix.

To the same time, when the prospect of a return from captivity was in sight, and hopes were indulged that the nation would be restored, and again have a king of the line of David, we must give Chapter xxx. of Jeremiah. It cannot have been written by Jeremiah himself, as he had begun to prophesy thirty years before the Captivity. It promises that the nation's nobles shall be some of themselves, and their governor shall proceed from among them. They shall yet have a David for their king. The same hope of a king of their own is expressed in Isaiah xxxii. 1, already spoken of, and written about the same time.

Chapter xxi. of Isaiah, On the desert by the Persian Gulf, takes up words used in Chapter xxxiii., and is probably by the same writer. He uses them proverbially, "Robbing the robber, spoiling the spoiler;" and he describes the arrival of a messenger to tell the king [Nabonned] who is feasting at Borsippa, whither he had fled, at a distance from his capital, the great news "Babylon is fallen, is fallen; and all the graven images of her gods are broken to the ground." Here the Medes and Persians are spoken of as united for the conquest of Babylon: "Go up, O Elam, besiege, O Media." Elam was a province between Persia and Babylonia, sometimes belonging to one, and sometimes to the other. Here it is used as a name for Persia, though it had not belonged to Persia before the union of that kingdom with the Medes.

Isaiah, chapters xxiv.—xxvii., though written in a more guarded manner, clearly declare that Babylon has been conquered:—

O Jehovah, thou art my God, I will exalt thee;
I will praise thy name, for thou hast done wonders;
Thy counsels of old are faithfulness and truth.
For thou hast made of the city [Babylon] a heap of stones.
Of the fenced city a ruin, a citadel of strangers,
Of a city for ever, one not to be built up.

Here we note a change in the prophetic style, marking

the greater refinement and polish of the people. We have less of the orator's fire, and more of poetic sweetness. While much was lost, something was also gained during the life in Babylon. In these chapters, which were perhaps written by one who had lived there, we first meet with the opinion, which we see more of in the Book of Daniel, that every nation had its own guardian angel in heaven, as it had its king upon earth, a good angel for a good nation, and a wicked angel for a wicked nation; and the writer says of the Babylonians and their allies, "In that day I will punish the host of High Ones that are on high, and the kings of the earth that are upon earth."

Chapters xi. and xii. of Isaiah belong to about the same time, or at least a little later than chapter xiii. Here a highly poetical description of a future time, not of victory over enemies, but of peaceful prosperity, is followed by a promise that the despised Israelites, both of Ephraim and Judah, shall return home and lay aside their old quarrels. The nation is again to be governed by a ruler of the family of Jesse. These beautiful lines, full of religious hope, may well be the writing of him who we shall speak of presently as the Isaiah of the return home.

The beautiful Psalm cxxxvii. was written when the success of Cyrus seemed certain, and the destruction of Babylon was looked for as likely to follow. The writer speaks of his captivity as already past:—

By the rivers of Babylon, there we sat down,
 Yea, we wept when we remembered Zion.
 We hanged our harps on the willows in the midst of it.
 For there they that carried us captive asked of us a song;
 And they that made us mourn asked for mirth,
 [Saying,] 'Sing us one of the songs of Zion.'
 How can we sing a song of Jehovah in a foreign land?
 If I forget thee, O Jerusalem, let my right hand forget [its cunning].
 Let my tongue cleave to the roof of my mouth,
 If I do not remember thee,
 If I prefer not Jerusalem above my chief joy.

As the writer had been living in captivity, and had suffered the taunts of the Babylonians, and remembered the ruin that they had brought upon his country, and also how the neighbouring little nations had come in to share the plunder, we must not judge him too severely for the bitter curse with which he ends his poem:—

Remember, O Jehovah, the children of Edom,
 Who said in the day of Jerusalem,
 "Raze it, raze it, even to its foundations."
 O daughter of Babylon, who art to be destroyed,
 Happy he that repayeth thee as thou hast served us ;
 Happy shall he be that taketh
 And dasheth thy little ones against the rock.

We know from the after events that when Cyrus had made himself king of Babylon, he adopted the aim of the former kings of that country, and proposed to himself the conquest of Egypt, as sooner or later to be attempted. Xenophon, in the *Cyropædia*,* says that Cyrus dwelt seven months in Babylon, and that from that city he sent forward an army for the invasion of Egypt. The Persian invasion, however, of Egypt was not seriously begun until the next reign ; but the Fourth Lamentation seems to have been written on the occasion of Cyrus's troops overrunning the country of the Edomites, as if on their way thither. The writer tells us that the Captivity is at an end ; "Thy punishment is accomplished, O daughter of Zion." And he rejoices in the thought that Edom's turn for punishment is now come ; "Rejoice, and be glad [O Zion]. O daughter of Edom, that dwellest in the land of Uz, the cup shall pass over unto thee ; thou shalt be drunken, and shalt make thyself naked." The writer speaks of the captivity of king Jehoiachin, "The breath of our nostrils, the anointed of Jehovah, was taken in their pitfalls." And he speaks of the disappointment at not being relieved by the Egyptians ; "We watched for a nation that could not save us." These last words could not have been written by Jeremiah, who suffered no such disappointment, and never looked for help from Egypt.

THE RETURN FROM CAPTIVITY ; B.C. 537.

In the very first year that Cyrus king of Persia was master of Babylon, he issued his celebrated decree that the Jewish captives might return home, and rebuild their Temple in Jerusalem. This was in the sixty-third year from the accession of Jehoiachin, and was called, according to their usual mode of reckoning, the sixty-third of the Captivity, though the Captivity did not begin till the end

* Lib. viii. vi. 20.

of Jehoiachin's first year. This decree of Cyrus was not wholly dictated by humanity. With the conquest of one kingdom he immediately had visions of the conquest of other kingdoms; and we shall meet with very good evidence that as soon as he had made himself king of Babylon he adopted the aim of the former kings of that country, and proposed to himself the conquest of Egypt, as what was sooner or later to be attempted. But with this view he followed a wiser policy than his Chaldee predecessors, and began by making the Jews his friends. He was master of Syria and all Palestine, as well as of Babylon; and therefore in sending the Jews home, he was only moving a body of his subjects from one province of his kingdom into another province, in which they could be more useful to him.

Among the captives in Babylon the man of highest rank was the young Zerubbabel, called also Sheshbazzar, the grandson of king Jehoiachin, who had died in Babylon. Him Cyrus appointed to the office of viceroy of Judea, with the Persian title of the Tirshatha. The Hebrew writers style him Prince Zerubbabel. Of this modest heir to the throne of David, to whom the Jews were so much indebted, we learn very little from the historians. We are left to picture to ourselves his character by the help of his situation. His quiet submission to the Babylonian tyrants, his prudent dealing with the Persian conqueror, his successful intercession for his countrymen, are nowhere described, unless we accept the servant of Jehovah, in Isaiah lii. 13—liii., as meant for him. He was young; in Ezekiel xvii. 22, he is called a tender twig. But he was married, and had several sons whom he left behind him in Babylon, probably detained by the Persian king as hostages. With the permission of Cyrus, Zerubbabel gathered together in the neighbourhood of Babylon nearly fifty thousand Jews, beside their male and female servants; among them was Jeshua, the representative of the family of the high priests, with above three thousand other priests, but only twenty-seven Levites. Cyrus gave into their hands more than five thousand gold and silver dishes which had been carried away from Jerusalem by Nebuchadnezzar, and had been kept in the temples of the Babylonian Gods. This caravan, with their wealth and their cattle, Zerubbabel led

in safety to Jerusalem. They reached their wished-for home probably in the second year of Cyrus's reign, B.C. 537.

These people were for the most part the grandchildren of those that had been carried into captivity, and they came back in far greater numbers than they went. Those taken away were probably all men of full age. When in Babylon they had found wives, partly, we may suppose, of the women of the country, and partly of Jewish families, of whom there can be no doubt many were already living there. They returned from captivity men, women, and children. While in Babylon they had carefully kept records of the births, so that every family could prove to what tribe it belonged, or at least that it was part of the great family of Israel. They were for the most part those who had given themselves up willingly to Nebuchadnezzar, and had not brought upon themselves his vengeance by resisting. The leaders were the sons of Pharez and the sons of Zarah, the latter called the sons of the Pasha of Moab. The captives in Syria, on the banks of the Chaboras, had not been so careful of their genealogies ; and about six hundred of these, who returned home at the same time, were not immediately allowed by their brethren to be true Jews. Such of these as claimed to be priests did not at once have their claims allowed. They were not permitted to eat from the Holy of Holies, and were told to wait until a chief priest, properly robed with the Urim and Thummim, could decide the question. They probably had not to wait long, because Jeshua, the son or grandson of Jcsadak, was acknowledged by Prince Zerubbabel and the whole assembly to be the chief of the priests.*

While living in captivity, more or less as slaves, in spots where they had been placed, the northern and southern tribes may have in some degree continued separate ; but when freedom to move was granted to them by Cyrus, the distinction began to be lost, particularly among those who remained abroad. They were all at liberty to return, and some of Ephraim and Manasseh followed Zerubbabel to Judea, as the best chance of finding a comfortable home. Others of Israel, but as it would seem not many, returned to Samaria, and to their old enmity to Judah. But among those who remained scattered abroad, "in the dispersion"

* Ezra i. ii.

as it was called, such jealousy fortunately died out. The foreigners among whom they dwelt looked upon them all as one people. The name of Jew covered them all ; and as the government in Jerusalem gave rank to those who when at a distance were willing to be thought its subjects, they were all glad to be thought Jews. They thus left to our eastern travellers the interesting but hopeless inquiry, where the tribes of Northern Israelites are to be found, since so small a number returned from captivity to Samaria. The want of population in Samaria the Persian king in part supplied by sending a number of colonists from Elam, Media, and Persia, to enjoy the lands in Samaria, and to trample on what remained there of the old inhabitants.* The captives who followed Zerubbabel soon scattered themselves over Judea, every family going to its own city. These cities were far from being without inhabitants. The peasants and labourers had been left behind in them when their masters had been carried off by the Chaldees. Many of the Assyrians whom Sennacherib and Esarhaddon had placed in Samaria had spread themselves over Judea. Such of the Jewish families as had been able to escape the danger, and had found safety as exiles in Egypt or in the neighbourhood of the Ammonites and Moabites, or among the ruined cities of the Philistines, after Nebuchadnezzar's armies had plundered Gaza, Askalon, and Ashdod, must have reached their old homes before the captives had travelled their longer journey.† Hebron, and all the country to the south of it, was now in the hands of the Edomites. Such was the population of Judea, some friendly, and some unfriendly, when the captives returned home to repair the waste places.

Among those who returned from captivity, we find two new bodies of men mentioned with the priests and Levites. These are the Nethins and the sons of Solomon's servants. In Numbers iii., written in the middle of the monarchy, the priests are a single family, while the Levites are counted by thousands. But before the close of the monarchy Deuteronomy declared that all the Levites were priests. But a law cannot make those equal who in education and habits are unequal. The distinction between the upper and lower class was not wholly abolished ; the line which divided

* Ezra iv. 9, 10.

† Zeph. ii. 7, 9.

them was, however, removed a few steps lower down ; and now, on the return from Babylon, the priests are the more numerous body, and the numbers in the classes are as follows :—Priests, 4,289 ; Levites, 74 ; singers, 128 ; gate-keepers, 139 ; Nethins and sons of Solomon's servants, 392.* The Nethins were a lower class of Levites, who are said to be Nethun, or *given* to the priests as servants. They lodged in the suburb Ophel, outside the south end of the temple-yard.† Of the duties of the sons of Solomon's servants we have no account ; but they were ranked with the Nethins. They were very possibly the temple servants, called Gibeonites in Joshua ix. 27. Those men were called Gibeonites after the town from which the ark was brought into Jerusalem ; and the reason for their being servants, which is given in the Book of Joshua, we may safely disregard.

The large number of priests mentioned above explains why they no longer bore the name of Sons of Aaron. Such a name would have revived the narrow enactments of the Levitical law, which had been widened by the Book of Deuteronomy ; it would have limited the priesthood, as before, to a single family, the sons of Zadok, and shut out from it that large body of the Levites whose claim to the higher rank was now admitted. The chief priest at this time was of such lessened importance, that the latter chapters of Ezekiel, when describing the temple and its ordinances, do not mention such a person.

The well-known laws of political economy will teach us that in the depressed state of the country, with trade ruined and industry discouraged, land can have yielded very little produce beyond that required for the maintenance of the cultivator. Hence very little rent or surplus profit reached the cities. Jerusalem, in particular, was very much deserted ; and the rulers who settled there called upon the people as a duty to come up and live there also. They proposed that at least one in ten of the Jews should fix his residence in Jerusalem. They drew lots to determine upon whom this burden should fall ; and those who were chosen, and complied, received the blessing of the others for their dutiful obedience.

The Jews in Jerusalem, the heads of families, the chiefs

* Ezra ii.

† Nehemiah iii. 26.

of the fathers, as they are styled, were at this time not quite fourteen hundred, most of them belonging to the tribes of Benjamin and Judah. These men, acting with the priests, were lords over the mixed population, and masters of the city, so long as the Persian tribute was regularly paid. If there was a Persian garrison in the castle, it left the government of the city, even to the execution of justice, wholly in the hands of the Jews. The priests, who did the service of the temple, and garrisoned it as a fortress, were twelve hundred, with one hundred and seventy gate-keepers. Many of these lived within the temple-yard. The Nethins, or temple servants, lived in Ophel, a suburb, at the south side of the temple, while two hundred and eighty Levites dwelt in the city.*

In Jerusalem the prince Zerubbabel and the chief priest Jeshua immediately set up the altar and took steps for the repair of the Temple and the renewal of the worship there. They gathered in the freewill offerings, and sent for timber from Lebanon, which was again brought by sea to Joppa, as in Solomon's time; and in the second year after their arrival they laid the foundation of the House of Jehovah, which was to be built on the same spot on Mount Moriah as that where Solomon had before built it.

Now began to show itself the jealousy which might easily have been foreseen between the men of the Captivity and those whom they found living in and around Jerusalem, whom they styled their adversaries. The grounds for a separation between them can have been very slight, except that these had been in captivity and those had not. The conduct of the captives seems to have been both unwise and unkind, and probably very unjust. The new Assyrian settlers were only a handful, and need not be taken into account. Whatever difference there had been at first between the Israelites and the conquered Canaanites, it had been blotted out during the four centuries of the monarchy. They had during that long time intermarried, at least, so far as the rich and the poor are in the habit of intermarrying. They were the same in religion and language, at least, so far as the rich and the poor are ever the same in religion and language. When Nebuchadnezzar invaded Judea, he found no other division among the

* Nehem. xi.

people than that between the educated rich who owned the land, and the uneducated poor who tilled it. But on the return home the separation between the Children of the Captivity and the others was very clearly marked. The foreign manners, foreign opinions, and foreign accent in the Captives, was accompanied with a better education, and a proud assertion that they alone were the true Jews who had followed the old traditions. But education was not wholly in the hands of those who had been in captivity ; and we shall find among the later writings some which seem to be the product of the despised class. Thus each party might naturally claim to be the old inhabitants, and might style the others the new comers. Even those who acknowledged that they were colonists, brought in by the Assyrians, asked leave to join the men of the Captivity in their pious work of rebuilding the Temple, pleading that they had worshipped Jehovah there ever since their arrival. But their request was haughtily refused. They were all alike told that they should have no part in building the House for the God of the Jews. A careful jealous line was in every thing drawn between the handful of men who had come up from the Captivity and the great mass of the people. The former said that they alone were the true Jews, the children of Judah and Benjamin, and that all but themselves were Gentiles and Assyrian colonists. The latter accordingly took every step in their power to weaken the hands of Zerubbabel ; and though he had come up bearing the royal letter of Cyrus, yet they were able, with the help of the Persian officers in the country, to stop his work during the whole of that reign.*

Under CAMBYSES, the next king of Persia, the Jews were equally unable to proceed with the building of the Temple, and were painfully reminded that Jerusalem was now subject to the despised Samaria, which was the Persian capital of the province. The reign of Cambyzes over Persia only deserves mention here because of his invasion and conquest of Egypt. This may be taken as a proof that his father Cyrus had that end in view when he released the Jewish captives in Babylon, in exchange for whom chapter xliiii. of Isaiah promises that Egypt shall be given to him as their ransom.

* Ezra iii.—iv. 5.

The return of the captive Jews from Babylon called forth a burst of religious poetry expressive of the people's thankfulness to Jehovah. But they rejoiced with trembling. They had for a moment hoped for a restoration of their monarchy; but Zerubbabel was not to be a king. To speak of him in any lofty terms might rouse the Persian jealousy. And this may explain why the Jewish writers when praising him usually avoid the use of his name. He is called by the prophets the Offshoot from the root of Jesse; the Righteous Branch raised up to David; the Tender Twig from the highest cedar; and the Servant of Jehovah. These names were no doubt all well understood at the time. But in later days, and particularly when the Hebrew books had got thrown into their present confused state, it became by no means clear what person the prophets were looking for so hopefully; and hence many passages relating to Zerubbabel have been thought to point to a spiritual Messiah.

The writings are now expressive of the change which sixty years of suffering in a foreign land had made in their religious feelings. The prophets now taught the nation to look forward less to a time of worldly greatness, which had become hopeless, and more to a time of spiritual blessings, which might be helped on by their own efforts. First among the writers now to be mentioned is the Isaiah of the return home, called the Later Isaiah by those critics who divide the Book of Isaiah into two portions, and give each portion to a single writer. But we have already mentioned the first Isaiah's own writings, about the year B.C. 700, and we then gave reasons for placing a second portion of this book about B.C. 600, and a third portion about B.C. 550. So we shall have occasion to divide further portions of the book between an equal number of different centuries. To the writer who lived under Zerubbabel we can only give chapters xi., xii., already mentioned, and xl.—lix.; or perhaps only xl.—lv., written while the captives were on their journey home; as the following four chapters differ from these in purpose, though not by many years in the time that they were written.

The writer of these beautiful chapters begins—"Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God. Speak ye to the heart of Jerusalem, and cry unto her that her warfare is

accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned." Cyrus has released the captives ; there is "the voice of one that crieth, Prepare ye in the desert the way of Jehovah," for their return ; "make straight in the barren valley a highway for our God."

Jehovah declares his trust in Prince Zerubbabel, who is to lead the Jews home from Babylon :—

"Behold my Servant, whom I will uphold, my chosen one in whom my soul delighteth. I have put my spirit upon him ; he shall bring forth judgment upon the nations. He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard abroad. A brusied reed he shall not break, and the dimly burning flax he shall not quench ; he shall bring forth judgment unto truth. He shall not fail nor be discouraged, till he have set up judgment on the land ; and the isles shall wait for his law."

But the writer also blames the want of action both in Zerubbabel, the servant of Jehovah, who seems to have been a well-meaning but weak man, and in the high priest Jeshua, whom he calls Jehovah's messenger, giving him a title which was now coming into use for a preacher :—

"Hear ye deaf, and look ye blind, that ye may see. Who is so blind as my Servant ? or so deaf as my Messenger, whom I am sending ? Who is so blind as he that has been recompensed, even so blind as Jehovah's Servant ?"

Respecting Cyrus he asks, "Who hath raised up the righteous man from the east, hath called him to be His follower, hath given up the nations before him, and made him rule over kings ?" And he answers, it was "I, Jehovah, who am the first and with the last ; I am he." Then we are told of Cyrus's future intentions, that in releasing the Jews, he was preparing for the invasion of Egypt : "I have given Egypt for thy ransom, Ethiopia and Seba in place of thee. Since thou art precious in my sight, thou hast been honourable, and I have loved thee. Therefore will I give men for thee, and peoples for thy life." But he gently reminds the people of their transgressions, "Thou hast bought for me no sweet cane with money, neither hast thou moistened me with the fat of thy sacrifices ; but thou hast burdened me with thy sins, thou hast wearied me with thine iniquities. I, even I, am He that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and I will not remember thy sins." The writer quotes the

words of the prophet Nahum, which were written on the destruction of Nineveh seventy-four years earlier:—"How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace." He again describes the Servant of Jehovah in words very suitable to Zerubbabel, as "Despised and rejected by men, a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief." He borrows thoughts from Jeremiah xi. 19, when he describes Jehovah's servant as "brought like a lamb to the slaughter, and as kept apart from the land of the living." Again "He prepared his grave with the wicked, and was with the mighty one among his dead men." Yet "he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of Jehovah shall prosper in his hand." And again, "Behold, I have given him for a witness to the peoples, a leader and commander to the tribes." Joel, Nahum, and sometimes Isaiah, write with more vigour and energy than this unknown author, but no Hebrew writer whatever has the same religious sweetness.

There are several of the Psalms that belong to this time of rejoicing and hope. Thus Psalm lxxxiv. may have been written by one of the captives on the journey before he had reached the city of his forefathers:—

How lovely is thy tabernacle, O Jehovah of hosts!
My soul longeth, yea, fainteth for the courts of Jehovah.

And again:—

Blessed is the man whose strength is in thee;
In whose heart are the highways [to Zion].
On passing through the valley of Baca [or tears],
They make it a spring, yea the early rain covereth it with blessings.
They go from strength to strength,
Every one of them appeareth before God in Zion.

Psalm cxxvi. says:—

When Jehovah brought home the captivity of Zion,
We were like them that dream.
Then was our mouth filled with laughter,
And our tongue with singing.

This latter Psalm is called a Song of the Steps, or of Going Up; and there are fourteen others with the same title. The reason for their being so styled is very doubtful. It might mean that they were sung by worshippers on their

route up to Jerusalem ; or, sung by the priests on the steps of the Temple ; or again, written, as some of them are, with returning catch words, to help the memory by leading it from sentence to sentence. But as no one of these reasons will apply to all of them, no one can be taken to be the true reason. These Psalms seem to be of various dates.

In the history of literature there has been in every country a time when it has flourished and a time of decay ; a time of original genius and a time of imitation and even of forgery. So in Judea soon after the return from the Captivity, when men began to inquire after the old and valued books, they began also to make unauthorized additions to them, in the form of prophecies written after the events. The Books of Jeremiah and Ezekiel are the two which have received the largest additions in this improper manner. The Book of Isaiah received fewer of these unauthorized additions. The newer parts of that Book seem for the most part to have been joined to that prophet's writings only in carelessness ; and as for the Pentateuch and the Book of Psalms, it was always the custom to add new laws to the one and new poems to the other as they were written. But some of the additions to Jeremiah and Ezekiel were added in deceit. Thus it is upon some of the scribes of this time that we must fix the blame of adding to the writings of Jeremiah words prophetic of the Return, which were certainly written after the event, and which are mostly very much out of place where they now stand. Chapter xvi. 14, 15, promises the Israelites a return, and stands between two sentences threatening them with punishment. Chapter xxvii. 7, is dated in the reign of Jehoiakim, and it prophesies not only that the future king Zedekiah shall serve Nebuchadnezzar, but that all nations shall continue to serve him, and his son, and his grandson ; and that then great kings, meaning the Median king and Cyrus, shall require service of Babylon. The exactness in all these prophecies makes us think that they were written after the events had happened. Chapter xxiii. 1—8 and chapters xxxii. 36—xxxiii. promise not only a return home but that a righteous Branch shall be raised up to David, meaning Prince Zerubbabel, who is afterwards described by that name in the writings of the prophet Zechariah. Yet more exact are chapters xxv. 1—14 and xxix. 10—14, which

threaten that Babylon is to be overthrown in the seventieth year from the accession of Nebuchadnezzar. The words beginning at xxxii. 36, could never have been written by Jeremiah, they quite misstate his opinions. It was himself, not his opponents, who said that the city should be delivered up into the hands of the king of Babylon.

There are in some of the other Prophets similar passages which declare themselves plainly to be insertions of this time. Such is Joel ii. 28—iii. 8, which promises to Judah and Jerusalem a return from captivity, and speaks of the Jewish children being sold by the Tyrians to the Greeks, as slaves. Such is Amos ix. 11—15, which promises that the fallen temple shall be rebuilt, and the captives brought home to build up their ruined cities, and be masters over every nation that worships Jehovah; a description which we are particularly told included the Edomites. Such also is Micah iv. v., which first threatens that Jerusalem shall be carried captive to Babylon, and then promises that the captives shall be set free, and that a ruler shall rise up out of Beth-lehem to govern Judah. This, of course, is Prince Zerubbabel, of the family of David. Such again is Isaiah ii. 1—4, which is wholly taken from the passage of Micah above spoken of; and iv. 2—6, which is in praise of the Branch of Jehovah, the title often given to Zerubbabel. This latter passage is noteworthy as declaring that those who at the time escaped the Captivity, and were left in Jerusalem, were all holy, not limiting, like Ezekiel, that character to the captives.

The wish to know what will happen to-morrow, or on any more distant day, is a wish so natural, that men have not been content with asking the opinion of those who by a study of the past can in some degree make a guess at the future; but they have often run to ignorant pretenders, as did king Saul on the eve of his last fatal battle, and as king Josiah did when frightened by the threats in Deuteronomy. It was in Babylon that this silly art of fortune-telling was most cultivated. There the Chaldee astronomers had proved their right to be believed by foretelling eclipses; and building upon the credit thus gained they had ventured to foretell the fate of men and nations. A Chaldean had become a name for a fortune-teller. The Jews, when in captivity, may have yielded a belief to these pretensions.

Some had learned to think that such powers were the one great proof of wisdom, or at least of the possession of knowledge from heaven. Hence on the return from Babylon the scribes thought that they could add to the authority of their great writers by grafting into the text prophecies written after the events. In this spirit were made the additions to the Books of Jeremiah and the other prophets as pointed out above. The meaning of the name of Prophet became changed. It had meant a wise adviser of the people, one who warned from sin and encouraged goodness ; but they lowered it to mean one who, like a fortune-teller, could foretell the future. From such blots on the Prophets' writings it is now the business of the critic to clear them.

Psalm cii. was written after the return home, but while the city was yet in ruins. The writer, an old man whose days were like a lengthened shadow, whose prayers had been the groanings of a prisoner appointed to death, and whose strength had been weakened on the journey home, now says,

Thou wilt arise, and have pity on Zion,
For the time to favour her, yea, the set time is come.
For thy servants take pleasure in her stones,
They look with favour even on the dust thereof.
Then will the nations fear the name of Jehovah,
And all the kings of the earth thy glory,
When Jehovah buildeth up Zion, appearing in his glory.

The "set time" here spoken of is that mentioned in Jeremiah xxvii. and xxix., as declared beforehand by the Almighty.

Psalm lxix. also declares the writer's trust that God will save Zion and build up again the cities of Judah. He complains sorely of the enemies by whom he is surrounded. It may belong to this time of distress and hope.

While in captivity the Jews had clung with pious zeal to their old customs and traditions, but at the same time they had gained many new and some wiser opinions. They had become more enlightened by mixing with men of other faiths. They gave up their old opinion that a man's sufferings were always a punishment for his sins ; that opinion their own bitter experience had disproved. They gave up also the opinion that he was punished for his forefathers' sins (Ezek. xviii. Jerem. xxxi. 30). Rather than that they

thought that he might sometimes be punished for his children's sins (Job. viii. 4).

Henceforth also we meet with not a little of fable, which we may call Eastern Mythology mixed with the pure theology of the prophets. Thus we now read of Jehovah sitting in a council of holy angels (Ps. lxxxix. 5—7) and of these angels presenting themselves before him on stated days. One of the angels, named Satan, or *the Accuser*, has the duty of pointing out who among men is deserving of punishment (Job i.). Other angels are appointed as watchers, or guardians, to watch over the welfare of men (Dan. iv. 17). To these Holy Ones some persons would address prayer in times of distress, like the Romish invocation of saints (Job. v. 1). Each nation was thought to have a High One, or prince, in heaven, as it had a king on earth; and when the earthly king was overthrown and punished, the High One in heaven was punished also (Isaiah xxiv. 21; Dan. x. 13—20). Another opinion gave to each nation its god; and as Jehovah and his angels met in assembly in heaven, the gods of the nations met on a mountain in the recesses of the north, which may be compared to the mount Olympus of the Greeks (Isaiah xiv. 13). The wicked kings of the nations who carried the Jews into captivity are described as cast down into hell, with all their pomp and their glory. This is a pit under the ground, where the maggot is spread under them, and the worms cover them, where they are met by the other departed spirits (Isaiah xiv. 9—18). The good and bad alike when dead go down into this dreary pit called hell. Before or after entering it, they have to pass through the Valley of the Shadow of Death, a valley divided by several doors, to each of which there was a doorkeeper (Job. xxxviii. 17). Whatever were the dangers to be met with in this valley, the good man was able to walk past them unhurt (Ps. xxiii. 4). His soul was not left to corrupt in hell (Ps. xvi. 10; xlix. 15); while the wicked were thrust into the back of this pit of destruction (Ezek. xxxii. 23). The Mighty One of the nations was a cruel being to whom Jehovah handed up his enemies, knowing that he would surely deal with them, and force them down into this pit (Ezek. xxxi. 11). Such were the new opinions about the under-world which now crept into Judea from Babylon.

The Jews also brought with them from Babylon the custom of counting their months for civil purposes from the autumn instead of from the spring ; but they continued to use the old beginning of the year for religious purposes. They also brought home new names for the months. These are used in the Books of Esther, Zechariah, and Nehemiah. But these new months did not at once give greater exactness to the measure of time. They were still lunar months, some of twenty-nine days each, and some of thirty days. It also seems probable that the weeks were of the same varying length, and that every lunar month, as perhaps in Egypt, was divided into four weeks, with the full moon always a sabbath. Thus some weeks must have had eight days. From a comparison between 2 Kings xxv. and Zec. viii., we see that the law had fixed the fast days for the seventh, ninth, and tenth days of the month, so they never fell on the first, eighth, fifteenth, or twenty-second day, which may have been sabbaths. Up to this time all events have been dated by the day of the month only. It was not necessary to mention the day of the week, if the week was a known portion of the month. The change to make the week to be always of seven days exactly, as proposed in Lev. xxiii., 15—16, may have come to pass in the course of the following century.

The rejoicing and pleasing hopes which accompanied the captives on their return probably very soon faded away, and left the Jews to the sad reality of their situation. They had returned to poverty and want, to discomfort of every kind. Though a prince of their own nation was appointed to be their ruler, they were still harassed by Persian tax-gatherers, who enforced their demands by the help of Assyrian or Babylonian soldiers.

The burdens under which the Jews laboured were a tax on produce, a poll-tax, and the road service.* The first two were levied with cruelty, and probably with irregularity, by overseers throughout the fields, and by tribute gatherers in the towns. Equally galling was the road service, or the duty of helping forward on their journey, with labourers and beasts of burden, all troops and officers who were moving about the country on the public service.

Zerubbabel was a prince only in name. He had no

* Ezra iv. 13.

troops under his command ; he could collect no taxes ; but he had a small allowance from the Persian tribute to support his state, and possibly the produce of such lands as he may have held as a family estate. The unhappy country was no longer a kingdom, it was a province of Persia, receiving orders from Susa, through a Pasha, or governor, who was ruler over all the lands to the west of the river Euphrates, and probably dwelt in Damascus.

This makes itself seen in the very language. After this time the Jews are spoken of as living beyond the river Euphrates, meaning to the west of it, because distances were measured from Babylon ; in the same way that Gilead used to be called beyond the Jordan, meaning to the east of it, when distances were measured from Jerusalem. Not the least among the troubles was the quarrel between the two parties in the state, arising from the narrow jealousy by which the men of the Captivity denied the rest of the nation the rank of being Jews. Many of the melancholy complaining Psalms seem to belong to this time. The writer of Psalm cxx. compares Jerusalem, first to the unknown country on the northern shore of the Black Sea, and then to the desert on the east of the Ammonites:—

Woe is me that I sojourn in Mesech,
That I dwell among the tents of Kedar.
My soul hath long dwelt with him that hateth peace.
I am for peace ; but when I speak they are for war.

Isaiah xvii. 4—11 describes a sad time when the glory of Jacob is made thin, and when his strong cities are like the abandoned thicket-camps and hill-camps of the Amorites, which the Israelites found in the land when they first conquered it.

Isaiah xviii. gives us a knowledge of an important settlement of Jews in Abyssinia, which the writer addresses as the Land of the winged Tsaltsal, or *spear fly*. This is an insect now well known to naturalists. It is a small fly, but a dreadful scourge, which kills all the domestic cattle that may be brought into that country. To Abyssinia the Jews may have fled as a place of safety when their own nation had been “scattered and made bare, measured out and trodden down, and plundered by the rivers [Tigris and Euphrates].” Now that both Nineveh and Babylon formed part of the great kingdom of Persia, and the king of

Persia was often called by the Jews the king of Assyria, it was wise for a writer to speak in this careful way of their late oppressors, the Babylonians and Assyrians. The prophet Isaiah had no need to be so guarded.

The last verse of this chapter is yet more modern ; it foretells that hereafter the Jews living there will send their tribute to the temple in Jerusalem. A time will come when “ presents will be brought to Jehovah of hosts from a people scattered and made bare, who are some of the people terrible from the beginning and hitherto, the nation measured out and trodden down, whose land the Rivers [Tigris and Euphrates] have plundered.”

Psalm xl. quotes Isaiah i. 11, for Jehovah not requiring burnt offerings and sacrifices, saying, “ In the roll of the Book it is written.” It probably belongs to this century, but carries with it no very exact date. It closely resembles Psalm xxxv. They both belong to a time of distress after the Captivity. Psalm lxx. is taken out of Psalm xl.

There are also many other Psalms which are known by modern peculiarities to belong to the time after the Captivity ; and they may be mentioned here as well as at any other place. Such are the Alphabetic Psalms, in which each letter of the alphabet in its turn is the first letter of the verse. These are Nos. xxv., xxxiv., xxxvii., cxl., cxli., cxix., and cxlv. Every one of these consists of a string of moral and religious thoughts ; and like all poems in which the writer is cramped by the too artificial structure, they are wholly wanting in fire and energy. The attention given to versification has not in this case been given wisely. The same alphabetic arrangement is used in the first four of the Lamentations, and also in the poem in Praise of a Virtuous Woman at the end of the Proverbs.

Of these Alphabetic Psalms, No. xxv. ends with the prayer so descriptive of these sad times :—

Redeem Israel, O God, out of all his troubles.

Psalm xxxvii. contains many traces of the sad state of affairs after the return from Captivity. Some men may have wished to quit a country in which they found it difficult to obtain food. The Psalmist dissuades such from forsaking the land of their fathers, saying,—

Trust in Jehovah, and do good ;
 Dwell in the land, and thou wilt assuredly be fed.
 Delight thyself also in Jehovah,
 And he will give thee the requests of thy heart.

And again :—

For yet a little while and the wicked shall not be ;
 Yea, thou shalt consider his place and it shall not be.
 But the meek will inherit the land.

Psalm cxix. speaks repeatedly of the entangling Sins of Ignorance, which had been created by the law of Numbers xv. 22—31, and treats every such profession of ignorance as a quibble, saying :—

Thou despisest all that sin in ignorance of thy laws ;
 For their pretence [of ignorance] is false. (verse 118.)
 Thou hast rebuked the proud that are cursed,
 Who [say they] sin in ignorance of thy commands. (verse 21.)

At the same time the writer himself humbly prays to be saved from such sins, saying :—

With my whole heart have I sought thee ;
 Let me not sin in ignorance of thy commands. (verse 10.)

This Psalm is not only artificial in its alphabetical arrangement, in having every stanza consist of eight verses, each beginning with the same letter, but, moreover, every stanza repeats, in its eight verses, nearly the same eight words, as Law, Testimonies, Ways, Precepts, Statutes, Commands, Judgments, and Word.

The latter half of Psalm xix., verses 7—14, may here be mentioned, as it resembles the above, not only in its running over the words Law, Testimony, Precepts, Command, Fear, Judgments, but also in its prayer against falling into Sins of Ignorance, saying :—

Who can understand his Sins of Ignorance ?
 Cleanse thou me from hidden faults ;
 Keep back thy servant also from presumptuous sins.

The introduction to the Book of Proverbs in praise of Wisdom, contained in chapters i.—ix. bears but few marks by which we can fix its age. But its modern character forbids us to place it before this time ; and as it seems to have been known to the writer of Job, we cannot place it later. Wisdom speaks as a person, saying :—

I was poured out [or begotten] from everlasting,
 From the beginning, before the earth was.
 When there were no waters below, I was brought forth,
 When there were no fountains abounding with water.
 Ere yet the mountains were settled,
 Before the hills, was I brought forth ;
 While yet He had not made the earth nor the plains,
 Nor the highest part of the dust of the world.
 When he prepared the heavens I was there ;
 When he fixed the arch upon the face of the deep ;
 When he made firm the skies above ;
 When he stopped up the fountains of the deep ;
 When he gave to the sea his decree,
 That the waters should not pass its shore ;
 When he fixed the foundations of the earth ;
 Then I was with him as a nursling ;
 And I have been a daily delight, sporting ever before him,
 Sporting in the habitable parts of his earth ;
 And my delights are with the sons of Adam.

Of the Jewish writings which remain to us, this furnishes the earliest example of God's Wisdom being made a person, begotten before all worlds, a thought which is carried further in the Greek Apocryphal work of the Wisdom of the Son of Sirach, and again in the Wisdom of Solomon, a yet more modern Apocryphal work. The writer may, perhaps, have visited the Jewish colony in Lower Egypt, and thence have learnt this figure of speech. But his Wisdom is not the speculative wisdom of the Greeks, which sought for a reason why one action was to be thought right and another wrong ; but the practical wisdom of obeying the commands of conscience or the moral sense.

First in importance among the Hebrew books is the Book of Job, which, by its quotations out of the Isaiah of the Return, cannot have been written earlier than this time. It is a poem in the form of a dialogue between Job and his friends, in which the writer's aim is to justify the ways of God to man. Job, a righteous man, has the misfortune to lose his wealth, and then his children, and lastly to be broken down by a loathsome and painful disease. His friends follow the arguments of the Hebrew prophets, and tell him that these sufferings are a punishment for his sins. But Job does not acknowledge himself wicked, and he denies that the good are always prosperous. The friends repeat their opinion in eight speeches, to which he makes eight replies, which are supposed to be so far convincing

that the third friend does not venture on his third speech. Then a new speaker is introduced, who may be compared to the chorus in a Greek play. He reproves them all. And lastly the Almighty speaks, and gives the only answer that can be given to the inquiry why evil is allowed ; he shows, by recounting the wonders of nature which are beyond man's knowledge, how far any man is from being able to solve the yet greater difficulties of this moral inquiry :—

Hast thou gone to the springs of the sea ?
 Or hast thou walked about in search of the deep ?
 Have the gates of death been opened unto thee ?
 Or hast thou seen the doorkeepers of the shadow of death ?
 Hast thou considered the breadth of the earth ?
 Declare if thou knowest it all.
 Which is the way to where light dwelleth ?
 And darkness where is the place thereof,
 That thou mayest take each to its own bounds,
 And that thou shouldst know the paths to its house ?
 Knowest thou this because thou wast then born ?
 Or because the number of thy days is great ?

We cannot venture to say that the writer meant Job in his sufferings to be a representative of the Israelites in their Captivity ; but the poem runs upon the very thoughts that must have been in the minds of many at the time. They had suffered a heavy affliction, and they naturally asked themselves, Did we deserve it ? Is it true, as our teachers have often said, like Job's friends, that such afflictions are always sent as a punishment for sins ? The Isaiah of the Return had met all such doubts about God's dealings shortly and with authority, making the Almighty say, " My thoughts are not as your thoughts, neither are your ways as my ways." But the writer of Job meets them with more of argument ; and he reminds us at some length of our ignorance of God's ways and purposes. He also shows how little he is satisfied with his own treatment of the subject ; for he thinks it necessary to restore the righteous Job to his former prosperity, as the safest way of making the Almighty appear to act towards him with justice.

Such part of the scenery of the poem as is in heaven is borrowed from the East, and it could hardly have been written before the Jews became acquainted with the Babylonians. The angels, here called the Sons of God, present themselves from time to time before Jehovah as before their

sovereign. On one such day Satan, *the accuser*, tells the Almighty that Job's piety arises from his prosperity, and that if that should leave him he would curse God to his face. Upon this Satan has permission given to him to afflict Job as before mentioned, and the result is the dialogue which we have described, in which Job defends himself from the accusation of being wicked, without charging the Almighty with injustice. Such part of the scenery as is on earth belongs to the Arabs of the desert. Job's wealth is in asses, sheep, oxen, and camels. He lives in the land of Uz, to the east of the Israelites, away from all cities and agriculture.

The simple manners of the speakers, which may be compared with those of Abraham and his family, have made some critics consider this poem as of a very early date. But these simple manners are due to the place chosen for the narrative, not to the time of the writer ; they may be found in the desert as well now as in the time of Abraham, and they by no means give us a date to the poem. On the other hand the writer's acquaintance with the numerous modern arts of civilization, forbids our placing it earlier than the Captivity. He mentions gold of Ophir, silver, iron, copper, and the art of mining (xxviii. 1—11), writing and sculptured writing on stones (xix. 23) ; the sapphire stone had gained its present name (xxviii. 6) ; land-marks were used to divide estates (xxiv. 2) ; wheat and barley were cultivated (xxxi. 40) ; oil and wine were made (xxiv. 11) ; fields were ploughed and harrowed (xxxix. 10) ; cattle were pledged for debt (xxiv. 3) ; swift couriers and ships were in use (ix. 25) ; kings and judges, and priestly rulers are mentioned (xii. 17—19), and it was the custom for an accusation to be made in writing (xxx. 35) ; mirrors were made of polished metal (xxxvii. 18) ; music was produced by harps and pipes (xxx. 31), and in war by trumpets (xxxix. 24) ; soldiers carried shields made with bosses (xv. 26), and when their ranks were closed held them lapping one over the other like the scales of a crocodile (xli. 15) ; many of the constellations had received names, and the zodiac was divided into parts, called, as by the Alexandrian astrologers, the chambers of the planets (ix. 9, and xxxvii. 9).

His acquaintance with Egypt is shown in his mention of the crocodile, and river-horse, and the paper-reed, and of the Egyptian conjurors, who could in safety play with

the crocodile, and distinguish between a lucky and an unlucky day (iii. 4—8). As a knowledge of foreign countries was only to be gained by travelling, we must suppose that the writer had dwelt chiefly in the desert on the east of the Jordan, but also in Egypt, during the time of the Captivity, and that he afterwards wrote his poem when he could return to Judea in safety. He had probably visited the Nubian gold mines, for the purposes of trade; and there only can he have seen the workman sitting upon a stick and thus let down by a cord into the cavern below, as described in chapter xxviii. 4 :—

He breaketh a shaft through the lime stone;
Not helped by the feet, they hang down,
They swing to and fro, far away from men.

He notes the success of the miners in finding the metal they are in search for; and then he asks and answers the question :—

But where shall wisdom be found,
And where is the place of understanding?
Behold the fear of Jehovah that is wisdom,
And to depart from evil is understanding. (xxviii. 12, 28.)

In the Nubian desert he may also have seen the ostrich sailing over the sands :—

What time she lifteth up herself on high
She scorneth the horse and its rider. (xxxix. 18.)

But he did not go to Nubia through Upper Egypt, and by the cataracts; as when he describes a rush of water he mentions not the Nile but the Jordan. He took the easier but longer route. We can track him in his poem.

On passing Mount Sinai he may have seen the names of former travellers "cut into the rock for ever" (xix. 24). He may then have joined the caravan going from Damascus to Medina, "the travelling companies of Sheba," and on the route have fallen in with "the travelling companies of Tema," (vi. 19). Like other travellers through the desert he may have felt the disappointment on coming to a known water-course and finding the waters are not there, "When it is hot they are consumed out of their place" (vi. 17). He may then have crossed the Red Sea to the mines near Ophir in "a ship of reeds" (ix. 26). The description of

what he saw teaches us his route, and we judge that though a poet he was also a merchant.

In the course of his travels, or perhaps after his return to Judea, he had seen the rulers of his country, the Persians, kiss their hands to the sun and moon in worship (xxx. 27); but we cannot trace his steps further eastward than the desert of Uz, which may at one time have been his home.

Though he has no intention of describing his own country, he now and then lets us see very clearly its unhappy state under its foreign masters, as, when he speaks of the fathers:—

To whom for themselves the land was given
And no stranger passed among them. (xv. 19.)

And again, when he describes the grave as a place where

The prisoners are at ease together,
They hear not the voice of the taskmaster. (iii. 18.)

And again, when he wishes for the wicked man, that

He shall dwell in desolated cities,
In houses which no man inhabiteth,
Which are ready to become heaps of ruins. (xv. 28.)

He seems to be describing quarrels that must have arisen on the return from Captivity about the claim to estates by men who could not show their genealogy, when he speaks of worthless persons as

Sons of fools, yea, sons of men without a name ;
They were driven out of the land. (xxx. 8.)

No Hebrew writer has borrowed more lines from those that went before him than this author. He wrote as a quiet moralist in a time of peace, not like the prophets with a wish to rouse men to action in the hurry of a political revolution; and he was therefore at leisure to study and to make use of the words of others. He shows a knowledge of the Book of Genesis and of the Garden of Eden when he says, in chapter xxxi. 33 :—

If I had covered my transgressions as Adam.

He borrows from Jeremiah xx. 14—18, his despairing words in chapter iii. 3 :—

Let the day perish wherein I was born,
And the night which said, A man child is conceived.

He shows acquaintance with Psalm lxxxix., and with Isaiah xxvii., when, in chapter xxvi. 12, he says of God :—

He stilleth the sea with his power,
And by his understanding he smote the Boaster,
By his spirit he garnished the heavens,
And his hand pierced the cowardly serpent.

He borrows from the Introduction to the Book of Proverbs, iii. 11, and ix. 10, when he says in chapters v. 17, and xxviii. 28 :—

Despise not thou the chastening of the Almighty,—
Behold the fear of Jehovah that is wisdom,
And to depart from evil is understanding.

He makes use of words which we find in Hosea, x. 12, 13, when he says, chapter iv. 8 :—

But as I have seen, they that plow iniquity,
And they that sow trouble, reap the same.

He borrows words from chapter xxxv. 3, of the writer whom we have called the second Isaiah of the Captivity, when in chapter iv. 3, 4, he says :—

Behold, thou hast instructed many,
And thou hast strengthened the weak hands ;
Thy words have upholden him that was stumbling,
And thou hast confirmed the feeble knees.

He shows that he had read the Isaiah of the Return, xli. 20, when in chapter xii. 9, he says :—

Who among all these knoweth not
That the hand of Jehovah hath done this ?

And again, when in chapter iv. 18, he says :—

Behold, he putteth no trust in his servants
And his messengers he chargeth with folly ;

he is clearly referring to the words of the same writer, who, in chapter xlii. 19, had said, “ Who is so blind as my servant, or so deaf as my messenger whom I am sending ? ”

His use of the word “ Messenger ” for a religious teacher, in chapter xxxiii. 23, also brings this book down towards the time of Haggai and Malachi ; while his calling this teacher an interpreter, shows that the Hebrew language, in which the Law was written, had already so far gone out of

common use, that it was necessary, as in the time of Ezra, to translate its commands into the Syriac or Aramaic spoken by the people.

The writer must be considered as Elohistie rather than Jehovistic. For although in his prose he always uses the name of Jehovah, he never does so in his poetry, where he speaks more directly from the heart, except in two of the lines given above as quotations from other authors.

Though the scenery of the poem is Arabic and Eastern, the philosophy is for the most part Jewish. Had the writer not been a Hebrew, the inquiry would have turned upon the origin of evil, whether the devil had caused Job's sufferings, or whether they had come by chance. But such thoughts never enter the Hebrew mind ; the history of the fall of man in the Book of Genesis, which approaches such an inquiry, is not of Hebrew origin. Satan, in the Book of Job, is not an opposing devil, as the Serpent in the garden of Eden has sometimes been thought to be ; but an obedient servant of God, like the lying spirit that was sent to earth to deceive the King of Israel, in 1 Kings xxii.

In a philosophical treatise like the Book of Job, we must not look for the fire and energy and warmth of feeling, which we admire in Joel, Nahum, Isaiah, and the Isaiah of chapter xl. The writer, in his poem of more than two thousand lines, is sometimes tedious ; and though, in the original language, his sentences are often obscure through their shortness, yet his reasoning is as often darkened by its lengthiness. But his descriptions of the various animals are admirable ; and his richness of illustration enlivens, in a very remarkable manner, a subject which, in the hands of an ordinary writer, would be most dull.

The belief in Satan, an evil angel, was brought home by the Jews from the Captivity in Babylon. It may have come from Persia, though in the Hebrew writings Satan hardly appears in the Persian form of a second god. In the Book of Zechariah, where he stands at the right hand of Jehovah to oppose the welfare of the high priest Jeshua, he is, as in the Book of Job, a servant of the Almighty. But in the Book of Chronicles, when the blame of David's numbering the people is laid upon Satan, to relieve Jehovah from being the author of that act, he becomes an independent agent, like the serpent, the tempter in the garden of Eden.

But there is an abundance of passages in the Bible to show that the Jews did not adopt this opinion of the world being governed by two opposing gods, one good and one evil.

Isaiah had spoken of the Pagan gods as dwelling in the recesses of the north,* a place like the fabled mount Olympus of the Greeks; and Ezekiel describes Jehovah as coming on the wings of the cherubs with a storm of lightning from the north.† The same thought that God dwells more particularly in the north appears also in Psalm lxxv. 6. So in the Book of Job we find the Almighty working with the stormy elements in the north. Thus in chap. xxiii. 9 :—

Behold, I go to the east but he is not there ;
And to the west but I cannot perceive him ;
To the north, where he worketh, but I behold him not ;
He covereth up the south, that I see him not.

Moreover, in the course of the drama, when Jehovah would answer for Job, he comes in a storm of lightning from the north :—

A golden brightness cometh out of the north,
With God is terrible majesty.
It is the Almighty. (xxxvii. 22.)

These last and other words by Elihu in this chapter show that Elihu's speech is an original part of the book, introducing the speech of Jehovah, and by no means an after addition.

When Job says, in chap. xix. 26, "From my flesh I shall see God," the use of the preposition, in chap. xxxv. 3, leads us to understand this as meaning "when free from my flesh," and as asserting a belief that after death the soul of man would live free from the body. The writer's visit to Egypt had not led him to adopt the coarser opinion of the Egyptian priests, that the embalmed body would be wanted for life after death. As the Book of Job quotes the Isaiah of the return home, and Job is himself mentioned in Ezekiel xiv., the time when it was written is very well fixed.

As soon as Cyrus gave the captives leave to return home, they felt that Persia was also open to them, and, led by the spirit of trade, some few of them settled in that country, or if not in Persia proper, at least in the city of Susa, which

* Isaiah xiv. 13.

† Ezek. i. 4.

the Persian kings henceforth made their capital. It was at no great distance from those spots in Media, and on the eastern side of Babylon, where many of the captive Israelites had been placed by the Assyrians, and where some remained, through choice or poverty, when the others returned to Judea. We shall find proof that some of the Hebrew writings were written in Persia.

It was in the reign of Darius that Zoroaster, the Persian sage, proposed his reform of the religion of the Magi. The popular religion of the Persians was founded on the belief of two principles in nature ; a good principle or good god, named Ormuzd, in whose honour they worshipped Fire, and the Sun, Moon, and Stars ; and a bad principle, or bad god, named Ahriman. The Persians had no idols in their temples, and so far their temple-worship did not offend the Jews. The Isaiah of the return home had, in chap. xli. 25, even counted Cyrus among the worshippers of Jehovah. And Zoroaster advocated a further approach to pure religion, and said that the world was governed by One God, who had no equal and no companion ; and as he professed that this was the religion of Abraham, he was probably led to it by his intercourse with the Jews. His writings were called the Book of Abraham.*

The first chapter in Daniel seems to have been written soon after the return from Captivity ; and its use of Persian words for *nobles*, *delicate food*, and *steward*, makes it probable that it was written in Persia. It contains only a bald notice of Nebuchadnezzar, in the reign of Jehoiakim, taking Daniel and three other Jewish children to Babylon to be educated as slaves in the king's palace, and taught the writing and language of the Chaldees. These young Jews, when they grew up, gained more wisdom and understanding than all the magicians and soothsayers in Nebuchadnezzar's kingdom, while Daniel had understanding in visions and dreams. He lived to a great age, to see the beginning of Cyrus's reign. The other chapters in this book were written more than three hundred years later ; but as Noah, Daniel, and Job are mentioned in Ezekiel xiv. as proverbially righteous, and Daniel in Ezekiel xxviii. as proverbially wise, we give Daniel i. to this time. The later chapters are wholly different in matter as in date. If this one chapter

* Hyde, *Vet. Persarum Hist.*

is not enough to have gained for Daniel the high character given to him in Ezekiel, we must suppose that there had once been a longer Life of him, or some writings by him, which have been lost with so many other Hebrew books.

We may reasonably suppose that Daniel, a favourite slave, who was about the Babylonian king's person, and had become in some degree his adviser, was able to befriend the Jewish captives in Babylon. They may thus have thought him the chief governor of the wide provinces, and hence may have arisen his high renown.

When Darius Hystaspes came to the throne of Persia, B.C. 521, the whole of his wide dominions, from the Caspian Sea to the Nile, felt a relief from wanton tyranny. He had the good sense to know that he could raise a larger tribute from the subject provinces by good government than by cruelty. Accordingly the Jews found their condition much improved; and in the second year of his reign, moved by a reverence for the number seventy, as it was the seventieth year since the city and temple had been destroyed by the Babylonians, they again began to rebuild the temple. The work had been stopped during the reign of the mad and violent Cambyzes. Prince Zerubbabel and the high priest Jeshua were encouraged in this renewed attempt by the arrival of three of their countrymen from Babylon, who brought with them a supply of money, and probably were able to assure them of the goodwill of Darius.* They were also assured that "the time was come" by the prophets Haggai and Zechariah. But the Pasha or Persian governor of all the provinces to the west of the Euphrates, wished them to stop till he had learnt the pleasure of King Darius on the matter. He wrote to Darius, and in answer received a Decree, giving to Zerubbabel the title of Pasha of the Jews, and reciting the former Decree by Cyrus, and ordering that the expense of the building should be paid out of the Persian tribute that was levied in the country. The favourable answer arrived in the fourth year of Darius, by the hands of Sherezer and Regem-melech, two Persian officers of rank, who further gratified the Jews by going with their attendants to worship in the courts of the Temple.† From that year forward the Jews discontinued

* Zech. vi. 10.

† Zech. vii. 2.

their fasts for the destruction of the city.* With this permission and help, the Temple of Jerusalem was rebuilt, and the work was finished in the sixth year of Darius. This was about 450 years since it was first built by Solomon, and 74 years since it was destroyed by Nebuchadnezzar. It was rebuilt on the old foundations, and if not with equal splendour of gold and cedar, yet in all probability with the same raised terrace for the court of the priests, the same natural rock for the place of the altar, and, so far as the poverty of the times would allow, in all respects the same as the former temple, according to the description given in the latter chapters of Ezekiel. Those who had returned from Captivity, to the exclusion of all others, then dedicated the temple with such burnt offerings as their means allowed ; and, when the first month of the year came round, celebrated the Passover there.†

We may now mention further portions of the Book of Ezekiel, which belong to a time later than when the priest Ezekiel lived. They are not easily distinguished from the others, because the writer adopts Ezekiel's manner, and often styles himself Son of Adam. Some are written in a spirit very much opposed to that of Ezekiel. Chapter xiv. 12—23, speaks of Daniel and Job, jointly with Noah, as righteous men, and hence was written after the return from Captivity. Chapter xvii. relates a riddle about Jehoiachin and Zedekiah, who are carried to Babylon ; and then a tender twig is taken from the highest branch of the cedar, and is planted on the loftiest mountain of Israel. This is Zerubbabel, and it gives us a date to the writing. Chapter xviii. shows the modern improved views of God's government, when saying that every man is to be punished only for his own sins. Even the Book of Deuteronomy, which made a great advance over the older books of the law, and had ordered, in respect to human punishments, that the children should not be put to death for their fathers' sins, had yet repeated, as part of God's law in the Ten Commandments, that the iniquity of the fathers should be visited on the children to the fourth generation. In answer to this seeming injustice, the people had scoffed at their religious teachers by quoting the proverb, "The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children's teeth are

* Zech. vii. 3 ; viii. 19.

† Ezra v. vi.

set on edge." The writer of this chapter, instead of rebuking this, acknowledges the strength of the reply, and answers that every man will have to bear his own guilt only. For thus contradicting the Mosaic Law, some of the later Rabbins wished to remove this book from the canon of Scripture. They blamed Ezekiel for those very chapters which are here set apart as being too good for him. Ezekiel belonged to the order of priests ; but this writer's opinions are opposed to those of the priests.

Chapter xxviii., ending with a few words which mention the return from Captivity, is against Tyre and Sidon, which are to be conquered, not by Nebuchadnezzar, but by strangers, the terrible of the nations, meaning perhaps the Medes and Persians. Tyre was once an outstretched over-shadowing cherub on the mountain of God, possibly in Solomon's reign, when Hiram helped to build the temple, but since then, with Sidon, it has been a pricking briar in Israel's side.

Chapters xxxiii—xxxvii. contain warnings by a writer who has not Ezekiel's priestly bias. Chap. xxxiii. says that Jehovah has no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but wishes the wicked man to turn from his evil ways and live. Chapter xxxiv. blames the rulers, under the name of shepherds who do not feed the flock ; and recognizes the unhappy quarrel between the two parties in the state, saying, "I will distinguish between small cattle and small cattle." It promises to the nation a David as a prince, a plant of renown, meaning Zerubbabel. In chapter xxxv. the Edomites, who had spread themselves over southern Judea, are threatened for having attacked Israel in the day of their calamity. In chap. xxxvi. the desolate cities of Israel are again to be inhabited. Men are to become as numerous as the flocks of holy animals which are brought up to Jerusalem on the days of the solemn feasts. In chapter xxxvii. the writer, using a highly poetical figure, looks forward to the revival of his country in the vision of a valley full of dry bones, which, when commanded by Jehovah, came together bone to its bone, and then flesh and skin came upon them, and lastly the wind breathed upon them, and they lived. They are no more to be two nations. Jehovah will take one stick for the house of Joseph, and another stick for the house of Judah, and the two will become one stick in his hand ; and

a David shall be king over them both. This writer has much of the power of the old prophets.

The writings which we have here glanced at, since the overthrow of the monarchy, are some of the most valuable in the collection. Dangers, misfortunes, and sufferings had strengthened the spirit of devotion and the spirit of poetry. In the foregoing centuries, the Assyrian and the Babylonian invasions had called forth the passionate eloquence of Joel, Isaiah, and Nahum, with many grand Psalms of triumph and thanksgiving ; which were followed by Habakkuk's highly figurative hymn of religious trust. And on the return home from Captivity, after seventy years of suffering, we find that while the nation had been in its lowest state, poetic genius had been by no means crushed. Hebrew versification was always very slight ; but as it becomes more regular we find it still chiefly marked by the arrangement of the thoughts into two or more parts, the so-called Parallelism of Hebrew verse, so that the latter clauses repeat in new words or in some way answer the former clause. The poetry has very little of artificial diction ; its words are those which were in every-day use. It could only gain attention by its real excellence, its lofty aim, and its soul-stirring thoughts. From this description it follows that there is no certain boundary dividing poetry from prose ; and therefore the chapters added to the Book of Isaiah on the return home with their inspiring burst of joy and hope, and chapter xxxvii. of Ezekiel with its promise of the nation's increase in a vision of the dry bones in the valley coming to life again, though not in verse, must be counted as poetry, equally with the exhortations to practical wisdom in the Introduction to Proverbs, the rich illustrations to the argument in the Book of Job, and the sorrowful but hopeful Psalms with their regular versification. These all mark the time of the Captivity, and the beginning of Zerubbabel's viceregal government, as a highly poetic age. Hezekiah's reign was rather the age of eloquence.

The lofty spiritual writings which we have seen written since the return from Captivity, have shown us how greatly in some minds the Jewish religion had become improved by being released from the priestly bonds which had pulled towards the Ark in the Holy of Holies. But there were other minds which knew of no religion but that in the Mosaic

Law. These were the priestly nobles to whom Darius now gave leave to re-build the Temple, and who thereby gained the opportunity of again enslaving the people in the bondage of ritual and ceremony. They had returned home with the pride of martyrs. Their sufferings had made them not more charitable, but more bigoted, and more eager to enforce the observance of the Sabbath and the Temple-service, and to make a separation of the nation into two classes, rather than to unite it in the bonds of friendship. Thus during the following century we shall meet with writings of very opposite views; some with the improved moral tone which comes with wider knowledge, and some wholly looking back to the past, and urging the duty of not allowing the pure Jews to marry with the large mass of the population who may have been of mixed blood. We shall see that the re-building of the Temple brought by no means a certain gain to the nation. The new Temple brought with it the old thoughts, the old ceremonies, the old superstitious value of sacrifices, and the old claim of the priests for power; while the teachings of the prophets, and the lessons learnt through so much suffering during the Captivity, were in some measure forgotten.

But when the old jealousies between Jerusalem and the country again appear, they appear in a new form. We no longer hear of forbidding sacrifices on the High Places. The custom of making such sacrifices was gone by; those in Jerusalem had become less costly, and probably less frequent. We must suppose that already the praiseworthy custom had begun for the people, at a distance from Jerusalem, to meet together for worship without sacrifices, although it is three centuries later before any such places of meeting, or synagogues, are mentioned.

Chapters xl.—xliv. of the Book of Ezekiel seem to have been written at the time when the rebuilding of the Temple was urgently wished for. The writer describes a vision seen in the 25th year of the Captivity, when he was carried into Judea and saw the temple, or rather the new temple which was hereafter to be built. He describes its several parts, the courtyard, the gates, the House of Jehovah, with the Buildings on each side of the House. He then sees the glory of Jehovah, the same appearance which Ezekiel saw quitting the Temple when the priests left it, now returning

from the east, where we must suppose it had hitherto been dwelling with the priests in Captivity. He gives very exactly the measures of the altar of burnt offerings which stood in front of the House. The altar had a ditch or drain round it, of which traces may yet be seen in the rock under the dome of the Mosque of Omar. His description of an imaginary temple agrees in so many parts with what we know of Solomon's temple, that it is evident that the writer was proposing that it should be rebuilt with the former measurements. In one passage only have we any difficulty, that is in chap. xlii. 16—19, where he gives to the great court a measure of five hundred reeds on each side. But the Greek translation here helps us. From this we understand that he may have said Cubits. In chapter xli. 22, the Altar of Wood, called also the Presence Table, seems, when compared with the furniture in Solomon's temple, to be at the same time the Altar of Incense, and the table on which the Presence Bread was set in order before Jehovah. But perhaps the writer did not propose that incense should be burnt within the Holy of Holies ; and this is made probable by our finding no mention of a single chief priest, and no mention of an Ark in the Holy of Holies.

The writer would bring up again the distinction, which before the Captivity had been very much lost, between the priests and the Levites, and which we may see in Psalm cxxxv. He says that the Levites are the servants of the priests, not their equals, as was said in Deuteronomy ; and that the priests had remained true to Jehovah, while the Levites had gone astray. This is explained by the Book of Ezra, which tells us that very few Levites were among the captives who returned home. Their humble rank had probably saved them from being carried away with the nobles and skilled workmen ; and when left behind they may have fallen into the ways of the motley natives of the soil. The writer allots to the priests the freewill offerings of all kinds. The tithes and poll-tax are not mentioned ; they were of course sunk in the tribute claimed by the king of Persia. The priests are to have no possession of land in Israel. The writer's priestly opinions are those of Ezekiel ; but Ezekiel cannot have been a very young man at the time of his first vision in the 5th year of the Captivity ; he had begun writing before the Captivity ;

and he can hardly have lived to give an opinion about the gate through which the prince should enter the temple; and we must set down these chapters to the blamable, though perhaps well-meant, practice which seems to have been common, for an unknown writer to aim at winning attention to his opinions by making use of the name of one who had already gained a reputation. He shows such minute knowledge of the ceremonial law, that we may be sure that he had the original Book of Leviticus, with chapters i.—xi. and xxi.—xxii. lying open before him.

In these latter chapters of Ezekiel the priests of the capital are called, not Sons of Aaron, as in the early part of Leviticus, but Sons of Zadok, after Solomon's high priest, from whom they claimed descent. By the use of this name he certainly meant to claim for the priests that higher rank over the rest of the Levites, of which the Book of Deuteronomy deprives them. This gives us also the origin of the name of Zadokites, or Sadducees, the name afterwards borne by the more wealthy religious party in Jerusalem. The word Pharisee, the name of the party opposed to them, means a *Villager*.

This writer secures for his proposal, that the Temple should be rebuilt, the favour of that large class who would be forbidden to enter it, by promising that the whole hill-top shall be most holy. But this promise was little attended to when the days of adversity passed away.

Chapters xlv.—xlviii. of Ezekiel we must distinguish from the last mentioned portion of that book, because here the writer gives large portions of land to the priests and Levites. To them also, in the place of tithes, he would give a sixtieth part of the wheat and barley, a hundredth part of the oil, and one in two hundred of the lambs. He supposes the land of Canaan divided afresh among the tribes, and the strangers who sojourn among them, by lines drawn straight across from east to west, leaving a portion in the middle, which he again divides between the Priests, the Levites, the City, and the Prince. The Prince here spoken of is Zerubbabel; and the proposal to give to him a large portion of territory for his maintenance was naturally called for by his evident want of means. The author writes in the belief that the soil had no owners. They had

all either perished in the late war, or had been carried off to Babylon. The peasants, who had been left behind, had no legal claim to the estates on which they lived ; and the grandchildren of the captives on their return may have claimed a larger share of land than they could show a title to. This whimsical proposal for a division of the land is nowhere else mentioned.

To this time we may give Psalm cxxvii., written on the rebuilding of the Temple :—

Except Jehovah build the house,
They toil in vain that build it ;
Except Jehovah guard the city, the guard waketh in vain.

Psalm xcvi. is said in the Title to the Greek translation to have been used on the building of Zerubbabel's temple, and it is perhaps of this date, though in 1 Chron. xvi. 23—33 we find it given to David as sung when he brought the Ark into Jerusalem.

Psalm cxxxii. also seems to have been written for this second temple, upon the occasion of placing a new Ark in the Holy of Holies, in imitation of the Ark in Solomon's Temple. Of the former Ark the writer says,

Lo, we heard of it at Ephratah,
We found it in the fields of the forest [or Jearim].

And turning to the new Ark he says,

Arise, O Jehovah, into thy resting place,
Thou and the Ark of thy strength.
Let thy priests be clothed with righteousness,
And let thy godly ones shout for joy.

He makes use of a figure of speech common among the Jews, who fancied that a family remained in prosperity as long as its lamp, or star, was hanging up in heaven ; but when its lamp was put out, then the family came to an end. He says,

I will also clothe her priests with salvation,
And her godly ones shall shout aloud for joy.
There will I make the horn of David to branch forth ;
I have established the lamp for mine anointed.

Verses 7—10 of Psalm xxiv., which should be separated from the beginning of the Psalm, may have been written to be sung on the same occasion ;—

Lift up your heads, O ye gates,
And be ye lifted up, ye everlasting doorways,
And the King of Glory will come in.
“Who is this King of Glory?”
Jehovah strong and mighty, Jehovah mighty in battle.

Psalm cxxxvi. was probably written at this time, and sung by the priests at the dedication of this, the second temple. It gives praise to Jehovah :—

For he is good, for his kindness endureth for ever.

In 1 Chron. xvi. 34 this burden is said to have been sung when David brought the Ark into Jerusalem; and in 2 Chron. vii. 3—6, this burden is quoted as sung by the priests in the reign of Solomon, when he dedicated the first temple to Jehovah, and we thus learn the occasion for which this modern Psalm was written.

That part of the prophecy of Zechariah which belongs to this time must be limited to the first eight chapters of the book bearing his name; the later chapters we have already spoken of as written at various times, but all much earlier. It contains a variety of visions; one, of an angel, who tells us of the mildness of Darius's government by saying, “We have walked to and fro upon the earth, and behold, all the earth sitteth still, and is at rest.” He promises that the temple shall be rebuilt, and the cities of Judah again overflow with prosperity. Other visions are of the four horns of the nations that had scattered Judah; of a man with a measuring line measuring the city in order that it may be rebuilt; of Jeshua, the high priest, standing before Jehovah, and Satan accusing him, and Jehovah ordering him to be clothed with the garments of a chief priest; of two olive trees standing by a golden lamp-stand, who are Jeshua the priest, and Zerubbabel the prince; of seven angels who are the eyes of Jehovah; of a book-roll flying through the air containing a curse upon stealing and false swearing; of an Ephah, or bushel measure, in which sits a woman, the figure of wickedness, who is carried through the air to Babylon; and lastly, of four chariots that go forth, one to each corner of the earth. Jehovah then tells him to make golden crowns for Jeshua and the other priests; and he lets us clearly understand how unimportant a person Zerubbabel the prince was, by saying that “the one [Zerubbabel] shall

build the temple of Jehovah, and the other [Jeshua] shall bear honour, and sit and rule upon his throne, and be a priest upon his throne. And the council of peace shall be between the two." The mildness of the Persian government under Darius is shown by the lessened severity of the road-service, and by the remark that now, if a man's services are wanted, hire is paid to him for his work, and for the use of his beast. The writer is fully assured of the value of the Jewish religion, and, moreover, had observed that foreigners, at least the Persians, had begun to acknowledge its value; and he asserts that hereafter men of all nations will take hold of the skirts of the Jew, saying, "We will go with you, for we have heard that God is with you." Zechariah was the son of Berechiah, and we are told in the New Testament that he was slain in the temple-yard, between the altar and the House.* But in this there seems to be a mistake; as it was the high priest Zechariah, the son of Jehoiada, who was so slain in the reign of Jehoash.

It is at all times interesting to trace the growth of a thought, when it shows itself in an unusual expression; and this can be done very satisfactorily in the case of the name which Zechariah gives to Zerubbabel, of the Branch. First, a writer in the Book of Ezekiel who lived during the Captivity, foretelling the prosperity of the nation, had said in chapter xxix. 21, "I will cause the horn of the house of Israel to branch forth." When that prosperity did arrive, a writer adding to the Book of Isaiah, in chapter xi. 1, promises to the nation as a ruler, an Offshoot from the roots of Jesse. A later writer also, in the Book of Isaiah, says in chapter iv. 2, "In that day shall the Branch of Jehovah be beautiful and glorious." In the additions to Jeremiah, in chapters xxiii. 5, and xxxiii. 15, the coming ruler is called "a righteous Branch," raised up unto David. Psalm cxxxii. then says, "I will cause the horn of David to branch forth," and lastly, when the expressions had been so often applied to Zerubbabel that they could not be misunderstood, Zechariah calls him "the man whose name is the Branch." Some of these passages have been also applied to Jesus, and that in Isaiah xi. 1, which promises a Nazar, or *Offshoot*, gave rise to the words of Matthew ii. 23, "He will

* Matt. xxiii. 35.

be called a Nazarite," meaning, as it would seem, a Nazareen, or native of Nazareth.

The prophecy of Haggai also belongs to this time. It is little more than a few words of encouragement to the people to rebuild the temple under Zerubbabel the prince and Jeshua the high priest. Haggai styles himself Jehovah's messenger, using a title which in the early writings had been given only to heavenly messengers or angels, but had latterly been used to mean a religious teacher or preacher. This word is thus used in Job xxxiii. 23, and in Ecclesiastes v. 6. So in the New Testament the Greek word of the same meaning, Angel, is often used for a preacher, as in Revelations ii.—iii. ; and we still keep it in our word Evangelist.

Psalm cix. may be given to this time, or soon after, as it borrows a thought from Zechariah, who had seen in a vision Satan standing at the right hand of the high priest to accuse him to Jehovah. And the Psalmist says of his enemy, who, like himself, was a bond-servant under the foreigner :—

Let a wicked man be overseer over him,
And let an accuser [or Satan] stand at his right hand.

The forty years which followed the building of the Temple are wholly without events in our history. Historians write about kingdoms and armies, and take little notice of a province. During this time Jeshua had died, as also had Zerubbabel at a great age. We do not hear that Darius had appointed any one of Zerubbabel's family to succeed him as prince of Judea, although there were many living who might have had a claim to that post. It was a post with very little profit, very little honour, and very little power of usefulness, and it seems to have died with Zerubbabel. But to the time of his death we may perhaps give Isaiah lvi. 9—lix. containing a melancholy complaint about the disordered state of the country :—

The righteous man hath perished, and no man layeth it to heart ;
and merciful men are taken away, while none consider that the righteous man is taken away from misfortune.

It was perhaps on his death, when the government of Jerusalem fell to the governor of Samaria, that the people sent messengers, with presents of ointment and perfumes, to

the king of Persia. For this the prophet blames them, and assures them that if they follow after righteousness Jehovah will take care of them. Josephus mentions this embassy to Darius, and says that it was to beg for relief against the governor of Samaria, who hindered the Jews in the service of the temple, and did not supply them out of the tribute with the allowed sum which was necessary for their sacrifices.* The remark that Jehovah wondereth that the people have now no one to plead for them, or to intercede for them, may point either to the death of Zerubbabel or to that of Jeshua the high priest. The writer tells the nobles "to loosen the fetters of injustice, to undo the fastenings of the yoke, and to let the oppressed go free." He feels for the poor, whom the rich held in bondage. Though no son of Zerubbabel was appointed to succeed him as Pasha of Judea, the case was otherwise with the hereditary priesthood, and the return of Ezra, with a second body of those who had been captives, seems to be pointed to by some words, borrowed in part from Isaiah xxxv. 8, which were written for the return of the first body of captives, thus :—

Build ye up the road, build ye up, prepare the way, take up the stumbling-blocks out of the way of my people (lvii. 14).

Micah vii. closely resembles this part of Isaiah in its description of the discomfort in which the people were living. The godly man who has perished, like the righteous man in Isaiah lvii. 1, may perhaps be Zerubbabel. But from this chapter we must put aside verses 11—13, as written later, when Nehemiah had permission to rebuild the walls of Jerusalem.

Darius was succeeded on the throne of Persia by XERXES I., B.C. 485, and the first years of his reign were made memorable by his gigantic preparations for the invasion of Greece, and then by the defeat of his large army at Thermopylæ, and of his fleet at Salamis. It was at the end of the year B.C. 480, that Xerxes recrossed the Hellespont on his hasty retreat from Europe into Asia,† and in the beginning of the next year he reached Babylon on his way to Susa.‡ It was perhaps then that, in his zeal against idolatry, he plundered the temple of Bel of its sacred

* Antiq. XI. iv. 9.

† Diod. Sic. XI. 19 and 36.

‡ Ctesias in Photius.

treasures, which his father Darius had spared,* and there he may have met the Jewish scribe and priest Ezra, and have given to him the appointment of governor of Judea. Xerxes, though he was returning to Persia defeated, had left a large army behind to carry on the war against the Greeks ; and the example of Cyrus may have taught him that, while engaged in a war in the distant west, it was a wise policy to make the Jews his friends, and to encourage the return home of those who still remained near Babylon.

Ezra, indeed, calls the Persian king, who gave him his high post, Artaxerxes, thus placing the appointment twenty-one years later ; and this is supported by Nehem. viii. 9, which makes Ezra the contemporary of Nehemiah. But the name of the king presents no difficulty. Ezra places him next after Darius ; and the Greek, 1 Esdras ix., lets us understand that Nehem. viii. is a quotation from the Book of Ezra, though not now in the Hebrew, and that the name of Nehemiah should be removed from verse 9. Hence we follow Josephus in thinking that Ezra received his appointment from Xerxes I., while Joiakim, the son of Jeshua, was hereditary chief priest.† The Paschal Chronicle also says that Ezra was the chief priest in the reign of Xerxes I., and satisfies the requirements of Nehem. viii. 9, by placing a second Ezra, a scribe, with Nehemiah in the reign of Artaxerxes Longimanus.

EZRA GOVERNOR OF JUDEA ; B.C. 479—.

When Ezra, the priest and scribe, arrived in Jerusalem, in the year B.C. 479, with the rank of Persian governor, we hear of no chief priest then living there. Perhaps his cousin Joiakim, the son of Jeshua, had died at the time of Ezra's appointment. Ezra had already gained a great name in Babylon as a Jewish scribe, and on arriving in Jerusalem he seems to have entered upon the double office of governor and chief priest. The Persian king is said to have given to him a decree directed to the treasurers who collected the tribute in Judea, ordering them to help him with a fixed sum of money and a supply of food for the service of the temple, and an order that the priests and servants of the temple should be free from all taxes. But the royal letter, as we now have it, gives him authority over all the country

* Herodotus I. 183.

† Antiq. XI. v. 1.

beyond or to the west of the river Euphrates. This throws a grave doubt upon the genuineness of the letter, although it limits Ezra's authority to the Jews, or "such as know the Law of thy God."

Armed, however, with this or some such royal letter, Ezra went up to Jerusalem in the seventh year of Xerxes I., B.C. 479. It gave to him all the power held by Zerubbabel, together with which he had of himself such authority as the Jews yielded willingly to the office of chief priest. He had gathered together a body of Jews who were willing to accompany him, to the number of fifteen hundred males, including Hattush of the line of David, a child, a great grandson of Zerubbabel, who had no official rank given to him. These men were part of the families that had before chosen to remain in Babylon rather than accompany Prince Zerubbabel when Cyrus gave them leave to return; and their staying behind shows that they were not very badly treated in the spots where they had been placed as colonists. In the list of those who followed Ezra, the families of Pharezites and Zarhites are, as in the case of those who followed Zerubbabel, the two mentioned first. Ezra, moreover, had received from the king and the Babylonian nobles, and from the Jews of Babylonia, a large amount of gold and silver, together with twenty golden cups, and two cups of yellow brass, a metal then new, and thought precious as gold. He arrived in safety, but not without having felt some fears on the journey; for he had been ashamed to ask the king for a guard, as he had boasted to him that the hand of God would protect them on the journey.

Ezra, like Jeshua, the former high priest, arrived in Jerusalem with the full determination to keep up the strict line of separation between the Jews of pure blood, who could show their pedigrees, those, in short, who had been in captivity, and those humbler inhabitants of the city who had been left behind unnoticed, and whom the captives on their return found there. Instead of trying to unite the two halves of the people into one, he insisted on widening the breach. He called upon all the true Israelites to put away their foreign wives, quoting the Book of Deuteronomy, which forbade them to marry with the people of the country that they were coming into. The treasure which he brought may have given him weight; and when he summoned all

the children of the Captivity to appear before him in Jerusalem, he threatened the disobedient with loss of property, and with being put out of the assembly. He claimed to have power over Judea as well as Jerusalem; but this authority probably did not reach far south of the capital.* Within these limits, however, Ezra seems to have been very generally obeyed, and his narrow policy must now be looked upon as one of the great causes which led to the weakness and fall of the nation. It saved the family of Israel from the reproach of idolatry, by declaring that more than one half of the people were foreigners. While the Jewish monarchy lasted, while they had a country to struggle for, the prophets had endeavoured to win the mixed population, as being their countrymen, to the pure worship of Jehovah. But when Judea became only one out of the one hundred and twenty-seven provinces of the Persian monarchy, Jewish patriotism took narrower limits, and the priests only recognized those as belonging to the nation who worshipped God under their law. This may have been good policy as regards the Jewish religion, but was not good for the nation. When the time came round for celebrating the Feast of Tabernacles, and living for seven days under booths, none seem to have been allowed to join in the religious celebration but those who had themselves or their forefathers come home from captivity.

At this Feast of Tabernacles Ezra read to the assembled people out of the Book of the Law of Moses, while some of the priests and Levites explained its meaning in the language of the day to such of his hearers as could not understand the Biblical Hebrew. This he did for each of the seven days of the feast, reading from daybreak to noon. The people stood in the Broad Place of the Water Gate, being the space better known as the Court of the Gentiles; while Ezra stood on a tower of wood, probably within the court of the priests.† Such was now the difference between the Biblical Hebrew and the language spoken and understood by the common people, that the priests who read the law to them were sometimes called Interpreters, as we see in the Isaiah of the Return, chapter xliii. 27, and in the Book of Job, xxxiii. 23. Thus, when the living priests have lost their gigantic power over men's minds, the old books are brought out and appealed to as the highest authority.

* Ezra vii.—x.

† Nehem. viii. 1—8.

Notwithstanding Ezra's disapproval of foreign marriages, it seems that his son Mered had married Bithiah, the daughter of a Pharaoh. Egypt, when it rebelled against the Persians, had for a short time been governed by two native kings, Inarus and Amyrtæus. When these were conquered, their sons were allowed to govern the country, as satraps under the Persian monarch ; and Mered, the son of the Pasha of Judea, may have married the sister of one of the satraps of Egypt. Mered had a second wife, who was a Jewess ; hence he may possibly have been forced to put away the foreigner.* Ezra may have died about the year B.C. 468 ; as then Eliashib entered upon the office of chief priest, and held it for the long period of forty years.†

It is probable that Ezra, acting as editor, for the first time gathered together the scattered laws into one work. He is usually called Ezra the Scribe, which means that he was better known as an editor than as an author. A few years later we shall hear of Nehemiah gathering together the other parts of the Bible, without any mention of the Pentateuch, showing that the Book of the Law had been before collected. It was not, as now, divided into five books ; that was done by the Greek translators from whom it gained its name of the Pentateuch. Nor could Ezra have been the latest editor of the Mosaic Law, and have left it to us in its present state ; as we shall presently meet with reasons for thinking that about half of Leviticus, and some few passages in Numbers and Deuteronomy, are yet more modern.

Of the historical Book of Ezra little description is needed beyond saying that it contains the history of the two caravans of captives, as above described : the first brought from Babylon by Zerubbabel, and the second brought by himself ; together with the letters of the Persian kings, at first forbidding and then allowing the Temple to be rebuilt, and the letter appointing Ezra to his high post, which is probably not genuine. The greater part of the book is in Hebrew, but two small portions are in the Chaldee language. A later editor has introduced each with a few words of Hebrew. The first, chapter iv. 7—vi. 18, rather interrupts the narrative which brought us to the reign of Darius. It tells us of hindrances to the work of rebuilding the temple,

* 1 Chron. iv. 17. 18.

† Paschal Chronicle.

which the Jews met with in the reign of Cambyses, whom it names Artaxerxes. The second contains the letter in which the Persian king gives to Ezra his high appointment. These were added after the time of Nehemiah. Chap. iv. 6 had been added, probably before that time, by a different editor, who gives to Cambyses the name of Ahasuerus.

It is doubtful how much of this book is the work of Ezra. In only a small portion of it does he speak in the first person. In the Greek translation of the Bible, known by the name of the Septuagint, there is at the end of this book a small addition, not now found in the Hebrew, but quoted in Nehem. viii. In the Book of Ezra, iv. 6, the successor of Cyrus is named Ahasuerus, who can only be Cambyses. The decree in chap. iv. 7—vi. 18, by Artaxerxes, is thought by some critics to be by Smerdis, who reigned for seven months after Cambyses; but he is more probably the same Cambyses, with his name written according to the Chaldee custom. He is followed by Darius; and he again by Artaxerxes, who can only be Xerxes I. The letter from this last king to Ezra gives to him not only a claim upon the royal treasurers for money and materials for rebuilding the Temple, but authority to appoint magistrates and judges over all the people beyond or to the west of the river Euphrates. Such a wide authority we can by no means believe that he ever possessed, and it throws a doubt upon the genuineness of the letter from Artaxerxes to Ezra.

We gave to the reign of Josiah the ill-natured attack upon the great family of the Pharezites in Genesis xxxviii.; and here, in the book of Ezra, we find the same want of popularity following them, and they are called not the Sons of Pharez, but the Sons of Pharosh, *a flea*.

The two Books of Samuel and the two Books of Kings were compiled at about this time. In the Greek translation they are called the four Books of Kings. A better division of them would be, the one Book of Samuel and the three Books of Kings; as the first book begins with the birth of Samuel and ends with the woman at Endor pretending to raise him from the dead. They have very much the appearance of being all four the work of one editor, who has put together the materials that were before him impartially and carefully, with very little colouring from his own mind. The varieties in style seem to belong to the original materials

from which he composed his work ; and these materials are woven together with very little skill. Thus in the lives of Samuel and Saul the most careless reader can see that we have more than one history ; and the editor has not used his judgment so as to choose the most trustworthy of his authorities, but he has given us both, though they sometimes contradict one another. Hannah's poetical prayer in 1 Sam. ii., and David's song in 2 Sam. xxii., are both of this time. The beautiful prayer put into the mouth of Solomon at the dedication of the Temple is the editor's addition, and cannot have been written before the carrying into captivity ; while his calling Solomon's kingdom "beyond the river Euphrates"* shows that he had lived in the neighbourhood of Babylon, or perhaps was living there at the time that he so wrote. This would allow us to think Ezra the writer, for he was known as a scribe or author while yet in Babylon. The evil spirit from Jehovah which caused Saul's madness in 1 Sam. xvi. 14, and the lying Spirit which offered to go to earth, and mislead kings Jehoshaphat and Ahab in 1 Kings xxii., are both, like Satan in the Book of Job, importations from the Captivity. The Books of Job and Kings are, moreover, alike in a peculiarity that can hardly have lasted many generations, that of using the word "bless" for "curse," without a hint that it is to be understood ironically. Of course a speaker would have no difficulty in showing, by the tone of his voice, that he meant the words to be taken in a bad sense, as explained in one of the latter Proverbs, thus :—

He that blesseth his neighbour with a loud voice,
Rising early in the morning,
It shall be counted a curse to him. (xxvii. 14.)

Compared with the histories of Greece, Rome, and modern Europe, the Books of Samuel and Kings are little more than bald annals ; but as they end about the time that Herodotus began to write, they rather oppose his claim to be called the Father of History.

The lives of Elijah and Elisha, full of marvellous and yet often trifling events, are woven into the bald Annals of the Kings with very little regard to uniformity, and belong rather to the time of Nehemiah than to that of Ezra. They

* 1 Kings iv. 24.

will be spoken of hereafter. In smaller matters also we trace the variety of dates. Thus Hiram king of Tyre helps Solomon to build his Temple ; and a later sentence gives the name of Hiram to the workman. Again after Solomon had built this small roofed building, called the House of Jehovah, the more modern prayer, then spoken by Solomon, gives to the whole courtyard the name of the House, a name it did not deserve until at a later time it was enclosed within its own walls.

The editor of the Books of Kings had read the Book of Joshua, which he quotes, though without naming it, on the building of Jericho in Ahab's reign ; and also Deuteronomy, which he quotes, though without naming it, in Amaziah's reign, and again in Josiah's reign. He quotes for his authorities the Acts of Solomon, the Chronicles of the Kings of Israel, and the Chronicles of the Kings of Judah ; and we can see that he made use of the Books of Isaiah and Jeremiah for the times when these prophets lived. He composed his work after the death of the captive king Jehoiachin, and before the time of Nehemiah, when the Books of Chronicles were written, as the author of those books had probably seen these. In this way the editor tells us pretty exactly when he lived ; and Ezra's reputation as a scribe would lead us to conjecture that we owe these four books, or at least the two Books of Kings to him, and that he wrote them while living in Babylon, before he entered on his high political duties. When he tells us the days of the month on which the last great misfortunes fell upon Jerusalem, with an exactness nowhere else met with in his history, he perhaps takes those days from a law which fixed the fast days for the nation's grief, rather than from a certain knowledge of the fact.

The last words of king David, in 2 Sam. xxiii. 1—7, are called a Naham, or *inspired speech*, using in a new sense this word, which, throughout the Prophets, had been used only for speeches spoken by the Almighty. The thoughts also in that speech suit the time of the nation's ruin rather than that of its strength. Its enemies are spoken of as too strong to be easily opposed:—

They shall all be thrust away as thorns,
Because they cannot be taken hold of by the hands ;

But the man that shall touch them
Must be fenced with iron and the staff of a spear,
And they shall be utterly burned with fire in their place.

The only other places in which this word Naham, *inspired speech*, is used otherwise than for God's words, may as well be here mentioned as being all of a late date.

Balaam's third poetical speech, in Numbers xxiii. 27—xxiv. 13, in which, while in a trance, he blesses the Israelites, is called a Naham. Here two lines are borrowed from Balaam's former speech, in Numbers xxiii. 22 ; two lines from Jacob's description of Judah, in Genesis xlix. 9 ; and two lines from Isaac's blessing on Jacob, in Gen. xxvii. 29.

Balaam's fourth poetical speech, in Numbers xxiv. 15—19, which is also called a Naham, we shall hereafter have to speak of, as being yet more modern.

The words of Agur, which, with those of king Lemuel, have been added to the Book of Proverbs, are another Naham. Who Agur was is unknown. He reproves the habit, which we have already had to notice, of writers adding portions to the written law, and calling their own opinions the words of God. He says, "Every word of God is pure ; he is a shield to those who trust in him. Add not thou to his words lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar." When he says, "The horseleach hath two daughters [who cry] Give, give," we are tempted to think that he means the Persian monarchy, which, though mild in its despotism, it would not be safe to complain of openly, and which was ever hungry for tribute. The land-tax and the poll-tax may be the two daughters.

King Lemuel, whose words accompany these in the Book of Proverbs, is equally unknown. His name seems to have been created by the mere change of a letter ; and Prov. xxxi. should perhaps begin with "The words of *his mother* to the king [meaning Solomon] the burden which his mother taught him."

The next place in which this word Naham is used is in Psalm xxxvi. 1, where it is no longer an inspired speech, but the profane oath of a wicked man ; thus :—

The profane oath of the wicked man is in my heart ;
There is no fear of God before his eyes.

This Psalm may well be of a modern date ; but there is nothing in it to fix very certainly when it was written.

Much of Deuteronomy xviii. 9—xxvii. is of very uncertain date ; but it belongs to a time after the Captivity, and its humane laws agree very well with the time of good government which began with the reign of Darius. It begins with the important promise that at a future time a prophet, a second Moses, shall be raised up to guide the people. Who is the lawmaker meant is very uncertain ; if the words were written at this time, they may point to Ezra. The new laws are very valuable. Thus, no man is now to be found guilty of any sin by the evidence of only one witness (xix. 15) ; while in chapter xvii. 6, it was for murder only that two witnesses were needed. New houses are to have battlements to the roofs, lest any man should fall therefrom (xxii. 8). A hand-mill or an upper mill-stone, by which a man supports his life, may not be taken in pledge for debt (xxiv. 6). The creditor may not enter the debtor's house to fetch a pledge ; he must wait on the outside till it is brought out to him (xxiv. 10). If a poor man pledges his outer garment, his thick cloak, it must be returned to him at night that he may sleep in it (xxiv. 13). No man shall be punished with more than forty stripes (xxv. 3). Protection is offered to the poor Israelite who had sold himself into bondage to his richer neighbour. And the inhumanity to which these bondservants were yet liable, is amply shown by the new law which allows them to escape when they can ; " thou shalt not deliver up into bondage to his master the servant who has escaped from his master unto thee. He shall dwell with thee, even among you, in that place which he shall choose, within any of thy city gates, where it liketh him best " (xxiii. 15, 16). By such words the humane lawgiver acknowledges the existence of the cruelty which he has no power to put an end to. Cities for refuge are to be appointed, where the manslayer may flee from hasty vengeance (xix.). The division of the land of Canaan for this purpose into three parts, described in Josh. xx. as Galilee, Ephraim, and Judah, gives a modern date to this chapter, and to Numb. xxxv. as well as to Josh. xxi. where these cities are mentioned.

The tithes are to be paid only on the third year, called the year of tithing (xxvi. 12), while in chap. xiv. 22 they were to be brought forth year by year.

These late chapters of the Book of Deuteronomy show some little improvement in the treatment of women. No formal contract or ceremony was needed to make a marriage. A young woman was the property of her father, and when he gave her in marriage he received a sum of money as the purchase money. Such was the state of society to which the laws were to be fitted. By the former law, in Exodus xxii. 16, 17, if a man took a woman to himself to bear children without her father's leave, whether with her consent or by force, he was required to pay to the father the usual purchase money, and that whether the father allowed her to remain with him or not. If the husband wished to take a second wife he was at liberty to do so, provided he continued to treat the first as a wife also. If he did not so treat her, she was at liberty, by Exodus xxi. 10, 11, to leave him, and to go out free, without returning to him the purchase money. The only rights secured to a woman were the right to leave her husband, and go out free, if ill-treated. Such was the law laid down in the Judgments, which we have supposed written in the reign of Jehoshaphat. It was only when a wife became too old to work that the law gave her protection ; and then her legal claim had been upon her children, not upon her husband. "Honour thy father and thy mother," in the Fifth Commandment, means maintain them in their old age ; and so it was interpreted by the judge. And the Proverb, xix. 26, justly remarks that :—

He who robbeth his father, and chaseth away his mother,
Is a son that causeth shame, and bringeth reproach.

But as the state of society improved, a wife became less a piece of property. She was even supposed to have feelings of her own ; she had rights even against her husband ; and these the Book of Deuteronomy in some degree protects. It enacts that if the man used force, and took her against her will, he shall not only pay to her father fifty shekels, as purchase money, but she shall be his wife ; he shall not at any time be allowed to put her away.* So also if he should bring against his wife a false charge of previous misconduct, he shall not only forfeit one hundred shekels to her father, but he shall lose the power of ever

* Deut. xxii. 28, 29.

putting her away.* And if she were a captive taken in war, though he shall have power to put her away at his pleasure, he shall not have power to sell her.†

These chapters in Deuteronomy, with the latter chapters of Leviticus which we shall soon speak of, like the Judgments in Exodus xxi.—xxiii. mentioned in Jehoshaphat's reign, contain Laws to guide the judge, the criminal and civil laws by which society is held together. The irregular manner in which these few laws are scattered through the Pentateuch, teaches how little importance was as yet given to the science of law-making. But we do not know that any other nation had as yet advanced further in this matter. The Pentateuch is named the Five Books of the Law; but the only laws to which clearness and exactness are given are those which relate to the priests and the sacrifices.

Deuteronomy xxvii. must be a late addition to that book, and it may be mentioned now, when Mount Ebal and Mount Gerizim are no longer in an unfriendly country. The command given by Moses and the elders in this chapter, which gives a sanction to the altar to Jehovah near the town of Shechem, whether on Mount Ebal, as in the Hebrew, or on Mount Gerizim, as in the Samaritan copies, is strongly opposed to the older parts of Deuteronomy, which were written in support of, the claim made for Jerusalem to be the only spot where an altar to Jehovah was allowed; but it agrees with Joshua xxi. 21, which we must suppose to be written soon after this time, and which makes Shechem a Levitical city.

To this time perhaps belongs Deuteronomy xxxiii. which contains the poetical Blessing in which Moses describes the tribes under the names of the Sons of Jacob. This shows the nation in a very different state from that described in Jacob's Blessing of his sons in Genesis xlix., which was written some centuries earlier. Levi is not now blamed, as then; but the prayer for him is:—

Let thy Urim and thy Thummim be with thy godly man.
Bless, O Jehovah, his inheritance,
And accept the work of his hands.

Benjamin is no longer known for its bravery, but for the Temple which stood within its boundaries:—

* Deut. xxii. 13—19.

† Deut. xxi. 10—14.

Beloved of Jehovah, may he dwell in safety by Him,
 May He cover him all the day long,
 And may He dwell between his shoulders.

Another peculiarity in this poem, is that it is Jehovistic, and yet gives the superiority among the sons to Ephraim and Manasseh. Judah is spoken of in a very slight manner. The few lines of poetry which have been placed at the beginning of this Blessing in verses 2—5, are clearly out of place, and were probably addressed to Moses, not spoken by him ; thus :—

All His holy ones were in thy hand's charge,
 And they fell down at thy feet to receive of thy words ;
 Even the law which He commanded us, O Moses,
 As a possession for the assembly of Jacob:

The word *Dath*, a *decree*, used for the fiery decree in Jehovah's right hand, gives to these lines a modern character, as this word is not elsewhere used except in the Books of Ezra, Esther, and Daniel.

The Song of Moses which he spoke shortly before his death, and the words which introduce it, in Deut. xxxi. 16—22, and 30—xxxii. 44, are inserted passages which interrupt the narrative ; and they may be mentioned here, because they seem of the same age as Hannah's Prayer, and David's Song mentioned above. The name of Jeshurun for Israel, of Vanities for false gods, of the Rock for God, belong to a late time. Moreover, God is here styled the Nation's Father, a title not given to him in the earlier parts of the Pentateuch. But the date of these additions to Deuteronomy cannot be fixed with any exactness.

With the portions of the Book of Proverbs lately spoken of, we may mention the last portion of that book, which is an Alphabetic poem, and of about the same age as the Alphabetic Psalms lately described. It is in praise of a virtuous woman, and it belongs to some time, such perhaps as the reign of Darius or Xerxes, when it was possible to describe a happy home without adding a complaint against oppression. The wife's condition is now very much improved. She employs her maids in making linen and woollen clothing for sale ; and she buys land for her husband with the produce of her trade.

The Book of Esther may have been written shortly after

the time of Ezra, but its date cannot be fixed with any certainty. It is the history of a young Jewess, belonging to one of the Jewish families at this time living in Persia. She is raised by her beauty to be the favourite wife in place of the former queen of Ahasuerus, king of Persia, who seems to be Xerxes I. While in the palace at Susa, she hears through her uncle Mordecai, of an intention to cause a massacre of the Jews throughout the Persian empire, which she is able to defeat in consequence of her influence with the king. She obtains for her brethren in the faith a royal letter, granting them protection from all ill-treatment, with leave to defend themselves from their oppressors. The author of the intended cruelty, a superstitious man, had been casting Purim, or divining lots, to learn when and how his design could best be carried into execution; and the Jews throughout the kingdom, by the advice of the Persian queen, their protector, ever after kept two days in the year, as days of rejoicing for their escape from the threatened danger. These days are called the Feast of Purim, and are even yet kept sacred by the Jews throughout the world. In the second Book of Maccabees, xv. 36, they are named Mordecai's days, from the name of the queen's uncle, who informed her of the plot. The Book of Esther is written with great knowledge of Persian manners and customs. The author, no doubt, lived at Susa, and for his authority he refers to the Chronicles of the Kings of Media and Persia. The story is told with a strong political feeling towards the writer's countrymen, the Jews, but without the religious tone which makes the other Hebrew books so valuable. It has also a poetical and eastern colouring, which lessens its appearance of truth; but the favour obtained by Esther from Xerxes, in Susa, agrees very closely with the royal commission granted by that king to Ezra; and the name of Xerxes's queen Amestris, as spelt by Herodotus,* is not very unlike that of Esther; and again Hegias, an Ephesian by birth, who was in the service of Xerxes shortly before the battle of Thermopylæ,† may be the same person as Hegia the king's chamberlain, the keeper of the women at Susa, who brought Esther to Ahasuerus. Though many of the particulars may have been exaggerated by Jewish partiality, there is no

* Lib. ix. 109.

† Ctesias in Photius.

reason whatever for rejecting the whole story as improbable.

To about this time also we may perhaps give chapter xxxi. of Jeremiah, but it must be divided into three parts, written by more than one author, and perhaps at more than one period. Verses 1—26 contain a promise given to the writer when asleep, that Jehovah will be the God of all the families of Israel, and that Ephraim, his first-born, or the northern tribes, shall now seek Jehovah on Mount Sion. The writer was an Israelite of the tribe of Ephraim ; and Ephraim is invited to return again to his cities, thus reminding us that when Judah returned home from the captivity in Babylon, the northern tribes did not return in any large numbers. The writer gives as a reason for their return home, that Jehovah had created a new thing, that a woman shall come round, or lead about a man ; by which ambiguous words he seems to point to the share that Esther, the Jewish maiden, had in persuading the Persian king to appoint her countryman, Ezra, to the government of Judea. Verses 27—37 point to the smallness of the population in both halves of the country, and, like Ezekiel xviii., quote the scoffing proverb that the fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children's teeth are set on edge, in order to contradict the old law, and to promise that every man shall suffer only for his own iniquity. The writer considers the Old Covenant of Exodus xix. 5, that Jehovah would be the nation's God, provided that they consented to be his people, as forfeited by their disobedience, and thus followed by the Captivity ; but now on their return home he promises that they shall have a New Covenant, to be written, not on tables of stone, but on their hearts, and that on their keeping the Law they shall be again prosperous as a nation. From these words we may suppose that no new Tables of the Law had yet been placed in the Temple since it had been rebuilt, or if placed there that they had not gained the authority of the old tables. The thoughts in verses 35—37 are borrowed from Jeremiah xxxiii. 20—22. Verses 38—40 are on the rebuilding of the city. The writer, when declaring that the fields around Jerusalem are to be measured and made holy to Jehovah, seems to refer to Ezekiel xlii. 16—20, as it now stands in the Hebrew, and so far disproves our conjecture in page 278, that the space measured was smaller, being measured in cubits not in reeds of ten cubits each.

We are not told how long Ezra lived and acted as chief priest and governor in Jerusalem. On his death the office of chief priest fell to Eliashib, but the government of the city on behalf of the Persians probably returned to the governor of Samaria. By this the old heart-burnings between Israel and Judah were still kept alive ; but it was Samaria that now claimed to be the capital of both provinces.

When we part with the Book of Ezra, we again meet with a blank of twenty or more years in our history. During this time Xerxes I. had been murdered, and his younger son Artaxerxes Longimanus had made himself king of Persia ; Egypt had rebelled and made itself independent ; and Judea may have then suffered, if not from the distrust of its conquerors, yet from the armies which in the year B.C. 460 marched through it to the conquest of Egypt.* The revolt of Megabyzus in Syria, and his war against Artaxerxes, may yet further have brought trouble upon Judea. During this time Eliashib was chief priest, but without civil authority.

NEHEMIAH GOVERNOR OF JUDEA ; B.C. 445—433.

We have spoken of Jews settling in Persia in the reign of Cyrus, of the Persian ambassadors worshipping in the Temple of Jerusalem in the reign of Darius, and then of a Jewish queen of Persia, the wife of Xerxes I. ; and now our history again leads us to the same country, when in the twentieth year of Artaxerxes Longimanus, B.C. 445, Nehemiah, a Jew, of Susa, the capital of Persia, a cup-bearer in the king's service, obtained from him the appointment of governor of Judea, with permission to rebuild the walls of Jerusalem, as a necessary step to protect the unhappy inhabitants from robbery and ill-treatment. He had never seen Jerusalem ; but though living in the palace, as the chief favourite of the great king, his thoughts ran upon the city of his fathers, on the Temple in which they had worshipped, and on the sepulchres in the neighbourhood. On the arrival of some of his countrymen at Susa, which had been the chief city of Elam, but was now the capital of the Persian empire, they told him of the ruined state of Jerusalem, and he ventured to ask of Artaxerxes to be allowed to rebuild it. The king granted his request, and sent him away with the rank of Tirshatha, or governor, of

* Diod. Sic. xi. 77.

Judea. He also gave him a guard of horsemen to accompany him on the journey, and an order, directed to the keeper of the royal forests, that he should be supplied with the necessary timber.

After crossing the Euphrates, before going to Jerusalem, Nehemiah carried the Royal Letter which he had obtained in his favour to the Persian governors of the provinces to the west of the Euphrates, and also to Sanballat, a Samaritan, who was governor of Samaria. Sanballat received him very coldly, showing a natural jealousy against Jerusalem's wish for independence; and Nehemiah saw that the Letter would obtain for him very little help. A governor at a distance of perhaps a thousand miles from his sovereign, need not be very obedient to orders in matters of small moment.

On reaching Jerusalem, Nehemiah at first told nobody what he came about. He even took his survey of the ruined walls in the dark. When he had formed his plans, and got acquainted with the chief Jews in the city, he then told them of his purpose, and asked their help in rebuilding the walls. Eliashib, the grandson of Jeshua, had succeeded Ezra, and was at the time the chief priest; and he and his brethren warmly entered into the plan, well knowing, however, that if the Samaritan governor did not venture to stop them by force and in defiance of the Royal Letter, he would do all that he could to hinder them. Sanballat, when he heard that they had begun, laughed at their trifling attempts, and asked mockingly if they were going to rebel against the king. The Jews of the city divided the work among themselves, each undertaking, with such materials as were at hand among the ruins, to build that portion of the wall which was nearest to his own house. In this way about one half of the wall was rebuilt, when Sanballat and their enemies began to think the work important. He had at first laughed at it as such a weak wall that a fox would knock it down, if he came near it; but now he threatened to bring down his troops to stop any further progress.

Nehemiah, however, did not much fear that Sanballat, in direct disobedience to the Royal Letter, would openly try to stop the work. What he more feared was that their numerous enemies, Arabs, Ammonites, and Philistines, and

others who were not of the Captivity, might attempt, with Sanballat's encouragement, to do what he would not venture to do himself. But against these enemies he hoped that they should be able to defend themselves. So he divided the Jews into two parties; appointing one to continue the work of building, while the other half rested with their arms in their hands to guard the builders from any attack. In this way the wall was finished in fifty-two days.

While this was going on there was not a little murmuring of the humbler labouring part of the Jews against their more wealthy nobles and rulers. Now that they were invited to work for the general good they claimed to be relieved from the heavy burden of usury which they had foolishly taken upon themselves, and from the bond-service to which many had sold themselves. This demand was enforced by Nehemiah; and supported as it was by the Mosaic law, the wealthy could not resist it. They promised to restore the lands taken in pledge and to give up the interest upon their mortgages, which seems to have been at the rate of one *per cent.* per month.*

Since the return from the Captivity, we have seen no more of the struggle between the city and the country, about the High Places. Jerusalem and its priests had not the power to give laws to the nation. But with the building of the walls, the old fears again arose among the country party; and many of the nobles of Judah now joined the Samaritans in weakening Nehemiah's hands.

Thus we note not a little difference between the policy of Ezra and that of Nehemiah. The Book of Ezra treats Judah and Benjamin as the nation, and the rest of the people as "their adversaries." But Nehemiah endeavoured to befriend the mixed population, "the people and their wives," against the unkind treatment of "their brethren the Jews;" and he finds himself opposed by the nobles of Judah. Ezra had sprung from the Jewish captives in Babylon, and Nehemiah very probably from the Israelite captives in Media. But Nehemiah had accepted the Mosaic law, which forbids marriage with women of Ashdod and Ammon and Moab, and so far he followed Ezra's policy.

When the wall was finished Nehemiah appointed gate-

* Nehem. i.—vi.

keepers, who were to keep the city gates shut from sunset to sunrise. He then examined the registers of the genealogies of those who claimed to be true Jews, taking out of the Book of Ezra the list of those who had come up from captivity, as containing the names of all the families who were entitled to be so considered.* With a view to keep up the separation between the true Jews and the other people of the land, the Levites summoned them to meet in the courts of the temple ; and after they had listened to the reading of the law for a quarter of the day, and prayed and publicly confessed their sins for a quarter of the day, they made a solemn covenant that their families should not marry with any but true Jews. Nehemiah and the priests, and the Levites, and the nobles, set their seals to a written promise to that effect ; and the rest of the Jews bound themselves with a curse to hold to the agreement, and at the same time to keep the Sabbath holy, and to release all debts on the Sabbath year.

The new moon days, the Sabbaths, and solemn feasts, were now kept with strictness unknown during the four centuries of the monarchy. Burnt offerings, which, towards the close of the monarchy, had been less esteemed, again rose in importance. The Book of Deuteronomy, with the writings of Isaiah and Jeremiah, had pressed upon the people the superior value of spiritual worship over ceremony ; but since the rebuilding of the Temple there had arisen, with an increase of patriotism, an increase of narrow zeal for the letter of the law ; and hence for a time the Jewish mind was turned back into a more priestly direction. It was the aim of the rulers to carry out the commands of the ceremonial laws with a strictness which had not been possible during the Captivity, and the first years of their return home. They made a number of enactments about the maintenance of the Levites throughout the country, and the service of the temple in Jerusalem. The Levites were to have the tithes, each in his own city ; and the temple was to have a tithe of the tithe, and the first fruits, and the redemption money for the first-born, and the heave offerings, and the yearly poll-tax of one third of a shekel, in place of the half-shekel ordered in the law. This proposal tells

* Nehem. vii. 6—viii. 18.

us that the people were in a far more comfortable condition than they had hitherto been since the return from captivity. But as Nehemiah and the priests had no power to enforce the collection of the payments here ordered, the enactments had no force, except upon those who thought it their duty to obey the priests. The only taxes levied by the civil government were those required to make up the tribute to Persia, and of these no mention is here made.*

The eighty chief persons in the city who with Nehemiah set their seals to the promise, or rather to the law relating to marriage, are described as priests, Levites, and nobles. They formed the Sanhedrim or High Council, who in the Gospels are described as High-priests, Elders and Scribes. With them, and Nehemiah the Pasha, the government of the city rested.

Nehemiah, as the Pasha, fed one hundred and fifty of the chief men every day at his table. The Jewish inhabitants of the city may have been about fifteen thousand souls ; but what was the number of the others, the larger part of the population, to whom the honourable name of Jews was denied, we have no means of knowing. The ruined state of the city was such that the Persian governor, the Pasha of the provinces to the west of the Euphrates, when he came to Jerusalem, fixed his quarters in the northern and newer part of the city. His throne stood not in Zion, where Solomon's Porch of Judgment stood, but near the Damascus gate, at the furthest end of the new suburb.†

Nehemiah had only received leave of absence from Susa for a limited time, and in the year B.C. 433, he returned to the duties of his office of cup-bearer to the king, after he had been twelve years in Jerusalem. During these years he had devoted himself to the good of his countrymen. He had refused to receive from them the pay of a Pasha, of forty shekels, or eighty shillings, a month, not wishing to be a burden to them ; and he had contented himself with a daily supply of food for himself and his officers of government. This was an ox and six sheep, with some fowls and wine ; and it fed one hundred and fifty of the rulers who dwelt with him, beside those who came up to him from a distance on business. Such was the establishment of the

* Nehem. ix. x.

† Nehem. iii. 7.

Pasha of the Jews.* The former Pashas had received the supply of food together with their pay.

The returning prosperity of Judea under the Persians may be imagined from a few hints which tell us that the cultivation of palm trees and balsam trees at Jericho, which in a later century was very profitable, had already been begun. The valley, which naturally is almost as barren as the neighbouring hills, could only be watered by tanks, which were filled in the rainy season by the torrents from the mountains of Ephraim. But in the Life of Elisha, which was added at this time to the Book of Kings, that prophet is said to have brought fertility into the valley by a miracle, and it continued "unto this day."† We find however no notice of such cultivation there before the Captivity, when Jericho was only important as being on the military route from Beth-el to the fords of the Jordan, and when it was cursed in Josh. vi. in the reign of Zedekiah. Strabo describes this valuable plantation in his time, as being ten miles in length and bringing in a great revenue.‡ In the Chronicles, Jericho is called the City of the Palm Trees.§ If in the earlier books that name is given to Jericho, it may have crept in at a later time; as that name had at first meant a city in the southern desert.||

Under the despotism of the Persians the Jews were now living in peace, if not in comfort. Their late sufferings under the Babylonians made them grateful for their present lot. The growth of the great monarchies around was such that, as Jeremiah had long ago told them, the Jews were too few and too weak to hope for independence. To have attempted to throw off the Persian yoke would have been madness. The line of David's family had by no means come to an end. The stem of Jesse was still flourishing with many branches. Three grandsons of Hattush were living and not unknown, and Elioenai, the eldest, had seven sons;¶ but the nation was well contented to forget the promise that the throne should never be without one of David's family to sit upon it. The writings of these two centuries are no longer filled with politics, and are without the fire and patriotic energy of the older prophets. The few more quiet words of prophecy that we now meet with promise not so much national glory as moral and religious

* Nehem. v. 14—19. † 2 Kings ii. 21. ‡ Strabo, XVI. ii. 41.

§ 2 Chron. xxviii. 15. || Judges i. 16. ¶ 1 Chron. iii. 24.

improvement, with the happiness of seeing the old waste places built up again, and the desolations of many generations repaired.

When the nation had been independent and the people wealthy, the priests and Levites had claimed in laws of their own making to be released from agriculture, to have no inheritance in land, and to be maintained by the tithes and offerings of the faithful. In the Captivity they had no doubt all alike been required to work as labourers, and to give up to their masters a share of the produce. So on the return from captivity the poverty of the people was such that the offerings to the altar, and the atonement money, would fall far short of keeping a body of clergy without the labour of their own hands. Hence, we now find new passages added to the old laws, allowing the Levites to hold lands. As they were no longer able to live without work, they wished to rise above the rank of labourers.

Chapters xviii.—xx. and xxiii.—xxvii. of Leviticus seem to belong to the time of Nehemiah. They are distinguished from the former chapters by having the commands addressed, not to Aaron and his sons, but to the children of Israel. They speak of the return from captivity; they support Nehemiah's order that the wealthy shall not require interest for money lent to a Jew, or hold a Jew in bond-service for his debts; and they declare that the tithe of the produce of the land is to be given to Jehovah. They strictly enforce the law of the Sabbath, so far that even the land is to have rest on the seventh year; and after seven such Sabbatical years, that is on the fiftieth year, there is to be a jubilee, when bond-servants are to be set free, and the land that has been sold is to return to its former owner. An oppressed people's opinion of a man's duty to his fellow-man is likely to be kinder and more tender than that held by a conquering nation. And accordingly justice is to be even-handed; a man is not to be favoured because he is poor, nor because he is powerful (xix. 15). Riches shall not save a guilty man from punishment; no one when condemned to death shall be ransomed by money (xxvii. 29). These chapters are in every respect more modern in character, and show a morality more humane, than the earlier parts of the Mosaic law. They give us the original of the great Christian precept, "Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself" (xix.

18), a command which would seem not to have been written till centuries after that out of which it grew, "Thou shalt love Jehovah thy God."

Chapter xxiii. gives several new orders about the great feasts. Deuteronomy xvi. had said that the Feast of Weeks was to be kept seven weeks after the first putting the sickle into the standing corn, thus making the day vary with the forwardness of the season. But the new law is that the seven weeks are to be reckoned from the morrow after the Sabbath in the Week of Unleavened Bread. At these feasts the gifts to the altar are to be on a very moderate scale, very different from those of Numbers xxviii. xxix., written when the nation was more prosperous. Here the directions for keeping the Feast of Tabernacles or Booths are given twice. In the second, perhaps the later of the two, the people are to rejoice before Jehovah, with palm-branches and willows ; and a fanciful reason is given for the crowds who come to the feast dwelling in booths, because when they came out of Egypt they rested in the town of Succoth, or *booths*. Chapter xxiii. further enforces the observance of the day of Atonement as before ordered. But no chief priest is now mentioned. He had become a less important person since the Captivity.

In this chapter of Leviticus we for the first time find a number of weeks counted as of seven days each ; they are called perfect or regular weeks, as though to distinguish them from the weeks hitherto spoken of, of which four made a lunar month. Seven of these regular weeks are contained within fifty days.

This change of separating the days of the week from the days of the moon was probably brought about by the civil months being first separated from the lunations in Babylon. The Egyptians from a very early time had disregarded the moon, and counted time by months of thirty days each, with five additional days at the end of the year. The Babylonian astronomers had adopted these exact Egyptian months in the reign of Mardoc Empadus, the friend of king Hezekiah ; and very possibly these months were now coming into use in Judea, although we cannot show that to be the case until one hundred and fifty years later.

Leviticus xxv. mentions the Levitical cities, which are

also mentioned in the chapters of Joshua and Numbers, which we give to this time. From chapter xxvii. 16, we learn something of the value of silver. In the bargain with the priest for the redemption of a field which had been vowed to Jehovah, barley was to be reckoned at fifty shekels the homer, that is, about eleven shillings the bushel. At the time of the prophet Hosea silver would seem to have been far more valuable.*

With these chapters of Leviticus we may mention three inserted passages in the Book of Exodus, chapters xvi. 16—30, xxxi. 12—17, and chapter xxxv. 1—3. They are all out of place where they now stand. They contain commands to keep the sabbath, and they give to it a name used only here and in the above mentioned chapters of Leviticus, namely a Sabbath of rest.

For a time after the lately-mentioned chapters of Leviticus were written we must claim part at least of Numbers xxxiv.—xxxvi.; because, when the permission to inherit land, given to Zelophehad's daughters, is repeated from Numbers xxvii. and from Joshua xvii., mention is made of the Jubilee year; and because the daughters with land are now required to marry each within her own tribe, and also because the writer proposes to give to the Levites forty-eight cities, with the pasture lands around them, for their inheritance. The earlier books had said that the Levites were to have no inheritance in land; and this new proposal, like the proposed new division of the country among the tribes in Ezekiel xlvi., belongs to a time when the land was thought to have no legal owners. Among these Levitical cities are to be counted the six cities of refuge set apart of old that the manslayer might flee there for safety from the avenging next of kin. These are first mentioned in Deuteronomy xix.

As long as the nation was independent, the writers had described its boundaries very much as they found them. Thus Genesis xv. 18, written in David's reign, after he had defeated the Amalekites, claimed their desert coast for Abraham's children, and placed the boundary of the Promised Land at the valley of the Nile. Exodus xxiii. 31, written in Jehoshaphat's reign, and Deuteronomy xi. 24, Joshua i. 4, and xv. 1, of the last days of the mon-

* See page 187.

archy, are more moderate, and do not claim the desert ; which so far as it had a master belonged to the king of Egypt. But now that Palestine, Egypt, and the desert between them, are all under the sway of the Persian king, the Jewish writers are at liberty to say that the southern desert belongs to their country ; and Numbers xxxiv. claims for Israel the country of the Amalekites to the valley of Lower Egypt, as does Joshua xv. 2—4, which may have been added to that book at this time.

Joshua xiv. was written in honour of Caleb, the son of Jephunneh, and of his or his family's right to the town of Hebron, which he is said to have gained by conquest. Chapter, xv. 13—19, confirms the same, and adds that Caleb afterwards gave to his son-in-law the land of the South Country together with the hill-sides in the neighbourhood, called the Upper and the Lower Springs. These passages may belong to this time, though we have lost sight of the family in whose honour they were written.

Joshua xx. and xxi. give the names of the Levitical cities, and quote the above mentioned chapters of Numbers, namely xxxiv.—xxxvi. as Joshua's authority for giving them to the Levites. An earlier chapter, Joshua xiii. 33, had said that the Levites were to have no inheritance in land. These two chapters were added a little later than the passages relating to Caleb's right to Hebron, because they give the town of Hebron to the priests, the sons of Aaron, and leave to Caleb only the fields in the neighbourhood.

Joshua xxii. describes the Eastern Israelites as building an altar to Jehovah near Gilgal, within the land of Canaan, near the southern ford of the Jordan, and at the same time promising not to be so rebellious against the one allowed altar as to offer sacrifices upon it. They say that they only meant it as a pattern of the true altar to Jehovah. This is an acknowledgment of the importance of the one altar in Jerusalem, such as does not appear in the original Book of Joshua.

After the Book of Joshua had been written, the Book of Judges was adapted as a continuation to it. Thus Judges ii. 6—iii. 6, followed upon Joshua xxiv. 28. The intermediate sentences, part in one book, and part in the other, are yet later additions. The writer who thus

united the two books may also have introduced the name of Jehovah into the older parts of the Book of Judges; since we now find it there more frequently than it is likely to have been in the original work. The governorship of Nehemiah was a time in which much was done in editing the various Books, and putting them into their present shape; hence the few words at the beginning and end of these Books may be of his time.

Here we may mention chapters i.—iv. 43 of Deuteronomy, which a late editor placed at the beginning of that book as an introduction. They formed no part of the Book of the Covenant brought to king Josiah. They rehearse the events in Exodus and Numbers. The writer had not got before him the list of journeys made by the Israelites in Numbers xxxiii.; as he says in chapter i. 2, that there were only eleven days' journeys between Horeb and Kadesh, whereas that list contains several more. Again he sends the Israelites along the coast by the town of Dizahab, a place not mentioned in that list.

The editors, or possibly the one editor, who wrote the Introduction to Judges, the Introduction to Deuteronomy, and added several passages to Numbers and Joshua, had a strong partiality for the towns of Hebron and Debir; and his great hero, whom he even classes with Joshua the conqueror of Canaan, is Caleb the son of Jephunneh, who, we are told, "wholly followed Jehovah." The writer meant to do honour to some living Calebite family, owners of property around Hebron; but who they were does not now appear.

We are familiar with the words Rock and Fortress as names, or rather titles, of God; but less so with the word Portion. Several of the Psalms say of Jehovah, "Thou art my portion," an expression which is scarcely figurative.* In a late addition to the Book of Jeremiah, however, the word is used as a title; and he says, "The Portion of Jacob is not like these [idols]; for He is the former of all things; Jehovah of hosts is his name."† Again, in the last-mentioned part of the Book of Isaiah, the word Portion is used for "god," and the idolator is told, "Among the smooth stones of the valley is thy Portion [or god].

* Psalm xvi. 5; lxxiii. 26; cxix. 57; cxlii. 5. Lam. iii. 24.

† Jerem. x. 16; li. 19.

These, these are thy lot, and to them hast thou poured a drink offering, thou hast offered a meal offering."* So, lastly, in the Introduction to Deuteronomy, we find that the word had by this time gained a fixed meaning; and when the Jews are forbidden to worship the sun, moon, and stars, they are told that Jehovah had "portioned out" them to the other peoples.†

To the time of Nehemiah we may give the two Books of Chronicles, and the book which bears his own name. The Books of Chronicles contain fewer marks of having been altered or added to after they were first written than most books in the Bible. They seem to be the work of one writer, with the exception of the genealogies, which have received both alterations and additions. The genealogy of David's family is continued through the kings of Judah to Zerubbabel, who came up from captivity in the reign of Cyrus, to Hattush, who afterwards came up from Babylon with Ezra, and it ends with the great nephews of Hattush.‡ The descendants of Ezra are mentioned down to his great grand-children.§ It is possible that Nehemiah may have been the author of these two books, as he wrote a volume of Commentaries in addition to his History; and these Books of Chronicles may be that volume.|| Nehemiah, though not a priest, had a strong leaning to the Levitical law; and the priestly bias of these books is most certain. The writer seems to have had in his hand the Book of Genesis, the Books of Samuel, and the Books of Kings, and also other original authorities, such as

The Book of Samuel the Seer,
 The Book of Nathan the Prophet,
 The Book of Gad the Seer,
 The Book of Ahijah the Shilonite. [Nebat,
 The Visions of Iddo the Seer against Jeroboam the Son of
 The Book of Iddo the Seer concerning Genealogies,
 The Commentary of the Prophet Iddo,
 The Book of Shemaiah the Prophet.
 The Book of Jehu the Son of Hanani,
 The Sayings of the Seers,
 The Book of the Kings of Israel,
 The Acts of the Kings of Israel,

* Isaiah lvii. 6. † Deut. iv. 19. ‡ 1 Chron. iii. 24.
 § 1 Chron. iv. 19. || 2 Maccab. ii. 13.

The Commentary of the Book of Kings,
A History by Isaiah the Prophet, containing Uzziah's reign,
The Vision of Isaiah the Prophet, and
The Book of the Kings of Judah and Israel.

These last two may be the books that we now possess.

The Books of Chronicles are confined almost exclusively to the tribe of Judah. Though they begin with Adam they do not mention the Israelites' residence in Egypt, nor the Exodus, nor the Judges, nor Eli's nor Samuel's rule. They slightly mention Saul's death, and then give the history of the reigns of David and his successors on the throne of Judah, omitting the history of the northern tribes. These books, though often using the very words of the Books of Kings, differ from them in the spirit in which they are written. They are evidently less impartial and less trustworthy; they strongly favour the priests, whom they style Sons of Aaron, and they omit to mention the faults of the favourite kings. But they add some few valuable facts not mentioned in the other books, such as the invasion of Judea by Zerah the Ethiopian, in the reign of Asa, and the conquest of King Manasseh by the King of Assyria, and his captivity in Babylon, and his release. They introduce many modern thoughts into the older parts of the history, making Solomon, when dedicating the Temple, speak of the Captivity, and quote two lines from Psalm cxxxvi. and four lines from Psalm cxxxii.

David's priests, Zadok and Abiathar, whose genealogies in Solomon's time were carefully traced up to Eli, as we have shown in page 83, are now in the Chronicles both brought from Aaron; and Eli is never mentioned. Thus Zadok, in 1 Chron. vi. 8, is made a son of Aaron through Eleazar; and Ahimelech, the father of Abiathar, is, in 1 Chron. xxiv. 3, a son of Aaron through Ithamar. Again, the prophet Samuel in the earlier history is an Ephraimite, and his name is not there made use of to give rank to any of the priesthood; but in 1 Chron. vi. 33, he is a Levite; and the names of himself, his son Joel, and his five forefathers, are brought into the pedigree of Heman the singer, which through them is traced up to Kohath the son of Levi. Again, in the earlier history, in the Books of Samuel, David's faithful body-guard were foreign mercenaries, men of Gath; but in 1 Chron. xii. 8 they are his

countrymen, sons of Gad ; and that the change is not made by the mere carelessness of the scribe is shown by the first body of men being friends of the Philistines, and by these second having come from the other side of the Jordan. From these and many other places in which the Chronicles differ from the earlier history, it may be easily shown that these later books are written with a strong national and priestly bias, and that they cannot be relied upon when they contradict the more impartial Books of Kings. On comparing the list of Levitical cities in 1 Chron. vi. with that in Joshua xx. xxi., we find reason to think that the list in Joshua is the original, and that the list in Chronicles is an incomplete and perhaps incorrect copy. The Chronicles speak of the prophet Elijah as living in Jehoram's reign, but do not mention the marvellous events of his life which we now read of in the Books of Kings. Nor do they mention the prophet Elisha. The last two verses in the Chronicles are borrowed from the beginning of-Ezra.

It is only in a few cases that we know enough of the Jewish families to understand the genealogies at the beginning of the Chronicles. At the time of the Captivity, and after the return, the Pharezites were the chief people in Jerusalem next to the priests ;* and hence when, for the first time, a pedigree was to be found for King David, he was said to have come from Pharez the son of Judah,† notwithstanding the slight thrown upon Pharez in Genesis xxxviii. The history of David's rise, and his birth at Bethlehem, would, on the other hand, have led us to consider him a Calebite. At the time of the Captivity, Ishmael the son of Elishama was one of the most determined enemies to any peace with Babylon;‡ and now Elishama has a pedigree given to him equal to that of the kings and chief priests. He is said to be descended from Jerameel, the supposed father of the Jerameelites, a tribe in the South Country.§ Another family belonging to the Calebites of the South Country, which was lately important enough to add a number of passages to the Pentateuch and the Book of Joshua, in praise of Caleb the son of Jephunneh, who "wholly followed Jehovah," is now lost sight of, and Caleb the son of Jephunneh is mentioned at the begin-

* 1 Chron. ix. 4.

† Jerem. x i.

‡ 1 Chron. ii. 15.

§ 1 Chron. ii. 41.

ning of the Chronicles, but without forefathers, and without descendants.* Another Caleb seems to have robbed him of his importance.†

The genealogy of the chief priests seems to be in the early part imaginary, and in the later part both incorrect and incomplete. Thus Hilkiah the son of Shallum, is made the same person as Hilkiah the father of Azariah, while two generations should be placed between them; and again we have no mention of Jehoida and his son Zechariah, the priests in the reign of Jehoash.

The Book of Nehemiah is one of the most interesting of the historical Books of the Bible. It contains that good man's account of his attempts to serve his unhappy countrymen. We admire his patient zeal, his disinterestedness, his good judgment, his simple manner of telling his story; we regret nothing but his strong prejudices, which made him require husbands to put away wives, the mothers of their children, for no fault whatever, but because there was the smallest possible distinction as to nation between the parties. His obtaining for the citizens of Jerusalem permission to rebuild the city walls, though it was no step towards national independence, was a great comfort to them, and a protection against lawless marauders. The walls were not built as a defence against an army, but they allowed the inhabitants to sleep more quietly, and with less fear of robbery.

But this book is in a sadly confused state. The first part is written by Nehemiah; then, in chap. vii. 6—73, we have a quotation from the Book of Ezra relating to Zerubbabel's doings. This is continued in chap. viii., by a quotation relating to Ezra's doings, of which verses 1—12 are to be found in the Greek, 1 Esdras, and for the rest of the chapter we have no original. Of this we remark that the word "Nehemiah," in verse 9, is not in 1 Esdras; and it has been added by a scribe who thought the chapter related to Nehemiah's doings. The rest of the book relates to Nehemiah's time, except that in chap. xii. 1—26 we have a list of the priests and Levites who came up to Jerusalem with Zerubbabel, but continued by additions down to the time of Alexander the Great. Chap. xiii. 7 to the end,

* 1 Chron. iv. 15.

† 1 Chron. ii. 42, and 50.

relates to when Nehemiah came to Jerusalem a second time.

To some time after Ezekiel had described his vision of the Almighty seated on a crystal firmament supported by cherubs, we must give the similar description of Jehovah as seen by Moses and seventy elders of Israel in Exodus xxiv. 1—11, when Moses read to the people out of the Book of the Covenant. Ezekiel had also in another vision seen seventy elders unlawfully burning incense before the altar, thus letting us know that such was the number of attending priests in the temple in the reign of Zedekiah. But neither in Ezekiel nor in this chapter of Exodus are these elders a body sharing authority with king or chief priest ; nor have we under the monarchy met with any such council. Ezra, however, governed with the help of princes and rulers ; and Nehemiah associated with himself the priests, the Levites, and the chiefs of the people, and thus laid the foundation of the High Council of seventy, which we hear of in after centuries by its Greek name of Sanhedrim. This body seems to be more particularly shadowed forth in Numbers xi. 16—30, wherein Jehovah orders Moses to appoint such a body of seventy rulers, who are at the same time prophets on whom the spirit of Jehovah rested. The passage in Exodus may have been written at any time after Ezekiel ; but the passage in Numbers belongs to the time of Nehemiah, and is further remarkable for its allowing the liberty of prophesying to all who claimed to have the spirit of Jehovah ; and this suits better with the governorship of Nehemiah the cup-bearer than with that of Ezra the high priest.

Numbers xv. 32—36, which relates how a man was stoned to death for picking up sticks upon the sabbath, may be given to this time when Nehemiah was endeavouring to enforce the observance of that day.

In Jeremiah xvii. 19—27, which forbids burdens being brought through the gates of Jerusalem on the Sabbath-day, we find words put into the prophet's mouth, which agree so exactly with the command of Nehemiah to the same purpose, and which so little agree with Jeremiah's own views, that we may give them to this time.

The few words in the prophecy of Micah vii. 11—13, which speak of the walls of Jerusalem being rebuilt, may

also have been added to that prophet's writings at this time.

It is to this half-century, to the time of Nehemiah, that we must give another portion of the Book of Isaiah, written by an author whom, for distinction's sake, we may call the Isaiah of the Rebuilding, who for the beauty of his style and breadth of his religion deserves to be classed with the Isaiah of the Return Home. These are chapters lx.—lxii. which are expressive of delight at the mildness of the foreign despots, and at the permission given to build up the walls of Jerusalem. "Arise [O Jerusalem], shine, for thy light is come; and the glory of Jehovah is risen upon thee."... "The sons of foreigners shall build up thy walls, and their kings shall minister unto thee... I will make thine overseers peace, and thy tribute-gatherers righteousness. Violence shall no more be heard in thy land, wasting nor destruction within thy borders; but thou shalt call thy walls Salvation, and thy city gates Praise." The people are promised not national glory, but that the year of acceptance by Jehovah is at hand. The priesthood is forgotten, and the people are to be called priests of Jehovah, and ministers of our God; and Zion's righteousness is to go forth as brightness, and its salvation as a lamp that burneth.

Isaiah lvi. 1—8, may be by the same writer. It uses the same thought, that salvation is near to come, and righteousness to be revealed. It also belongs to the time of Nehemiah, when the Sabbath is to be kept more strictly; and it may be compared to Jeremiah xvii. 19—27, which we have given to this time. The permission for eunuchs to enter the temple seems to have been written in favour of Nehemiah himself, who had been chamberlain to the Persian king. This permission, though it was limited to "an appointed place" in the temple-yard, as we know that Nehemiah would have understood it, yet is in direct contradiction to Deuteronomy xxiii. 1.

The next portion of Isaiah, namely, chapter lxiii. 1—6, is not without its difficulty; for neither the Greek historians, nor the historical books of the Bible, have mentioned the conquest of Edom here spoken of. It has been conjectured that it was by the Persians, in one of their many wars with Egypt, when the kings of Persia sent

troops to put down the Egyptian struggles for freedom. That this slaughter of the Edomites took place at about this time, is made probable by our finding it also mentioned at the beginning of the Book of Malachi, which belongs to this date.

To the time of Nehemiah, but after the Chronicles were written, and before the Book of Malachi, we must give the history of Elijah, and that of his servant and successor, Elisha. The name of Elijah is quoted by no writer earlier than Malachi and the Chronicler ; and that of Elisha seems to have been unknown even to the Chronicler. These two lives very much interrupt the narrative at the end of the First Book of Kings, and at the beginning of the Second, into which they have been woven very awkwardly.

Elijah is a native of Gilead, a prophet of Jehovah, who reproves Ahab, king of Israel, for his worship of Baal, and threatens him with a famine for three years. During that time he makes a widow's pitcher of meal and cruse of oil furnish her with an unfailing supply of food, and he heals her sick son by his prayers.* He challenges four hundred and fifty prophets of Baal to a trial of whose god is the true god, by every one preparing an ox upon an altar for a burnt offering on Mount Carmel, and praying to heaven for the fire. The priests of Baal try but cannot burn their offerings ; but Elijah obtains the fire that he prays for, which consumes his offering ; and then he slays the prophets of Baal.† Queen Jezebel then tries to kill Elijah, but he escapes to Beer-sheba in the south of Judah, and goes to the Mount of God in Horeb, where he hides himself in a cave. Then we have that grandest of descriptions, an example of the sublime in writing, which surpasses that which we have admired in the Book of Nahum. In that the description rises from a state of quiet to one of noise and action. In this on the other hand it rises from noise and action, to rest and silence. Perhaps no other example can be shown of a writer venturing so slowly and so boldly to raise our expectations, and then wholly satisfying them :—

“Jehovah passed by, and a great and strong wind rent the mountains and brake in pieces the rocks before Jehovah ; but Jehovah

* 1 Kings xvii.

† 1 Kings xviii.

was not in the wind.—And after the wind there was an earthquake; but Jehovah was not in the earthquake.—And after the earthquake there was a fire; but Jehovah was not in the fire.—And after the fire there was a still small voice.—And it was so when Elijah heard it, that he wrapped his face in his mantle and went out and stood at the entrance of the cave.”

The Hebrew language contains no finer piece of writing than the above.

Elijah on departing meets with Elisha, whom he takes as his servant.* Elijah afterwards reproves Ahab and Jezebel for their crime in causing the death of Naboth, that they might obtain his vineyard.† When the next king of Israel, Ahaziah, sends a captain with fifty men to seize Elijah, perhaps to punish him for his bold reproofs, Elijah calls down fire from heaven, which consumes them. He does the same with the second troop that is sent for him; but he spares the third troop, and goes with them to the king. When he has occasion to cross the Jordan he divides the waters by a stroke of his mantle, and he and his servant Elisha pass over on dry ground. He is soon afterwards taken up to heaven in a chariot of fire, without dying naturally.

The spirit of Elijah then rests on his servant Elisha, and his doings are related as equally miraculous. He makes Jericho an oasis in the desert, and its spring of water sweet, which had been bad. He curses forty-two children who had mocked him, and they are devoured by two she bears.‡ His other doings are equally improbable, and equally foreign from the history of the times. He dies in the reign of Jehoash, the grandson of Jehu.§

The fertilizing the valley of Jericho, which is here given to the miraculous power of Elisha in Ahab's reign, was probably due to the Persian government in hopes of profit from the plantation of palm trees, which then gave a new name to Jericho, “the city of the palm trees.” Another part of Elisha's life seems very particularly to belong to this time. When Elisha gives Naaman permission to accompany his master into the temple of Rimmon, and there to bow down before the idol, we read of the only case in which a Hebrew writer has shown the least willingness to excuse the yielding to the pressure put upon them by their con-

* 1 Kings xix.

† 1 Kings xxi.

‡ 2 Kings i. ii.

§ 2 Kings xiii. 20.

querors.* The good Nehemiah, while living in the palace at Susa as the cup-bearer and favourite of king Artaxerxes, had no doubt often bowed his head in seeming worship in the Persian temple ; and the writer may have added to the Book of Kings this story of Naaman, to comfort Nehemiah in his doubts as to whether he had done right, or to apologize to others for his conduct.

Chapter xiii. of the First Book of Kings with the history of the Man of God, who prophesied in the reign of Jeroboam that the altar at Bethel should be destroyed by king Josiah, might be written at any time after Josiah came to the throne. But the character of the narrative, with the mention of "the cities of Samaria," as a name for the cities of the northern kingdom, place it at some time after the return from captivity. This old altar at Beth-el, at first dedicated to El, or *God*, had been defiled by king Jeroboam with one of his golden calves ; it had been changed into an altar to Jehovah by permission of the Assyrians, when Israel was taken into captivity ; then, being a rival to that on mount Moriah, it had been denounced by the prophets Amos and Hosea ; it had* been supported by a sentence added to the Life of Abraham, and by another added to the Life of Jacob ; it had been destroyed by King Josiah ; and lastly, its destruction was justified, and said to have been foretold in this chapter of the Book of Kings.

From the Lives of Elijah and Elisha, and the doings of other men of God, which have been added to the Books of Kings, we see that a new view of the religious life had lately reached Judea, perhaps from India, or perhaps from the Thebaid ; teaching that a man who would be perfect should separate himself from the affairs of this world, and give himself up to solitude, to meditation, and to the practice of self-denial. The holy man of God is not to be a priest, nor is he to be an eloquent writer and a cultivated man, like the great prophets who lived under the monarchy. He is to shun the cities, to live in a cave, to drink water from the brook, and to eat such bread as the ravens or the angels should bring to him. He will be known by sight as a hairy man, having no clothing but a leathern apron about his loins. He will sit upon the ground in silent prayer, with his face between his knees. He will defend himself in his solitude by calling down fire from heaven

* 2 Kings v. 18, 19.

against those who would hurt him, or a bear from the woods against children who should laugh at him. When he travels he lives on charity, and he repays kindness by working miraculous cures. He refuses all wealth when offered; and if he is not before he dies, carried up to heaven in a whirlwind, his body, when he is dead, works miracles. Such at a later age were the Essenes, and such was John the Baptist.

The prophecy of Malachi is of the time of Nehemiah. Like Isaiah, lxiii. 1—6, he tells us that the mountains of Edom have been made a waste, and his heritage been given to the jackals of the desert. He complains that the priests and the people bring worthless animals to the temple for their offerings, such as they would not think of offering to their Pasha; and that no one will open or shut the temple doors without pay. He does not approve of Nehemiah's command that they should put away their foreign wives. He blames, indeed, Judah, for having married the daughter of a foreign god; but then he warns every man not to deal treacherously against the wife of his youth, and says that she is the wife of his covenant, and that the putter away is hateful to Jehovah, and yet further, that putting away their wives in the name of religion has covered the altar of Jehovah with tears, with weeping, and with groans. He charges the people to remember the law of Moses, with the statutes and judgments, thus describing the Pentateuch. He is the only one of the prophets that does so. He threatens the people with a coming day of punishment upon the wicked, but when, to those who fear the name of Jehovah, the sun of righteousness shall arise with healing on its wings; and he promises that, before that time, the prophet Elijah shall return to earth to bring them back to their duty. He thus puts forth a promise quite new to the Hebrew writings. The former prophets had taught the people to look for a prince of the line of David who should again raise up the nation to its former glory. But in the face of the great empires by which the Jews were now surrounded, national independence was hardly to be hoped for. Hence the wished-for help is to come in the form of a spiritual teacher sent from heaven.

Malachi complains that God is cheated in the matter of tithes, which were very little paid when the people were

poor, and there was no power to enforce their payment. The Persian tax-gatherer claimed all that could be spared.

And here we may take a review of the history of the tithes, founded upon our attempted chronological arrangement of the books which mention them. They are first mentioned in David's reign, when Abraham, the representative of the nation, is said to have paid tithes to Melchizedek, the representative of David. That they were a royal tax, and at that time a new tax, is explained in the Book of Samuel, which was written in Solomon's reign. This book, speaking about Saul's election as king, makes the prophet Samuel warn the people that, if they appoint a king, he will claim for himself a tithe of the produce of their fields, of the sheep as well as of the corn. The victuals which Solomon's officers gathered for him were probably the produce of the tithe. After this we do not again hear of the tithes for several centuries. They are not mentioned in the Book of Exodus. While that was being written they were probably being paid very regularly as a royal tax. Nor are they mentioned in the early part of the Book of Leviticus. When that was being written the power of the king was very much lessened ; the taxes could not be collected without the help of the Levites ; they were passing out of the king's hands ; and after a time the Levites claimed the tithes as their own property. Numbers xviii., written between the reigns of Jehoash and Hezekiah, gives the tithe of the corn and grape juice to the Levites for their maintenance, in addition to the offerings of the worshippers, upon which they had hitherto lived ; and it gives the tithe of the tithe for the support of the priests ; and the Chronicler tells us that the tithes were then in the hands of the Levites. Moreover, in the reign of Hezekiah, when the northern kingdom had been carried into captivity, the prophet Amos informs us that some of those who were left behind, and had their own priests, paid their tithe every third year at the town of Bethel. This was only paid in good will. When Deuteronomy xii. was written, in the reign of Josiah, the power of the priests and Levites was very much lessened. They could no longer claim the tithes as their own. They only hoped for a share of them ; and the new law advises, rather than commands, the owner to consume them as a peace-offering or love-feast with his friends and the Levites at the

national altar. But it was soon found necessary to make this demand upon the people lighter ; and Deuteronomy xiv., added, perhaps, in the next reign, directs that this love-feast is to be for two years only at the national altar, and on the third year at his own city. During the Captivity, and after the return home, the poverty of the country made the Levites turn to cultivate the soil for themselves ; there was no power to enforce the payment of tithes, and very few were then paid. The chapters added to the Book of Ezekiel under Zerubbabel only propose that a sixtieth part of the corn, a hundredth part of the oil, and one in two hundred of the lambs should be given to the temple as a heave-offering. When we come to Ezra's time, Deuteronomy xxvi. limits the payment of tithes to every third year, which is called the year of tithing ; and then the owner is only asked to share them with his friends and the strangers and the Levites in his own city—he is not told to carry them up to Jerusalem. This makes the payment quite as light as that proposed in Ezekiel xlv. Nehemiah, however, in better times, boldly attempted to revive the old law of Numbers xviii., and called upon the people to give the tithe of the corn, the grape-juice, and the oil to the Levites, who were to give the tithe of the tithe, as before, to the priests. Then we have a law, which may be of Nehemiah's time, in Leviticus xxvii., which explains how the tithe on produce may be redeemed for money, while the tithe on calves and lambs, now mentioned for the first time since Solomon's reign, may not be so redeemed. But Malachi lets us understand that the old laws and the new laws had alike fallen into disuse. A few zealous persons may have paid tithes in one or other of the above forms ; but by the people at large that duty was neglected.

The concluding lines of Psalm li. declare their date as belonging to the time of Nehemiah, by speaking of the city walls as likely to be rebuilt :—

Do good in thy good pleasure unto Zion ;
 Build thou the walls of Jerusalem.
 Then shalt thou be pleased with sacrifices of righteousness,
 With burnt offerings and whole burnt offerings ;
 Then shall bullocks be offered up on thine altar.

These words remind us how much the ceremonial religion had revived since the time of Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Deuter-

onomy. But the greater part of the Psalm is probably by a different writer, and of a rather earlier time, and of a very different opinion about the value of burnt offerings ; as, like Isaiah, he considers that repentance, not sacrifice, is what God requires of the sinner.

Psalm cxlvii. speaks of the walls of Jerusalem as having been rebuilt :—

Praise Jehovah, O Jerusalem,
Praise thy God, O Zion.
For he strengtheneth the bars of thy gates ;
He blesseth thy children within thee.

This Psalm begins and ends with the words *Hallelu-Jah*, or *praise ye Jehovah*, as also do many of these later Psalms.

Another class of Psalms, which belong to a time later than the return from Captivity, is known by their drawing a distinction between the Israelites and those that fear Jehovah. By these latter words are meant all those who worshipped with the Jews, who would have called themselves Jews if they had been allowed, but who were pushed aside by their proud superiors and masters as Gentiles, as Samaritans, as the strangers who sojourned among them.

Of this class is Psalm cxviii., which was written to be sung in parts at one of the national feasts :—

Let Israel now say
that His kindness endureth for ever.
Let the house of Aaron now say
that His kindness endureth for ever.
Let them that fear Jehovah now say
that His kindness endureth for ever.

So is Psalm cxv., which was also sung in parts :—

Let Israel trust in Jehovah,
He is their help and their shield.
Let the house of Aaron trust in Jehovah,
He is their help and their shield.
Let them that fear Jehovah trust in Jehovah,
He is their help and their shield.

Here the Levites are not distinguished from the priests ; but in Psalm cxxxv. we have four classes of men :—

O house of Israel, bless ye Jehovah,
O house of Aaron, bless ye Jehovah,
O house of Levi, bless ye Jehovah,
Ye that fear Jehovah, bless ye Jehovah.

It was the feeling here described which led to the forbidding a large part of the population of Jerusalem from entering the courts of the temple on the east and west of the Altar. The space on the north of the Altar, to which alone strangers were admitted, was, after a time, called the Court of the Gentiles. It is "the appointed place" of Isaiah lvi. 5. It was used as a market-place; and though it was part of Mount Moriah, some of the more prejudiced Jews at times declared that it was no part of the Holy Place. It was in contradiction to this opinion that chap. xliii. 12 of Ezekiel, written before the temple had been rebuilt, but when its restoration was hoped for, had promised that the whole top of the hill should be most holy. The time of Ezra and Nehemiah is strongly marked by the revival of the priesthood, as shown in these Psalms. The priests had been called the Sons of Aaron in the early chapters of Leviticus; but since the religious changes which followed the Assyrian invasion in Hezekiah's reign, we have not met with that title until we come to these Psalms and the Books of Chronicles.

After the time of the Captivity, when the Jews had got acquainted with a larger portion of our globe, a new opinion shows itself in their writings about the races of men. They seem to have discovered that the Book of Genesis gave too narrow a view of the origin of mankind; and some writers began to make a division between the Sons of Adam, meaning themselves, and the Sons of Men, meaning the rest of the human family. Psalm lxii. clearly distinguishes between Sons of Adam and Sons of Men, saying :—

Truly the Sons of Adam are vanity,
The Sons of Men are falsehood.
In the balance they are together lighter than vanity.

Here, however, we are not told to what race either name belongs. In Psalm iv. the writer reproachfully calls his enemies "Sons of men," as if he were a Son of Adam. The Elohistie Psalm lxvi., written after the return home, says :—

Come ye, and consider the works of God ;
He was terrible in his doings for the Sons of Adam.
He turned the sea into dry land ;
They passed over the river on foot.

Again, Psalm xxxvi., which we have given to the time of Ezra, or later, says :—

How excellent is thy loving kindness, O God ;
And the Sons of Adam trust in the shade of thy wings ;
They are watered with the fatness of thy House.

In both these cases this name of Sons of Adam is strictly limited to the Israelites ; it cannot even be allowed to include the whole of the Semitic race. In the Song of Moses we ought probably to give the same limited meaning to the name of Sons of Adam ; thus :—

When the Most High gave inheritance to the Nations,
When he separated the Sons of Adam,
He set the boundaries of the peoples
According to the number of the Children of Israel.*

In Psalm xlix., also, the name of Sons of Adam is used very distinctly for a part, and a part only, of the human family. But here, as in Psalm lxii., it does not appear to what races it is limited, though it seems to include the upper and more favoured ; thus :—

Give ear, all ye inhabitants of the world,
Sons of Adam, and Sons of Men, rich and poor together :

The writer of this last Psalm, No. xlix., shows very clearly his hopes of a future life after death, thus, speaking of the wicked :—

Like sheep they are laid in the grave ;
Death will be their shepherd,
And the upright will tread over them in the morning ;
And their form will waste away in hell,
Every one away from his dwelling.
But God will redeem my soul from the power of hell ;
For he will receive me.

With this we may mention Psalm xvi., though there is no reason for placing it at this late date, except that it points to a future life after death ; thus :—

My flesh also will dwell in hope,
For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell,
Nor suffer thy godly one to see corruption.
Thou wilt make known to me the path of life.
In thy presence is fulness of joy ;
At thy right hand are pleasures for evermore.

* Deut. xxxii.

We have no clear account of the Schools of Learning at this time in Judea ; but we have many scattered hints which tell us that since the Return from Captivity learning had been very much cultivated. A nation which produced new writings in every generation since the time of the prophet Samuel, can never have been without schools ; and the change in the language which took place in Judea, while the priests were in captivity, made such schools more particularly necessary, when the captives returned home, and again called the people's attention to the written Law. The language at that time in use approached the Syriac and Chaldee ; and when Ezra read the Law to the assembled people, some of the Levites who understood both the Biblical Hebrew and the spoken language, then explained it to those who understood the spoken language only.* Those of the Levites who could do this were called Interpreters.† The need for such a class of men naturally gave encouragement to the schools.

The schools did not limit their instruction to language. Religious wisdom and the Books of the Law received their first attention. Under what heads the other branches of human knowledge were grouped we do not know. But as the Greeks divided all knowledge among the nine Muses, so in Judea Wisdom built her house with seven pillars, and placed it beside the public paths, and called upon the simple to come in and learn.‡

The Son of Sirach tells us that there was a class of learned men, whose life was devoted to study and teaching. Unlike the carpenter, the smith, and the potter, whose useful but humble employments engaged their whole time, the learned man was at leisure to study the Law of God, and the sayings of the famous men of old, and even to gain wisdom by foreign travel. Such a man, when filled with the spirit of understanding, could pour out wise sentences, and give thanks unto the Lord in prayer.§

We get a hint of their method of teaching by question and answer from Malachi ii. 12, where "he that wakeneth up, and he that answereth," probably mean the teacher and the learner. The learners in these schools no doubt paid a fee to the teacher ; as they are earnestly advised

* Nehem. viii. 7, 8.

† Job xxxiii. 23 ; Isaiah xliii. 27.

‡ Prov. viii. ix.

§ Chap. xxxviii. xxxix.

to buy the truth, and are assured that the trade of wisdom is better than the trade of silver.*

Out of these schools came not only the Teachers of the Law, but also the Scribes, whose careful penmanship was laboriously employed in copying the sacred books on sheets of leather prepared for the purpose.

Nehemiah, as we have said, left behind him a volume of history, probably the book which we now possess with his name; and also a volume of Commentaries, possibly the two Books of Chronicles. But he did more than that for the literature of his country; he gathered together into a library, perhaps in one of the chambers of the temple, those sacred treasures, the writings of the learned men who had gone before him. These are described as four classes:—

First, the Acts of the Kings: these may be most of our historic books;

Secondly, the writings of the Prophets;

Thirdly, the writings of David, being, of course, such Psalms as were already written; and

Fourthly, the Epistles of the Kings concerning the holy gifts.† These may be the letters contained in the Book of Ezra. These letters, which are in the Chaldee language, and indeed all the Chaldee portions of the Book of Ezra, namely, iv. 7—vi. 18, and vii. 12—26, were added to that book after this time. Chapter iv. 6, which is in Hebrew, is also an addition made at a different time; it is not found in 1 Esdras ii.

The Book of the Law, or the Pentateuch, is not mentioned among Nehemiah's books, probably because it had been before collected by Ezra, whom we have seen reading it to the assembled people in the courts of the temple. The Hebrew Scriptures are at present in the original text divided into the Law, the Histories, the Prophets, and a miscellaneous volume, called the Writings. Of this last volume Nehemiah only collected some Psalms and part of Ezra; and there remain unmentioned, Job, the Proverbs, Solomon's Song, Ruth, Lamentations, Ecclesiastes, Daniel, and Esther, together with his own writings, the Book of Nehemiah, and the Chronicles. Of these, some were unwritten, and others had not yet obtained

* Prov. xxiii. 23; iii. 14.

† 2 Maccabees ii. 13.

that sacred character that now gives to them a place among the books of the Bible.

When in the year B.C. 433, Nehemiah returned to his former office in Susa, the government of Jerusalem fell to Sanballat, the governor of Samaria. He carried it on by means of Tobiah, one of his officers, who often dwelt at Jerusalem. Eliashib, the chief priest, then became of more importance than he had before been. Nehemiah had thrown him into the shade. Nehemiah had been more zealous for the Levitical law than the chief priest himself. But Nehemiah had not been able to enforce his own orders. He had seen with pain two nobles of Jerusalem give their daughters in marriage to Samaritans. One of these was married to Tobiah, and the other to Tobiah's son.* When Nehemiah left Jerusalem this disobedience still further increased. He had attempted too much; he had attempted to draw a line of separation where nature had not made one. In a short time one of Eliashib's grandsons, who might one day by the law of blood be himself the chief priest, married Sanballat's daughter.† This took place with Eliashib's approval. And further, Eliashib, who as chief priest was the governor of the temple and of the chambers around the Great Hall, gave up one of these chambers for the use of Tobiah, Sanballat's officer, whose frequent presence in Jerusalem is explained by his acting in the government of Jerusalem for Sanballat, governor of Samaria.

To this time, when the chief priest himself was opposed to the Levitical law of forbidding marriages with foreigners, being so far stretched as to mean forbidding marriages with Samaritans, we may give Numbers xii. 1—15, which seems to have been written in defence of the foreign wives whom Nehemiah required the husbands to put away. Moses's foreign wife had been called a Midianite; but here, in order to make the case stronger, she is called by the more general name of Cushite, which may even mean a negress; and yet Aaron and Miriam are reproved by Jehovah for blaming the marriage.

The beautiful story of Ruth is one of those which has no certain place in the history of Hebrew literature. It is placed early in our Bibles, but by the Jews has always

* Nehem. vi. 18.

† Nehem. xiii. 28.

been considered one of the later books. Indeed the peaceable life of the reapers and gleaners there described, with the quiet purchase of the mortgaged estate in the presence of the elders of Beth-lehem seated at the city gate, is wholly unlike the lawless times of the Judges, in which Ruth was supposed to live. Then Beth-lehem, with the larger part of Judah, was in servitude under the Philistines, or if not, every man was doing what was right in his own eyes. Ruth, the heroine of the story, is a young Moabite woman, who, in devotedness to her late husband's mother, follows her out of the land of Moab into Judea to Beth-lehem, the place of her husband's family. There she lives in poverty ; but her good conduct gains for her the notice of a wealthy member of her husband's family, who marries her ; and her son Obed becomes the grandfather of King David. The moral that we may draw from the story is, that no Jew is the worse for being born of a Moabite mother ; and when Nehemiah quotes from the Book of Moses that a Moabite shall not come into the assembly of God for ever, it looks as if this history of Ruth were written to throw a doubt upon the value or wisdom of that law.

The Book of Jonah, like the Book of Ruth, does not bear upon its face a very exact date. The prophet, the subject of the story, lived in the time of Jeroboam II. ; but as his poetical prayer, spoken when he was in the fish's belly, is made of lines borrowed from perhaps six Psalms ; one, Psalm xlii. written during the captivity ; one, Psalm cxx. written after the return, it belongs to a very late period. It has very little literary merit ; but no Hebrew book shows a kinder feeling towards the nation's enemies. The direct aim of the writer is to justify God in not wholly destroying the city of Nineveh, the old capital of Assyria. The Jews now felt grateful to the mild government of the present king of Assyria, as the Persian monarch was usually styled by them. The writer had perhaps dwelt at Nineveh himself. He describes it as a city of three days' journey, with much cattle ; thus including within the one name the three towns of Nineveh, Resen, and Calah, all within the fork made by the Tigris and the Great Zab. He counts its population at a hundred and twenty thousand persons, living in heathen ignorance, which he describes as not knowing the right hand from the left. But the indi-

rect purport of the book, like that of the Book of Ruth, is to lessen the separation between the Jews, and the strangers who were living among them, a separation which Ezra and Nehemiah had taken pains to widen.

Nehemiah returned to Jerusalem as governor a second time, after some years' absence. Eliashib the chief priest was dead. Joiada had succeeded him. It was therefore after the year B.C. 428, the year in which Eliashib died.* Artaxerxes Longimanus was dead; and it was probably in the reign of Darius Ochus, or Nothus, that Nehemiah again obtained leave to return to Jerusalem, with the same authority as before. But on his arrival he found to his disappointment that his regulations had been very much neglected. Eliashib the high priest had allowed his grandson to marry a daughter of Sanballat the Samaritan, the governor of Samaria, and he had granted to Tobiah, who was related to Sanballat, the use of a chamber within the courts of the Temple. Tobiah probably claimed to govern the city for Sanballat, whose servant he was. But the quarrel between Jews and Samaritans was already too strong for this to be allowed, if it could be stopped. So Nehemiah had Tobiah's furniture at once removed, and had the chamber cleansed from the impurity. Nehemiah reproachfully calls Tobiah an Ammonite; but his name, *The goodness of Jehovah*, and his alliance to the chief priest, disprove this.

The neglect of the people to send up to Jerusalem the appointed tithes had made it necessary for some of the Levites and singers in the service of the Temple to leave the city and take themselves to the fields, where they could support themselves by their labour. This irregularity Nehemiah corrected, and the service of the Temple was again performed more as he wished it to be. Moreover, the holiness of the Sabbath had been sadly neglected: the wine-presses were trodden on the Sabbath, and the market people brought in their burdens of food for sale on that day as on the others. This Nehemiah stopped by having the city gates shut for the twenty-four hours of the Sabbath; and when the dealers, travelling on that day, lodged on the outside, waiting for the first day of the week, he threatened that if they came up again on the Sabbath he would have them punished.

* Paschal Chronicle.

Lastly, Nehemiah again strictly enforced his former orders, that all the Jews should put away their foreign wives; and when Manasseh, the son of Joiada the chief priest, the grandson of Eliashib, the late high priest, refused, he was forced to leave Judea.*

We are not told how long Nehemiah remained governor this second time. We have supposed that the chief part of his own Book was written before; but now must have been added chapter xiii. 7 to the end, which relates to this time. At a yet later time several other passages were added by later editors.

Though we shall hereafter have to mention a few later additions to the Hebrew Books, yet we have reason to think that no great alterations were made in them after this time. As within a very few years after Nehemiah's death the Samaritan transcript of the Pentateuch was made, and only a century later copies of all the Books were sent to Alexandria, and from them the Greek translation was made; we judge that the Books which have been saved out of Nehemiah's library were, in all that is important the same as those which we now have.

If we look carefully into the several books, having a regard to their dates, with a view to study the growth of the language, we soon find that we have not got materials for such a study. We are driven to the conclusion that the scribes of Ezra's and Nehemiah's time have given to the older books a more modern dress; probably not by any rule, but from the simple wish that each new copy should be in such a form as it could be best understood. We have noticed the generation which followed the return from captivity as one of high poetical merit; but we must go back to the century before the Captivity for the greatest purity of language. The age of Joel, Isaiah, Nahum, and Habakkuk, we may call the age of orators, when the spoken and the written languages were yet in agreement. After the Captivity they were no longer so. If Ezra's and Nehemiah's scribes, in revising the text, in making the spelling of the older books modern, in removing forgotten words, if they had any standard of excellence, it was probably the Book of Isaiah. From this none of the books written before the Captivity now depart very widely. To bring this

* Nehem. xiii. 28.

agreement about, the prophets, the great writers who were themselves the standard, needed no alteration; but we must believe that the Books of Judges, Samuel, Kings, the Pentateuch, and the Psalms, if given to us in their original form would show more obsolete words and expressions than we now find in them.

For the books written after the Captivity the case is different; they needed no such correction. Though the spoken language continued to change, the written language ceased to follow, and remained fixed, as far at least as any thing is fixed in this changing world. A few of the later writers, men of real genius, may be supposed to show in their works each his own peculiar style and choice of words, as in Job and Ecclesiastes; but in most of the late writings we find the quiet regularity, and tame, weak uniformity, of men who were writing in a dead language. This is particularly shown in Moses's Song and Blessing at the end of Deuteronomy, and in the Alphabetic and Hallelujah Psalms.

Origen and later Christian writers had a tradition that the Jews, on their return from captivity, changed the characters in which their books had been written, and then introduced the Hebrew square letters; and that before the Captivity the letters in use had been nearly the same as the Samaritan letters. But neither Ezra nor Nehemiah give us any hint of such a change having been made. Nor is it probable that any change was ever made, other than that which time always brings in, that slight change in the form of the letters, as in the way of spelling the words, by which each generation thinks that it is improving upon the former, while careful not to depart from it.

We observe that the scribes have left very many glaring contradictions, both in the Laws and in the History; and as they did not remove these we judge that they executed their task with great modesty and reverence, changing nothing that was important, but making the Books more easy to be understood.

On parting with Nehemiah, as Hebrew literature is drawing to a close, we are tempted to look around upon the neighbouring nations; and on turning to Greece, at this time the most cultivated, we remark that Nehemiah lived at the same time as Æschylus and Pindar. These were

followed by Sophocles, Herodotus, Thucydides, and a crowd of other great authors ; but of those who lived before this time Homer and Hesiod alone can be put in comparison with the best Hebrew writers. The Books of Joel, Isaiah, Nahum, Habakkuk, the Isaiah of the Return Home, and Job, were all written before Greece could show as much literary excellence. Had a traveller, after surveying the known world in the reign of Xerxes I., been asked what country furnished the best models of good writing, the most inspiring examples for a writer to study, he would have named not Greece but Judea.

One of the last acts mentioned in the life of Nehemiah, was his driving away from Jerusalem and from the priesthood a son of Joiada, a grandson of Eliashib, because he married a Samaritan wife, the daughter of Sanballat the governor of Samaria, and was not willing to put her away agreeably to the general order issued by Nehemiah. Manasseh, the young man who had thus offended, withdrew from Jerusalem and came to his father-in-law Sanballat, at Samaria ; and Sanballat, to console him for the loss of his rank as high priest, promised to obtain leave from Darius, the Persian king, to build for him a temple on Mount Gerizim like that at Jerusalem, and to make him the chief priest there. The request was granted, and the Samaritan temple to Jehovah was accordingly built on Mount Gerizim, overlooking the city of Shechem. Josephus places this in the reign of Darius Codomanus, the last of the Persian kings, B.C. 334 ; but the name of Sanballat fixes it to the time of Nehemiah and the reign of Darius Nothus, perhaps about B.C. 408.*

As we know nothing of either half of the nation since the return from captivity, except through southern historians, we have but slender notices of the Samaritans, and those probably rather unfair. We are never indeed told of the return of any number of the northern captives. The Jewish historian says that they were a very mixed race, with idols copied from those of the surrounding nations, who now dwelt among them ; but he acknowledges many of them as Israelites, by saying that they forsook the ordinances and statutes which Jehovah had commanded them. Some feared Jehovah, but yet made for themselves, out of

* Josephus Ant. XI. viii. 2.

the lowest of the people, priests to sacrifice on the High Places ; while others, worse still, sacrificed for themselves within the houses on the High Places.* In short, they had no Levites among them, and never came up with their free-will offerings to worship in Jerusalem. The unfavourable picture of them is no doubt overcoloured, as the nations had never been friends since the revolt on the death of Solomon, which was always spoken of as the Sin of Jeroboam, the son of Nebat, wherein he made Israel to sin.

The building by the Samaritans of a temple to Jehovah on Mount Gerizim, in rivalry to that of Jerusalem, was a new cause of jealousy between the two nations. There had been an altar there centuries ago, but now they built a temple. Hitherto the northern tribes, the Samaritans, as we must now call them, had sacrificed on a variety of High Places ; but now, like the Jews, they professed that there was one only place for the worship of Jehovah ; but in opposition to the Jews they said that that place was not Mount Moriah but Mount Gerizim. In support of this opinion they quoted Deuteronomy xxvii. 4, where however our present Hebrew copies have the name of the hill not Gerizim but Ebal. Many were the disputes which arose about this temple ; and one or other of the nations must have falsified their copies of the Bible in order to justify or to blame the choice of the spot for the building. The settlement of this disputed point of criticism depends upon the age assigned to the Samaritan version of the Pentateuch, and also upon the relative age of the Samaritan alphabet and of the square characters in which the Hebrew Bible is written. The author will content himself with stating his own view of the matter.

The Samaritan Pentateuch is not a version into a language different from the Hebrew. It is merely a transcript, which professes to make no change in the words, but to give the Hebrew words in the Samaritan letters. The Hebrew square characters declare their high antiquity by their pictorial form, and by their close resemblance to the Egyptian hieroglyphics, from which they seem to be copied. Moreover, it is very improbable that the Jews, reverencing their books so highly, should have ever ventured to change the characters in which they were first written. The Samaritan-

* 2 Kings xvii.

ans on the other hand, now for the first time building a temple to Jehovah, and proposing to have a priesthood of the line of Aaron, would naturally wish for a transcript of the sacred books, if the characters in which the Jews had written them were not so well understood on Mount Gerizim. The argument that the Samaritan letters are the older of the two, because no Hebrew monuments can now be shown that are as old as the Samaritan letters on the Maccabee coins, is of little weight; since those coins are too modern to have much bearing on the controversy. Upon the whole it seems probable that the Hebrew Scriptures were in Jerusalem always written in square characters, much the same as those in which we now read them, and that the Samaritan transcript of the Pentateuch was made from the square characters into the northern characters soon after the time of Nehemiah. The Samaritan Bible does not reach beyond the Pentateuch, which circumstance alone should settle that it is a transcript, having no claim to be the original. The Samaritans seem never to have taken the trouble to complete the task.

The city of Shechem stood in a very narrow valley between Mount Ebal and Mount Gerizim, but close to the foot of Mount Gerizim, as is shown on a coin of the Emperor Titus. On this latter hill the Samaritan temple was built, no doubt near the site of an ancient altar. As soon as it was built, the Jews said that the Samaritans were acting in disobedience to the Law, and quoted their Bible, which, in Deut. xxvii. 4, says that Moses had fixed upon Mount Ebal and not on Mount Gerizim for Joshua's altar. The Samaritans, on the other hand, quoted from their own Bible the same command of Moses to Joshua, to build an altar to Jehovah at Mount Gerizim, as a proof that Gerizim was the proper spot, as opposed to Mount Moriah, near Jerusalem. From that time to this the controversy has continued as to which was the truth. One nation or the other must have falsified their Bible. In support of the Samaritan claim to have acted honestly, we may remark that when Sanballat and the high priest Manasseh began to build, they had no wish but to follow the Mosaic law. Moreover, it is the Samaritan reading which makes the Bible consistent with itself. Deut. xi. 29 and xxvii. 12, in the Hebrew copies, as in the Samaritan, both place the

blessings of the Law on Mount Gerizim and the curses on Mount Ebal, which passages seem to support the Samaritans, and to prove that the Jews had altered their Hebrew Bible, in the passage quoted above, on purpose to throw blame on the Samaritans. The same spirit of hostility to the Samaritans led the Jews to call the city not Shechem but Sychar, *falsehood*, which is the name used in John's gospel, iv. 5; and in the same manner they gave to Beth-el, *the house of God*, the reproachful name of Beth-aven, *the house of Idolatry*. Moreover, there are other passages which throw a light on the controversy. There had been a High Place or Altar in the neighbourhood of Shechem from the earliest times; and so important had this High Place been held by those who lived in the neighbourhood, that an Elohist writer of the life of Jacob says, in Genesis xxxiii. 17—20, that Jacob built an altar there to El, the God of Israel (see pages 11 and 68); and a Jehovistic writer has added a passage in the life of Abraham, in Genesis xii. 6—8, to say that Abram built an altar there to Jehovah (see page 140). Each writer claimed a High Place near Shechem for his own religion, but they do not say of which of the two hills they are speaking. There had, without doubt, been an altar on each of these hills, that on Ebal dedicated to Baal, at a very early time, and that on Gerizim dedicated to Jehovah, built when the other was allowed to go to ruin. And as Deuteronomy xi. and xxvii. place the curses on Mount Ebal and the blessings on Mount Gerizim, we may conclude that the altar to Jehovah stood on Mount Gerizim, and hence that it was by the side of that ancient altar that the Samaritans built their new temple to Jehovah, in the same way that Solomon built his House for Jehovah by the side of David's altar. Before this temple was built by Sanballat, Deut. xxvii. 4 would be written with impartiality as respects the two hills; and in all probability at first the Hebrew Bible placed the altar on Mount Gerizim, agreeably with the Samaritan copy. It was only after the Samaritan temple had been built, and had gained importance for the hill by its rivalry with Mount Moriah, that any controversy about it arose; and thus the Jews seem to be convicted out of their own Bible of having made the alteration in the disputed passage.

Joshua viii. 30—35, is a sentence clearly out of place. In

the foregoing verses Joshua was fighting at Ai, near Beth-el ; and in the verses which follow them he is again at Ai ; while in these verses he is described as at a distance, and building an altar to Jehovah on Mount Ebal. The writer quotes Deuteronomy xxvii., the passage with the doubtful reading Ebal or Gerizim, as a reason for Joshua's doing so. Now as that chapter of Deuteronomy was written after the return from captivity, this whole sentence must be new ; and it seems probable that it was at this time written to support the falsification in the name of the mountain on which the altar stood.

The Samaritans, however, seem not to have been wholly blameless in this literary quarrel ; for while the Jews altered a word in Deuteronomy, and added the above quoted sentence to the Book of Joshua, in order to rob Mount Gerizim of its honour, the Samaritans added two passages to their Bible in order to defend the situation of their altar and new temple. In the Samaritan Bible, immediately following the Ten Commandments, both in Exodus and Deuteronomy, is a command to build an altar of unhewn stones on Mount Gerizim, and to write upon it the words of that Law. In other respects the departure of the Samaritan text from the Hebrew original is not important, except that by its adding to the age of each patriarch at the birth of his son, in Genesis xi., it lengthens the early chronology.

The high-priest Eliashib was succeeded by his son Joiada or Judas, and he was succeeded by his son Jonathan or John,* the brother of Manasseh, the high-priest of Samaria. Jonathan had another brother, named Joshua or Jesus, whom he slew within the walls of the temple, because Bagoses, the Persian general and governor of the province, had promised to give him the office of chief-priest. Bagoses came up to Jerusalem to punish this crime and disobedience ; and he laid upon the Jews the heavy fine of fifty drachmæ for every lamb that they offered in the Temple in their daily sacrifices. This may not have amounted to a very large sum, as the sacrifices were very much lessened in frequency since the Captivity. Bagoses moreover went himself into the Temple, remarking that a foreigner entering the Holy Place could not pollute it so

* Nehem. xii. 10.

much as did the murder.* Bagoses was the governor under Artaxerxes Mnemon; and this murder may have taken place about the year B.C. 372.

In the year B.C. 332, Alexander the Great defeated the Persians under the last Darius; and after spending seven months on the siege of Tyre, and two months on the siege of Gaza, according to Josephus, he came up to Jerusalem. The Jews had lived quietly for two hundred and six years under the kings of Persia, from the time when the Babylonian monarchy was overthrown by Cyrus; and they now waited with anxiety to know what their fate would be under the Greek conqueror. Josephus says that he came to Jerusalem, and that as he approached the city the priests went out to meet him in their robes of office; the chief-priest in purple and scarlet with the mitre and golden plate on his head, the other priests in white linen dresses. Alexander received them favourably, and promised them kind treatment, and released them from tribute on the seventh year, the Sabbath year, claiming on the other years the same tribute that they had paid to the Persians. Jaddua was at that time high-priest; he is the last in the line of high-priests recorded in the Hebrew Books of the Bible. Alexander then, says Josephus, went to Shechem, where the Samaritan priests asked the same favour of him, as being under the same law, and equally bound, like the Jews, not to cultivate their fields on the seventh year; but Alexander did not grant their request. But these visits of Alexander to Jerusalem and Shechem are not mentioned by the Greek historians, and are probably an invention by Josephus. Alexander, when besieging Tyre, had had a body of seven thousand Samaritans in his army; these he took on with him into Egypt, whither he was then going, and he gave them lands in the upper part of that country, in order to help to keep the Egyptians in obedience.†

The genealogy of the high-priests in chap. xii. 1—26, of Nehemiah, was at this time added to that book. It is in continuation of the genealogy in 1 Chron. vi. 1—15, which ends with the Captivity. Like that, it is not a list of the chief priests; it contains those names only through which the male line was continued. Thus it does not mention Ezra, since on his death the priesthood returned to the

* Josephus Antiq. XI. vii. i.

† Josephus Antiq. XI. viii.

elder branch of the family. The latest name mentioned is that of Jaddua, the son of Jonathan, who was at Jerusalem when Alexander came to Palestine as a conqueror.

Alexander of Macedon, by his defeat of Darius, had brought the whole Persian monarchy under the Greek power. Egypt, Asia Minor, Assyria, including Syria and Babylonia, were henceforth to be governed by Greeks; and on his death these vast kingdoms were divided among his generals. Egypt fell to Ptolemy, who fixed his seat of government at Alexandria, the city lately founded by Alexander. Seleucus, after various struggles with his rivals, made himself master of the great country formerly held by Sennacherib and then by Nebuchadnezzar. He built Antioch, on the river Orontes, as his capital of the Greco-Syrian kingdom, still called Assyria by the Jews. Antioch on the Orontes soon became as celebrated for its luxury and licentiousness as Alexandria for its schools of learning. In these two wealthy capitals and mercantile ports, many Jews found a field for their industry, which the unsettled state of their own country denied them. Of these two kingdoms bordering on Palestine, Egypt was the first to be settled in quiet, and therefore Ptolemy was able to claim Palestine as belonging to Egypt. His mild government very much attached the Jews to him, and as long as he and his son were too strong to be attacked by the rival Greco-Syrian kings, the Jews were satisfied with their condition.

From the death of Alexander the Great, in the year B.C. 323, the Jews were governed for one hundred and fifty-five years by Greek kings, the successors of his generals, sometimes by a Ptolemy, king of Egypt, and sometimes by an Antigonos or a Seleucus, king of Syria. The second speech of Noah, in Genesis ix. 26, 27, relates to this time, when the Greeks, called the Sons of Japheth, though fighting among themselves, held safe possession of the land of Canaan. Noah there says :—

God will enlarge Japheth,
And he shall dwell in the tents of Shem,
And Canaan shall be his servant.

The Jews often suffered severely in the wars between the rival kings; but they were not usually treated with cruelty.

From the year B.C. 301, when these kings made peace, and shared the empire among them, the Jews lived quietly under the rule of the kings of Egypt until the year B.C. 222, when Ptolemy Euergetes died. During this time they had been usually governed by their own chief priest, who had almost the rank of viceroy. Jaddua, the chief priest in the time of Alexander, had been succeeded by his son Onias I.* Onias I. was followed by his son Simon the Just.

Under Simon the service of the temple was conducted with great attention to the old forms, so far as the poverty of the time allowed. Simon himself, clothed in the robes of chief priest, stood aloft at the hearth of the altar, and received the offering which was to be burnt from the hands of the priests, who now bore the former name of the Sons of Aaron. He then poured out at the foot of the altar wine, the blood of the grape, perhaps to supply the place of the blood of the animals, which in a time of greater wealth would have flowed into the trench around. The Sons of Aaron shouted and sounded the trumpets. The people bowed their faces towards the ground in worship. The singers sang the Psalms of praise; and when the solemnity was ended, Simon came down from the altar, and stretching his hands over the people around, gave them the blessing from Jehovah.

Simon repaired the House of God, and strengthened the walls of the temple area, and again coated with copper the great water cistern.† Simon had a son, Onias II.; but as he was too young for the office of chief priest, it was, on Simon's death B.C. 292, held by Simon's brother Eleazer. This was in the time of Ptolemy Philadelphus, king of Egypt.‡

At this time the Jews living in Alexandria, who had very much lost the use of the Hebrew language, made the well-known Greek translation of their sacred books. This was said to have been begun in the reign of Ptolemy Philadelphus, an enlightened patron of all learning, about the year B.C. 270; but it was not completed till one or two centuries later. It has received the name of the Septuagint, not perhaps because seventy translators were em-

* Josephus Antiq. XI. viii. 7.

† Ecclesiasticus I.

‡ Josephus Antiq. XII. ii. 4.

ployed upon it, as some have supposed, but more probably because it received the approval of a Sanhedrim or council of that number of elders. It is a very incorrect translation, but valuable when it agrees with the Hebrew, as it sometimes explains words that are not understood in the original ; and valuable when it differs from the Hebrew, as it then shows us some of the opinions which led the Greeks to make what they thought improvements in the Bible.

These translators did not venture to write the sacred name of Jehovah in Greek letters ; in place of it they always wrote Kurios, *Lord*, thus following a Jewish custom of not uttering the written name Jehovah. The Jews when speaking changed it into Adoni, *Lord*. This custom introduced into the Greek Bible the very ambiguity which their forefathers tried to avoid by forbidding the use of the ambiguous word Baal, *Lord*, as a name for God. It was followed, unfortunately, by the writers of the New Testament.

The Greek Jews, from their acquaintance with the very ancient monuments of Egypt, were of opinion that the world was far older than it is said to be in the Hebrew Bible. We learn from the Hebrew, by adding up the ages of the patriarchs at the birth of their sons, that man was thought to have lived upon earth 2023 years when Abraham left Chaldæa. But the Septuagint alters the age of each father at the time of the son's birth, and thus makes the world older by 1466 years. That this was done on purpose may be judged from the time added, as 1460 years is an Egyptian cycle of four times 365 years.

On the other hand, the Septuagint shortens the time of the Israelites' sojourn in Egypt. In the Hebrew, in Exodus xii. 40, there are said to have been 430 years between Jacob's entering Egypt and Moses's leaving it ; but the Septuagint says that this period of 430 years reaches from Abraham's leaving Chaldæa to Moses's leaving Egypt, thus making the residence in Egypt only 215 years.

The Hebrew, in Exodus xxx. 13, commands every male of twenty years of age to pay the sum of half a shekel yearly to the service of the temple ; Nehemiah had only called upon them for the third of a shekel, and the Septuagint again lessens the sum to half a didrachm, or a quarter of a shekel. The translators perhaps excused this altera-

tion to themselves by finding that the tax was seized upon by their foreign masters.

The Greek translation shows us some of the subtle and refined speculations which had lately arisen about the nature of spiritual and angelic beings. In Psalm civ. 4, we read in the Hebrew, as a figurative description of the power of God :—

He maketh the winds his messengers and the flames of fire his servants.

To these words the Septuagint gives a new meaning, and says :—

He maketh his angels into spirit, and his ministers into a flame of fire.

Again Isaiah, in chap. xi. 2, when saying that the spirit of the Lord will rest upon the expected son of Jesse, explains that spirit to be “the spirit of wisdom and of understanding, the spirit of counsel and of might, and the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of Jehovah.” But the Septuagint adds a seventh to these six spiritual gifts, namely, “the spirit of piety,” and thus completes the mystical number of seven Spirits, or spiritual beings. These are mentioned in the Book of Revelation, chap. iv. 5, as standing before the throne of God ; and in the second century of our era, some Alexandrian Christians worshipped these seven spirits, jointly with the Creator, under the name of the blessed Ogdoad, eight persons forming one God.

To the Cover of the Ark which stood within the Holy of Holies the Septuagint gives the name of the Propitiatory, or in the English translation, the Mercy Seat, above which the Almighty was supposed to be present when the priest inquired of him. It gained this name, not only from that cause, but also from the play upon the Hebrew word “the Cover,” which was used not only for covering the sacred Ark or any other box, but also for covering our sins when forgiveness is granted.

The several books in this version are translated with very unequal skill, and some of the writers show a sad want of knowledge of one or both the languages. Moreover it had additions made to it at various times by various Alex-

andrian editors. Whatever later additions were made in the Hebrew Books, were also made in the Greek Translation ; and hence we arrive at the important conclusion, that our finding any particular passage in the Septuagint, is no proof that the Hebrew original of it was written before this time. It is with the Septuagint that the quotations in the New Testament are chiefly found to agree ; but it is possible that this may have been brought about by the care of the later editors ; as certainly in one place, namely, in the Greek of Psalm xiv. 3, there are several lines borrowed from Paul's Epistle to the Romans iii. 13—18, which never formed part of that Psalm in the Hebrew. The Apostle had quoted them, not from one, but from several parts of the Old Testament.

During the reign of Ptolemy Euergetes, the chief priest Eleazer had been succeeded by Manasseh, one of his family, and then by Onias II., who had before been too young for the office. He, at least, and perhaps some of his predecessors, had been allowed to farm the taxes for the Egyptian King. This post, being added to that of his priesthood, gave him viceregal rank. As farmer of the taxes he was assisted, and afterwards succeeded by his nephew Joseph ; while the priesthood descended to his son, Simon II.*

During these years the Jews were becoming acquainted with Greek manners and customs, and with Greek literature. The time of their own Hebrew literature was going by. Indeed, their language was changing from what it had been when their sacred books had been collected together and had taken a fixed form. But it was chiefly in Jerusalem that Greek thoughts gained admission into the Jewish mind ; and when the two parties, the city party and the country party, which had been divided on political grounds, become religious sects, it is among the city party that we find traces of Greek scepticism. The Hebrew mind had been contented to obey the commands of conscience, as being the voice of God speaking from within ; but Greek philosophy taught its followers to ask for a reason why one line of conduct was wise and another foolish. Among the Hebrew books the earliest trace of this moral inquiry is in the Book of Ecclesiastes. The Book of Job had been an inquiry into the wisdom and justice of God in his dealings with man ;

* Josephus Antiq. XII. iv. 1, 2.

the Book of Ecclesiastes is an inquiry into the line of conduct which it is wise for a man to follow.

It was near the end of the reign of Ptolemy Euergetes in Egypt, and at the beginning of the reign of Antiochus the Great in Syria, about the year B.C. 220, when Epicurus, the founder of the Epicurean sect, had been dead about fifty years, that the Book of Ecclesiastes was written, at a time when, as the writer says, "Of the making many books there is no end, and in much study is a weariness of the flesh." In this philosophical treatise on the ends which are worth our pursuit in life, the writer sums up his experience with saying, "Vanity of vanities, all is vanity." He sees the sun arise only to go down, and the rivers run into the sea without filling it. He says, "I have gotten more wisdom than all they that have been before me in Jerusalem;" but this also is vexation of spirit; "for in much wisdom is much grief, and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow." He indulges in wines, builds houses, plants gardens, makes pools to water them, buys slaves, gathers gold and silver; but finds it all vanity. The Book of Job, and the Isaiah of the Return Home, had both made our ignorance of God's dealings with man a reason for humble trust; but this writer views the matter less religiously. He observes that the fool and the wise man both die together, and concludes with the Epicureans that there is nothing better for a man than to eat and drink and enjoy himself. Nevertheless actions are followed by their natural consequences, and "Whoso breaketh a hedge a serpent will bite him."—"Whoso removeth a boundary-stone will be hurt therewith." He sees no deviations from the usual course of nature, "The thing that hath been is what will be, and there is nothing new under the sun." He knows of nothing beyond the grave, and a living dog is better than a dead lion. But he wavers backward and forward, mingling with these sad thoughts many wise proverbs and much good advice, for which, however, he can give little reason, since "the race is not to the swift nor the battle to the strong; but time and chance happeneth to them all." Upon such a painful view of life does our author build his philosophical system. Yet true to the religion of his nation he advises trust in God, "Cast thy bread-seed on the waters, and thou shall find it after many days;" "Remember thy Creator in the days of

thy youth ;" and lastly, " Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter ; fear God and keep his commandments, for this is the whole duty of man."

The book begins, " The words of Koheleth, the son of David, king of Jerusalem." Koheleth is a feminine noun meaning an *Assembly*, perhaps a *School*. In the Greek version it is translated *The Preacher*. We may perhaps understand it as philosophy, and say in verse 12, " I Philosophy was king over Israel in Jerusalem." Thus, the unknown writer puts his remarks on the vanity of riches, of pleasure, and of wisdom, into the mouth of Solomon ; since no one could be more fitted to pronounce such an opinion than that most prosperous of monarchs. This is the only work that we possess which teaches the opinions of the Sadducees ; the only Hebrew writing in which God's watchful care is so far forgotten as that chance should be allowed to have any power over our lives. The belief in a future state is here denied in a manner which shows that disputes about that opinion had already begun.

Antioch on the Orontes was at that time the wealthy and dissolute capital of the Greek kingdom of Syria, Assyria, and Babylonia ; and there the writer may have lived, and gained his knowledge of Greek philosophy. There in the court of Seleucus Callinicus he may have witnessed the costly luxuries which he describes as tasted but not enjoyed by Solomon. He shows some knowledge of the Greco-Syrian monarchy ; and from his not using the name of Jehovah, we judge that he belonged to northern Israel. In the following passage he dates the book very exactly to the beginning of the reign of Antiochus the Great ; thus :—

Better is one born poor and wise, than a king old and foolish, who can no more be warned. For from a prison he may come to reign, even though in the other's kingdom he was born poor. I considered all the living who walk about under the sun, with the second son that shall rise up in his stead (iv. 13—15).

The foolish king is Seleucus Callinicus, who after being defeated in all his battles, at last died a prisoner. The wise man may be his minister Achæus, to whom, after the elder son's death, the crown was offered ; but he wisely refused it. The elder son Seleucus Ceraunus reigned for three years ; and Antiochus his younger brother, who then came to the throne, is the second son here mentioned. Our writer

remarks upon his youth, as he was then under fifteen years of age, saying, "Alas for thee, O land, when thy king is a child, and thy princes eat in the morning." (x. 16).

When the writer of Ecclesiastes advises the sinner to confess his sins frankly, "say not to the preacher that it was a sin of ignorance," we have to notice that the priest acted, not only as a sacrificer, but as a spiritual adviser. So in the penitential Psalm xxxii., we have first the sinner acknowledging the comfort of confessing his sin, saying:—

When I kept silence my bones wasted away ;

and then the priest answering:—

I will instruct thee, and teach thee
In the way that thou shalt go.

Jeremiah x. 1—16 was written when Greek influence was beginning to be felt in Jerusalem, and was alarming those who feared that the heathen religion might follow upon the heathen civilization. They had lived for more than two hundred years under the Persians, who were as much opposed as the Jews were to idol-worship ; but their new masters, the Greeks, whether Greeks of Egypt, or Greeks of Syria, brought their own idols with them into Judea. The writer of this chapter says, "Learn not the way of the Nations—the customs of the people are vain, they cut a tree out of the forest and make a god of it ;" and then follow some noble words, declaring that Jehovah alone is the true God, the maker of all things. This passage has several very modern peculiarities. Such is the calling God, "King of the nations ;" such is the spelling Ophir, as in Daniel x. 5, "Ophiaz ;" and such is the comparing an idol to a scarecrow, called "a pillar in a cucumber garden ;" as does the Apocryphal Epistle of Jeremiah. Some of these words are repeated in chapter li. 15—19. Yet more modern is verse 11, which is not Hebrew but Chaldee.

Psalm cxliv. may now be mentioned. It is by an unhappy musician, whose hands itched for war, and his fingers for fighting. He prays God for the relief from the oppression ; and he would have put aside his psaltery of ten strings, and rebelled against the foreigners, if there had been any chance of success. His psalm is made up of borrowed thoughts, taken chiefly from Psalms viii. and xviii. He plays upon words with two meanings, saying:—

O Jehovah, what is man [or Adam] that thou knowest him !
 The son of man [or of Enosh] that thou thinkest of him !
 Man [or Adam] is like to vanity [or Abel] ;
 His days are as a shadow that passeth away.

He had perhaps travelled in Greece ; he shows an acquaintance with the Greek style of architecture, when he compares the young women to the marble statues used in Athens, as columns to support a roof, praying :—

That our sons may be as plants grown up in their youth,
 Our daughters as columns cut on the model of a palace.

On the death of Ptolemy Euergetes and the accession of Ptolemy Philopator, the gentle treatment of the Jews by their Greek rulers ceased. They were frequently roused into rebellion ; and the willingness to learn from the higher civilization of the Greeks then ceased also. They soon fell under the more powerful empire of Syria, of which Antiochus the Great was then king. During the wars which led to this change of rulers, Judea suffered severely. But that upon the whole, Antiochus the Great treated the Jews well may be known from the trust which he placed in them. When the provinces of Phrygia and Lydia, in Asia Minor, showed signs of rebellion, he moved two thousand Jewish families from Mesopotamia and Babylon, and placed them in the discontented provinces. He gave to these Jews lands to cultivate, and food until their own labour could feed them, and ordered that they should be released from all taxes for the next ten years.*

About this time the chief priest Onias II. died. He was succeeded by his son Simon II., who however had far less power than his father, because the office of farmer of the taxes went to Onias's nephew, Joseph. Joseph, rather than the chief priest, was viceroy of Judea under the kings, Antiochus the Great of Syria, Ptolemy Epiphanes of Egypt, and Seleucus Soter, called also Philopator, of Syria. He held this office for twenty-two years.†

On the death of Joseph about the year B.C. 176, began a series of troubles, arising from struggles for power among the Jews themselves, which yet further ruined this unhappy country. The elder sons of Joseph, the farmer of the taxes, were afraid of being deprived of the office by their

* Josephus Antiq. XII. iii. 4. † Josephus Antiq. XII. iv. 2.

younger brother Hyrcanus, and they raised a body of troops to defend themselves. Hyrcanus did the same ; but he was defeated, and he left Judea to them, while he retreated to the east of the Jordan. There, in the land of Heshbon, he built for himself a strong castle with stone walls, ornamented with sculptures. He called it Tyre, after the Phenician city of that name. He ornamented it with pools of water, the great luxury of that climate, and surrounded it with a canal for strength. There he reigned for seven years, collecting the taxes of that part of the country in the name of Seleucus Philopator, but keeping them for his own use.*

The Song of Solomon may perhaps be of this time ; but its date can be judged of only from its style, as it contains no history by which we can fix it with exactness. It is a nuptial poem, a drama in dialogue ; the speakers are necessarily six in number, and they need not be more. These are Solomon, with a company of attendant youths, and the bride, with her attendant damsels, and two brothers. The bride is called a Shulamite, which may mean a female Solomon. Throughout much of the poem she is speaking in her sleep, and the bridegroom charges her maidens not to awaken her. The dialogue is occasionally broken off in a manner that makes it necessary to divide the drama into about ten acts. The writer was acquainted with the language of polished society. Thus he uses the complimentary style of Alexandria when he makes Solomon call his bride his sister, though as the poem shows she was a young woman of humble rank ; and he calls his chariot a Pharaoh-chariot, because those brought from Egypt were better than those of the Jewish chariot-makers. The king's litter-bed was a luxury perhaps first known through the Persians. As the writer, for a poetic simile, points to David's Tower in Jerusalem, "built for a fortress, on which hang a thousand bucklers," Jerusalem was at least allowed to wear the appearance of being an independent city. The language of Solomon's Song has many peculiarities in common with that of Ecclesiastes. If the pools in the land of Heshbon, by the gate of Beth-rabbim, to which the bride's eyes are compared, are those made by Hyrcanus the son of Joseph, who ruled over that district for seven years in the reign of Seleucus Philopator, the date of the poem is in some degree fixed.

* Josephus Antiq. XII. iv. 11.

The versification of this poem is more artificial than that of the earlier poetry. The lines answering one another are not simple couplets, but often like the chorus in a Greek play, in Strophe and Antistrophe, of several lines each, and then, perhaps, followed by an Epode of two or three lines. As a short specimen see chapter v. 5—8 :—

STROPHE.

I rose up to open to my Beloved,
And my hands dropped myrrh,
And my fingers liquid myrrh on the handles of the lock.
I opened to my Beloved, but my Beloved was gone ;
He had passed by ; my soul failed when he had spoken.

ANTISTROPHE.

I sought him, but I could not find him ;
I called him, but he gave me no answer.
The guards that went about the city found me ;
They smote me ; they wounded me ;
The keepers of the wall took my veil from me.

EPODE.

I charge you, O daughters of Jerusalem, if ye find my Beloved,
That ye tell him that I am sick for love.

From the unwillingness of commentators to grant a place in the canon of Scripture to a marriage poem, they have usually endeavoured to find in it some mystical allegory or religious argument hidden under the surface ; but with very little success.

The Wisdom of Jesus the son of Sirach, was written after the death of the chief-priest Simon the Just, the son of Onias I. The author had lived in Jerusalem, where he gave instruction to all who would pay him for his lessons. His book was perhaps never published in its Hebrew original. It was carried to Alexandria by the author's grandson, and there, about B.C. 180, translated into Greek, and added to the Greek Bible. A second preface by an unknown writer tells us that the grandson also wrote part of it ; and this is borne out by the Alexandrian opinions which we trace in the book. It begins like the Proverbs of Solomon with the praise of wisdom. Then follow a number of wise proverbs and moral rules. The most famous of the holy men in the Bible are mentioned with due praise, together

with Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and the twelve minor prophets. The omission of the Book of Daniel from this list tells us that as yet that book formed no part of the Bible. The writer lived in Jerusalem, and has a strong dislike to the Samaritans of Shechem, and to the Jews who dwell among the Philistines, meaning the men of Beersheba, and the other Idumeans (l. 26.) He looks forward to the second coming of Elijah, who is to appease God's anger, and to turn the heart of the Father to the child, and to restore the tribes of Jacob (xlvi. 10). He thus misquotes the last verse of Malachi, and takes a stern view of God's character, and joins to the Jewish religion the Pagan opinion that God would not look favourably on his children unless persuaded by a mediator. This book is an important link in the chain which joins the Hebrew writers to the Alexandrian Platonists.

Among the thoughts which are not Jewish, and which had been brought from the East, and thence carried to Egypt, is the attempt to explain the origin of evil by the Gnostic doctrine of Antitheses, or Oppositions ; thus :—

Good is the opposite to evil, and life is the opposite of death, so is the sinner the opposite of the godly man. And in the same way look upon all the works of the Most High ; they are two and two, one the opposite of the other. (xxxiii. 14, 15.)

ANTIOCHUS EPIPHANES KING OF SYRIA ; B.C. 175.

During the hundred and forty-eight years since Alexander's death, our history has been very nearly a blank ; but with the accession of Antiochus Epiphanes to the throne of Syria, in the year B.C. 175, new troubles came upon the Jews, and new struggles were called for ; and fortunately historians at the same time arose to tell of them. The chief priest Simon II. was dead, and had been succeeded by his son Onias III., but his brother, who took the Greek name of Jason, bought the favour of Antiochus with a large sum of money, and procured that place for himself, with the avowed aim of converting his nation to the Greek fashions and religion. He established a gymnasium for Greek sports in the outer court of the temple, at the foot of the Castle, and he very much neglected the sacrifices in the temple. When King Antiochus visited Jerusalem, Jason

received him in great state by torchlight. Jason was, however, three years afterwards supplanted in his office by another; for Menelaus, whom he had sent to Antioch to carry his money to the king, treacherously offered a yet larger bribe on his own account, and obtained an order from Antiochus that he should have the office of chief priest. But the pillage of the temple, that was committed by Menelaus and by his order, raised the inhabitants of the city in rebellion; and Lysimachus, the brother of Menelaus, who brought three thousand armed men against the rioters, was slain in the court of the temple called the treasury.*

About this time Antiochus twice invaded Egypt, on the first occasion defeating the army of Ptolemy Philometor, and remaining master of the country for nearly three years. By this the Jews lost all hope of succour from the Egyptians, and they also lost their place of refuge. But while he was absent on his second invasion of that country, a report reached Judea that he was dead. Whereupon Jason, the deposed high priest, raised a body of a thousand armed men and made an assault upon Jerusalem, and gained possession of the city, while Menelaus, his rival, fled to the Castle. Jason slew, without mercy, the citizens who opposed him, and gained full possession of the government, but he was not able to dislodge Menelaus from the Castle. Upon this King Antiochus hastened back from Egypt to quell what had become an insurrection of the Jews, having its beginning in this quarrel of two wicked men for the priesthood. He took Jerusalem by storm, and gave orders that nobody should be spared. For three whole days the slaughter continued; and the number slain was said to be eighty thousand persons, while an equal number were carried away to be sold as slaves. This was in the year B.C. 169.

Antiochus then, to the great dismay of the Jews, went into the Holy of Holies, or inner room of the temple, under the guidance of Menelaus the apostate, whom he again established in the priesthood. He took up the Holy vessels in his own polluted hands, and had the treasures which were there deposited removed to his own capital, Antioch on the Orontes. The golden altar of incense, the lampstand, the table for the ceremonial bread, the censers, the sprinkling vessels—indeed, all the gold and silver dedicated

to the service of the temple, were carried away by profane hands, to the grief and dismay of the whole land.* Greek arts and civilization would have been welcomed on their own merits, had they entered the country peaceably; but they were now hated by every good Jew. Henceforward, more than ever, patriotism takes the form of bigotry, while more enlightened views are spoiled by scepticism.

Isaiah xx. is on the conquest of Egypt by Antiochus Epiphanes, in the year B.C. 170, and the writer says that as Judah in the time of Isaiah walked barefoot and naked for three years, when their country was occupied by the Assyrians, so long shall the king of Assyria, meaning Antiochus Epiphanes, crush the Egyptians. The writer gives to this short chapter the appearance of being the words of Isaiah, by telling us the very year in which this fore-knowledge came to him from Jehovah. Chapter xix. is on the same subject, but written a little later.

The wars of Antiochus were carried on for the sake of plunder; and this may have been the reason why Edom, Moab, and Rabbah of Ammon, were spared by his wasting armies.† Their poverty may have saved them from the misfortune which fell so heavily upon Egypt and Judea.

In the year B.C. 167, Antiochus sent Apollonius, his chief collector of tribute, with a force of twenty-two thousand men, to further punish the inhabitants of Jerusalem. Apollonius plundered the city and massacred the people, and set fire to the houses. But he strengthened the walls of the castle which the historian calls the City of David; and from that stronghold, which overhung the courts of the temple, he was able to forbid the Jews to enter the holy place. From this time the daily sacrifices in the temple ceased.

Antiochus then issued a decree from Antioch, that the Jews throughout the country should discontinue all their religious practices, their circumcision, their sacrifices, and their keeping the Sabbath. He set up Pagan idols for them to worship, and made them eat swine's flesh, and punished those who disobeyed this order with death. Lastly, on the fifteenth day of the month Casleu, a day ever to be remembered, he set up an idol, called the Abomination of Desolation, probably his military standards, on the altar in front

* 1 Maccab. i. 18—28; 2 Maccab. v. 5—21. † Daniel xi. 41.

of the temple. All the Books of the Law that could be found were burnt in the fire ; his purpose was that the Jewish religion should be wholly forgotten.*

Antiochus at this time was not master of Egypt, and there was a fresh flight of Jews into that country, where they hoped to find safety. Among these was Dositheus to whom we must give the blame of adding some worthless chapters to the Book of Esther. They were in Greek, and as he said translated from the Hebrew in Jerusalem. But since the Hebrew has not been found they remain as part of the Apocrypha.†

It is to the reign of this mad and cruel king, or of his successors, that we must give the authorship of the greater part of the Book of Daniel ; Chapter i. we have supposed written three centuries earlier. Chapters ii.—vi. are a narrative of Daniel's life in Babylon, first under Nebuchadnezzar, then under his son Belshazzar, then under Darius the Mede who overthrew the Babylonian power, and lastly under Cyrus the Persian. In chapter ii. Daniel explains to Nebuchadnezzar his dream about a statue made of gold, and silver, and copper, and iron mixed with pottery, as meaning his own kingdom and three kingdoms that were to follow—namely, the Median, the Persian, and the Greek. This last is to be divided into many parts, some of which are to be united by marriages. In chapter iii. Daniel's three friends are thrown into a fiery furnace, because they will not worship the king's statue ; but they are unhurt by the flames. In chapter iv. Daniel explains another of the king's dreams as meaning that Nebuchadnezzar will be changed into a winged ox for seven years ; and this came to pass accordingly. This chapter is in the form of a proclamation by Nebuchadnezzar in the king's own words. Here we meet with a class of angels, called Watchers, or Guardians, who are often spoken of in the Book of Enoch, a mystical book of the next century. Chapter v. relates to a time twenty-five years after the death of Nebuchadnezzar. At the desire of king Belshazzar, Daniel reads certain mysterious words written by part of a hand upon the wall, which declare that the kingdom of Babylon is to be taken from him, and given to the Medes and Persians. And this also comes to pass. In chapter vi. Darius the Mede, who con-

* 1 Maccab. i. 29—57.

† Esther xi. 1.

quers Babylon, throws Daniel into the lion's den because he disobeys the king's command and continues to worship God. But the lions do not hurt him ; and the king orders everybody to worship Daniel's God. Daniel lives to see Cyrus on the throne of Babylon. The writer of these five chapters uses Greek words for a "herald" and for the musical instruments. He follows the Greek custom of calling the fortune-tellers Chaldeans, which no one living in Babylon under Nebuchadnezzar the Chaldee could possibly have done. He follows Xenophon's *Cyropædia* in saying that the king of Babylon was living in his capital at the time of the siege, and perished when it was taken. This is in contradiction to the contemporary accounts in Isaiah xxi. and Jeremiah li., which describe the messengers as carrying the news of the fall of Babylon to the king, who was at a distance ; and in contradiction to Berosus, who says that Nabonned, King of Babylon, fled in safety before Babylon was shut up. The two accounts, however, may be reconciled by supposing that Belshazzar had been reigning jointly with his father.* This writer also follows the *Cyropædia* in making the king of the Medes ruler of the conquered Babylon for a short time, before he was succeeded by Cyrus ; and this is contradicted by Claudius Ptolemy, who makes Cyrus the successor of the Babylonian king. Of these chapters three verses at the beginning are written in Hebrew ; but as soon as the Chaldeans begin to speak, the writer uses their language, and then continues to use it for his own narrative to the end.

Secondly, chapter vii. is also written in Chaldee. This returns to an earlier time in Daniel's life, and describes a vision, which Daniel saw in the reign of Belshazzar, of four beasts, meaning four kingdoms, probably the same four as in the former vision. The first beast, a lion with eagle's wings walking on its hind legs, is Babylon ; the second, a bear, is Media ; the third, like a leopard, is Persia, with four heads, namely Assyria, Babylonia, Media, and Persia ; the fourth, the Greeks, has ten horns, or successive kings, and then one a mean horn, which we may recognize as Antiochus Epiphanes. His kingdom is to be destroyed and is to be given to the holy people of the Most High, who are to have everlasting dominion.

* Josephus, *Apion* i. 20.

Verses 9—14 of this chapter break the narrative and are a late addition, probably after the Christian Era. Here the writer sees one like a Son of Man coming on the clouds of Heaven ; and to him God gives an everlasting kingdom, not of the Jews only but of all the nations of the earth. This closely resembles the second vision in the Book of Enoch, which was also written after the Christian Era.

Thirdly, chapter viii. is written in Hebrew, as is also the remainder of the Book of Daniel. It describes another vision which Daniel saw in the reign of Belshazzar, not as before in Babylon, but in Susa, the capital of Persia. He saw a ram with two horns, namely, Media and Persia, and a he-goat, Greece, with a great horn between his eyes, namely, Alexander the Great, who smites the ram. When this great horn is broken four others rise in its place, the kings of Macedonia, Asia Minor, Syria, and Egypt. Out of one of these comes a mean horn, Antiochus Epiphanes, who stops the daily sacrifice in the temple for two thousand three hundred days. He is to be broken, but not by any hand. That is to say, he is to die a natural death. The vision is explained to Daniel by the angel Gabriel. This is the first time that we have had any heavenly messenger, other than Satan, mentioned by name.

Fourthly, chapters x., xi., and xii. contain a yet more descriptive vision, which Daniel saw in the third year of Cyrus's reign, when living on the banks of the Tigris. We here have the history of Alexander the Great and the wars and marriages between the kings of Egypt and the kings of Syria, till the time of a vile person, Antiochus Epiphanes. His three years of war against Egypt are mentioned in chap. xi. 25, 29, and 40, thus agreeing with Isaiah xx ; and then his being called away by tidings out of the east and the north, where he dies. We now meet with a second angel with a name, Michael, who is described as a great prince which standeth up for the children of Israel ; and also with similar angels, or princes, for the kingdoms of Persia and Greece, as each nation was thought to have its own guardian-angel. In the Book of Tobit there are said to be seven angels who carry up the prayers of the saints to God. In chapter xii. 2, we meet for the first time in the Bible with the belief clearly expressed that the dead will hereafter rise to judgment :—

Many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt.

The four portions of the book above described seem to be by three, or perhaps four authors, but all of one date. In these chapters the name of Jehovah is never used. Daniel's God is called the Most High, the God of Heaven, God of gods, and Lord of kings, the Ancient of days, but never Jehovah. In chapter ix., which is of yet later date and to be spoken of hereafter, the name of Jehovah is used.

If we compare the Book of Daniel with the two Greek translations, the older one, which originally formed part of the Septuagint, and the newer made by Theodotion in the second century, which is now always printed as part of the Septuagint, we shall see reasons for thinking that, for chapters ii.—vi., the Greek is the original. These were written by an Alexandrian Jew, at this time, as an addition to the Greek Bible. The Jew of Palestine who added them to the Hebrew Bible began his translation in Hebrew, but, being more familiar with Chaldee, soon turned to that language. He did not aim at being quite literal. He rejected some sentences, such as that Nebuchadnezzar ruled over one hundred and twenty provinces from India to Ethiopia—words borrowed from Esther i. 1—and the hymn of the three men in the fiery furnace. He added others, such as the complimentary words, "O king! live for ever," and that Belshazzar, after reading the fatal words on the wall, was slain "that very night." For the seventh chapter, the Chaldee is probably the original, written, perhaps, by the translator of the former six chapters. For all chapters after the seventh, the Hebrew is, no doubt, the original.

Psalm lxxiv. is of this time, and describes the destruction of the temple by order of Antiochus Epiphanes, in terms which will not suit the former destruction by Nebuchadnezzar, when the people were carried into captivity :—

O God, why hast thou wholly cast us off?

Thine anger smoketh against the sheep of thy pasture.

Remember thy congregation, thou purchasedst it of old,

The staff of thine inheritance, which thou didst redeem,

This mount Zion, wherein thou didst dwell.

Lift up thy steps toward the thorough desolations,

All the wickedness of the enemy in the Holy Place.

Thine enemies roar within thy Place of meeting [or temple] ;
They set up their ensigns for signs.

A man [of Tyre] was famous for bringing to the hill-side
Axes against the thick branches of the trees ;

But now the whole carved work thereof at once

They break down with axes and hammers.

They have cast fire into thy Sanctuary,

They have crushed the Tabernacle of thy name to the ground.

They said in their hearts, "Let us destroy them at once."

They have burnt every synagogue of God in the land.

In this Psalm, in the last of the lines here quoted, we remark that there are now throughout the land other places of worship than those before mentioned. We thus note the change in religious customs which has come over the people. In the earlier parts of this history the only public worship was the sacrifice on the Altar, or High place, accompanied with a Psalm sung, and sometimes with a feast made off part of the animal slain. After the return from captivity, we meet with a new religious act, the listening to the public reading and explanation of the Law, which was added to the confession of sins, as part of the worship of Jehovah. But now we find that there were buildings, or places of meeting, in every part of the land set apart for these religious acts ; and the gradual way in which these came into use is shown by our finding the word "meeting or congregation" used for the building or place in which the congregation met ; this we must, in translating, call a Synagogue. In Lamentations ii. 6, as in verse 4 of this Psalm, the temple had received the same name, place of meeting.

Psalm lxxix. also mourns over the ruin brought upon the city by Antiochus in terms which do not suit with its former overthrow by Nebuchadnezzar, when the people were carried into captivity :—

O God, the nations are come into thine inheritance ;

Thy holy temple have they defiled ;

They have laid Jerusalem in ruins ;

The dead bodies of thy servants have they given

To be food to the fowls of the heavens,

The flesh of thy saints to the wild beasts of the earth.

Psalm lxxxv. speaks of the Return from Captivity as a forgiveness of sins, and as an event long since past ; and it mourns over the renewed anger of Jehovah, as shown in the renewed misery of the country, and prays for a similar relief

from the enemy. It seems to belong to this time of Syrian oppression.

The last part of the Book of Isaiah, chapters lxiii. 7—lxvi., also belongs to this sad time. It begins with a prayer to Jehovah that he would remember the days of old, when he sent a Moses to raise up his people. The oppressors have trodden down the sanctuary, Zion is a desert, Jerusalem is a desolation; the Holy House is burnt with fire. The writer encourages the people with the hope of again being masters of their own country, and threatens punishment on the apostates who had worshipped in groves and eaten the swine's flesh. The Book of Maccabees, in relating the discreditable struggles between rival priests, and how Antiochus endeavoured to force Greek manners on the people, does not tell us how far the opposing parties were the old parties whom we have seen dividing the State. This is in some degree explained by these chapters of Isaiah. The writer is evidently one of the lower class, to whom the upper class denied the name of Jew. He says to Jehovah, "Doubtless Thou art our Father, though Abraham should be ignorant of us, and Israel should not acknowledge us." At the same time, he strongly blames those who desert the Law, and sacrifice in gardens, burn incense on altars of brick, eat swine's flesh, and commit unnatural crimes. From this we learn that it was the ruling party, perhaps we may say the Sadducees, who were most willing to surrender their Law to the will of Antiochus; and who, while eating swine's flesh, would say to a more scrupulous brother, "Come not near to me; for I am holier than thou;" and that it was the humbler class—those who were told that they were not real Jews—that struggled manfully for their religion.

When the writer accuses these apostate Jews of preparing a table unto Good Fortune, and filling up drink offerings unto Fate, he may be blaming the Sadducees, or at least the writer of Ecclesiastes, who taught that we were in some degree governed by chance or Good Fortune. The writer styles God the nation's Father, a title not used in the earlier writings bearing the name of Isaiah; and he promises that the Seed of Judah shall again possess the holy mountain. In chapter lxv. he quotes the words "Behold it is I," from chapter lii. 6, and then the words "I will

not keep silence," from chapter lxii. 1. He also, when promising the coming prosperity, uses the words of Amos ix. 14:—"They shall build houses, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit thereof;" and the words of Isaiah xi. 6, 7:—"The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the ox." With this bold figure of speech had Isaiah promised the return of peace upon earth. At such a time of distress, when every man had to work with his own hands, there could have been but few ministers of religion, even if the national worship had been allowed. Our writer remarks their absence, and sets it down to the scantiness of the population, saying that, when the scattered children of Israel are recalled home, some will be taken for priests and Levites (lxvi. 21).

The fifth chapter of Lamentations seems to belong to this later time of the city lying in ruins rather than to the time of Nebuchadnezzar's conquest of the country, to which the other Lamentations belong. In this chapter, though the sufferings of the people are described at length, we have no mention of any captivity. Nor is this an alphabetic poem like the other Lamentations, and yet its couplets are twenty-two in number, as if one for each letter of the alphabet. The writer is troubled with the old national opinion that misfortunes are always a punishment for sins; and he complains,—

Our fathers sinned, and they are not ;
And we have borne their iniquities. (v. 7.)

THE REVOLT ; JUDAS THE MACCABEE ; B.C. 166.

The cruelty with which the orders of Antiochus against the Jewish religion were executed at last roused the people into rebellion. The revolt is called a rising of the Jews, but was not limited to Judea; nor did it begin in Judea. Israel and Judah were for a time united by their common sufferings. It was only when the revolt became successful that it naturally took the form of a Jewish revolt; because it was only in Judea that there remained any feelings of union upon which it was possible to build up a nation. It began in the city of Modin, a town near Lydda, perhaps ten miles from Joppa, on the road to Jerusalem. At Modin,

Mattathias, an old priest with five sons, refused to break the laws of their religion, and they fled to the mountains to escape from the king's officers. There they were joined by many others, and they were able to resist the troops sent against them. Judas, one of the five sons, became general of this little band of patriots. He defeated in battle, first Apollonius, and afterwards Seron, who came against him with a second army.*

Antiochus, if he had been at leisure, would have led his army in person against the rebels, but he was called away by news from Persia. So he led his principal army into that country to enforce the collection of the Persian tribute, leaving Lysias in command on the west of the Euphrates, with orders to reduce the Jews to obedience.† Though the force of Syria was thus weakened by the two rebellions which at the same time called for the attention of Antiochus, yet the troops which were sent against the Jews were far more numerous than any that Judas could bring against them. But the Jews fought in despair, led on by religious patriotism. At Emmaus, near Jerusalem, they defeated a Syrian army commanded by Gorgias; and the next year they routed a second army under the command of Lysias, who then thought it wise to withdraw to Antioch.

The neighbourhood of Jerusalem was now free from the Syrians; and Judas proposed to attack Jerusalem itself, and to gain possession of the capital of the country for his seat of government. The Syrian garrison withdrew into the castle. His troops entered the ruined city without difficulty, and mourned over the desolation in the courts of the Temple. He was now in some degree at leisure; and, as a first step towards re-establishing the nation, he began to restore the service of the Temple.

The Syrian garrison, joined by such of the Jews as were on the side of the Syrians, kept themselves within the castle, while Judas repaired the altar and the Holy of Holies, and celebrated afresh the ceremony of dedication for eight days upon cleansing the Temple from the Gentiles. But as he was by no means strong enough to assault the castle, he contented himself with building strong walls against it, to protect the city and the temple-yard from any attacks from the garrison of the castle. One of these walls

* 1 Maccab. ii.—iii. 24.

† 1 Maccab. iii. 27—37.

divided the Great Court from the Court of the Gentiles. For the ceremony of dedication Judas chose the twenty-fifth day of Chisleu, the day on which Zerubbabel had laid the foundation of the second temple, three hundred and fifty-six years before. On that day the priests, whom he had appointed, while he himself acted as high priest, offered their first sacrifice on the altar, and did the same on each of the following seven days.* From that time forward the Jews have kept that week, in mid-winter, holy, under the name of the Feast of Dedication.

A yet more important work which Judas then began was to bring together copies of the Hebrew religious books. The library in the Chambers of the Temple had been destroyed by order of Antiochus; and Judas now restored it so far as he was able.† He probably recovered copies of all the more important books—of all those, indeed, which had been sent, a century before, to Alexandria, to be translated into Greek; and the later writings which he was now able to add to the Hebrew volumes, were in due time added to the Greek copies by the Jews in Alexandria. The Greek Jews, while adding to their Bible several books which the Hebrews did not accept, omitted none to which the Hebrews from time to time had given authority. But there must have been many other valuable works which we have lost through the violence of Antiochus Epiphanes—in particular, we may suppose, the original authors from which the Books of Chronicles were compiled in the time of Nehemiah. The scribes to whom was intrusted the task of editing the sacred books, no doubt had before them copies from various cities, some written by northern scribes and some by southern, each with passages more or less favourable to its own part of the country. Many of these contradictory passages we now find embodied in the Bible, with a praiseworthy impartiality; the Books of Kings and Chronicles are allowed to contradict one another with David's crimes and David's piety, with Solomon's idolatry and Solomon's devotion to the priests; and while a large part of the Bible condemns as blamable all altars but that at Jerusalem, we yet find the passages not excluded which give the authority of Abraham, Jacob, and Moses to the altar near Shechem, and the authority of Abraham and Jacob to that at Beth-el.

*1 Maccab. i v.

† 2 Maccab. ii. 14.

Judas then carried the war against the Edomites, who held Hebron, and into the country of the Ammonites on the west of the Jordan. The Edomites had latterly spread themselves over the South Country, the district between Hebron and the desert, and had carried the name of Edom, or Idumea as it is now written, as far northward as Mare-shah in the Low Country.* The Calebites, the Beasts of the South Country as they are called in Isaiah xxx., had never been wholly Jews, and had readily joined the Edomites. The sway of Judas over Judea did not reach beyond twenty miles to the south of Jerusalem; and there he fortified Beth-zur, as a protection against the encroaching Edomites.† He was nearly in the position of Saul with David's country in arms against him. Now that the name of Edom had travelled northward, the Arabs, or Ishmaelites, who held the rocky fastness of Petra, are called Kenites.‡

While this war against the Edomites was going on, Judas received a considerable increase of strength from the people of Galilee, where the tyranny of their Syrian neighbours made them look to him as their deliverer. He accordingly sent his brother Simon with a body of troops into Galilee, where Simon defeated the enemy, and brought back with him into Judea many families who were friendly to their cause. In Gilead, also, Judas was equally successful; and as he was not strong enough to hold any part of that country on the east of the Jordan, he brought back with him from thence a large number of Israelite families who were glad to seek a refuge with him in Judea. In this way, the struggle carried on by Judas was an Israelite as much as a Jewish struggle. Though his sway did not reach far, his army was composed of men of all the tribes; and very possibly the men who held the castle of Jerusalem against him, the party who counselled submission to the Syrians, may have called themselves the Jewish party. In the days of Jeremiah the party for resistance to the invader was defeated, and we accordingly heard very little about them; now the resisting party is successful, and those who, like Jeremiah, advised submission, are called apostates and deserters, as he was. In this miserable and distracted condition did Judea and Jerusalem remain during the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes.§

* Joseph. Antiq. XIII. ix. 1.

† 1 Maccab. iv. 61.

‡ Numbers xxiv. 21.

§ 1 Maccab. v.

After the death of Antiochus Epiphanes, the party of Judas for a moment gained a truce from their enemies.* Encouraged by this success, Judas laid siege to the castle of Jerusalem, which was held not by the Syrian troops, but by the party opposed to him, the party who advised submission to Syria, as the only way to obtain peace for their distracted country. These were called the apostate Jews, who preferred the Greco-Syrian government to the independence of their country. The historian, who is friendly to Judas, says nothing about any large party in the country being on the side of those who held the castle; but we may be sure that without such a party they could not have held that fortress for years against those who held the ruined city and temple.

Several centuries earlier, during the Assyrian and Babylonian invasions of Judea, the people had been divided, as now, into two parties. The country party, called the Men of the Land and Men of Judah, wished to buy off invasion by paying a tribute; the priests and inhabitants of Jerusalem wished to resist. The more wealthy, the more educated, were then the patriots, or, as some would say, the fanatics, who struggled for independence. But since the Captivity, and during these Greco-Syrian troubles, the politics of the two parties seemed to have been changed. The country party, headed by Judas, were now the patriots or fanatics; while the nobles and the wealthy were willing to yield to Antiochus Epiphanes, and were holding the castle of Jerusalem for the Greco-Syrians.

The attempt of Judas to gain the castle of Jerusalem brought down upon him the new king, Antiochus Eupator, at the head of a large army, which included thirty-two elephants. The Syrians not only saved the castle from Judas, but drove him out of Jerusalem. Antiochus then entered the city under promise that it should not be hurt; but he broke his oath, and destroyed the fortifications.

Antiochus Eupator was soon afterwards slain; but his death brought no relief to the Jews. Demetrius, the next king, sent an army under command of Nicanor into Judea. He came to Jerusalem, and from thence marched out against Judas. In the battle that followed, Nicanor's army was defeated, and he himself slain. This obtained for the

* 2 Maccab. xi.

country a short time of rest. Judas then sent to the Romans, and made a treaty with that rising people, who now for the first time are heard of in the East. In the next invasion by the Syrians, the Jews were unsuccessful, and the brave Judas, the liberator of his country, was slain.*

Judas, and afterwards his family, bore the name of Maccabee. The meaning and etymology of the word is uncertain. It may possibly come from the Hebrew word *Cocab*, *a star*, in Syriac, *Cocaba*; which derivation seems probable, because some of his successors, when allowed to coin money, placed a star upon their coins. The word is akin to the Arabic *Cocaba*, *to shine*; and hence the word *Macocaba* might mean *illustrious*, and his friends may have given that name to Judas as a copy of the name of the Syrian king against whom he was fighting, namely, Antiochus Epiphanes, *or the illustrious*.

Part of Balaam's prophecy, in Numbers xxiv. 14—19, seems meant for Judas, who would very naturally be described as a Star, if that be the word upon which his name of Maccabee was founded:—

There shall come a Star out of Jacob,
And a Sceptre shall arise out of Israel,
And he will smite the sides of Moab,
And destroy all the children of tumult.
And Edom will be a possession,
Seir also will be the possession of its enemies;
And Israel will do valiantly.
One sprung from Jacob will have dominion,
And will destroy those that remain of the city.

“Those that remain of the city” are the so-called apostates who held the castle of Jerusalem, who recommended submission to the King of Syria, and whom Judas had not yet been able to dislodge. In all former prophecies, even in Isaiah lxxv., written only a year or two before the revolt, the expected deliverer was looked for in the tribe of Judah, he was to be of the seed of David; but now the northern name of Israel is used. This agrees with our seeing that Judas's army was gathered out of all the tribes, and that the princes of Judah held the castle of Jerusalem against him.

The destruction of Edom, in Numbers xxiv. 21, 22, is one of several prophecies there put into Balaam's mouth, and

* 1 Maccab. vi.—ix.

it was written perhaps at this time. It relates to Antiochus Epiphanes:—

And he looked on the Kenites [a tribe of Edomites], and took up his parable and said,

Strong is thy dwelling-place,

And thou puttest thy nest in the Rock [or Petra],

Nevertheless the Kenite will be wasted.

Till when will Asshur [or Syria] carry thee captive?

In explanation of this, we remark that, at this time, the name of Edom covered, not only the country to the south of the Dead Sea, but that part of Judea below Hebron which has been called the South Country; and the inhabitants of the city of Sela, or Petra, *the rock*, were now called Kenites.

In another inserted passage in the Book of Numbers, which seems to belong to this time, chapter xxiv. 23, 24, Balaam is made to say:—

Alas, who shall be alive when God doeth this?

And ships from the coast of Chittim [or the Romans],

Will even afflict Asshur [or the Syrians];

And they [the Syrians] will afflict Eber [or the Hebrew people].

Then he also [Antiochus Epiphanes] will perish for ever.

The name of Chittim, properly Cyprians, is used for either Greeks or Romans; Asshur, properly Assyria, is several times used for the Syrians; and Eber, of course, is the Hebrew nation. The person who is to perish for ever is Antiochus Epiphanes, the King of Syria, whom the writer did not venture to name. Verses 21, 22, may perhaps be of the same date.

The few words of 1 Chronicles v. 1, 2, which say that when the birthright was taken away from Reuben it was given to the sons of Joseph, and which thus treat David and his family as usurpers, may perhaps have been added to that book at this time. The birthplace of the Maccabees was on the border between Dan and Ephraim, and not within the land of Judah.

Many of the Psalms were written at this time, among others the Elohistic Psalm lxxv. This, like Psalm lxxiv., calls the Temple the place of meeting, or Synagogue. But this Psalm, written at the beginning of the revolt, is in a more hopeful strain. The Jews are in hopes of regaining possession of Jerusalem and their Temple. The writer

looks forward to the near re-establishment of their religious worship, and says to God:—

That thy Name is near thy wonders declare, [saying]
When I take the Place of Meeting I will judge aright;
When the earth and all its inhabitants are dissolved,
I will establish the pillars of it.

This writer follows Ezekiel and the Book of Job in making the north more particularly the dwelling place of the Almighty; thus:—

Lift not up your horn on high, speaking with a stiff neck;
For lifting up cometh not from the east,
Nor from the west, nor from the [southern] desert.
But God is the judge;
He putteth down one, and lifteth up another.

Another of the Psalms which was written at this time is the Elohistic Psalm lx., which begins like Psalm lxxiv., already spoken of, but is far more hopeful. Judas has perhaps in part regained Jerusalem, but not the castle:—

O God, thou hast cast us off, thou hast scattered us;
Thou hast been angry; O turn thyself to us again.

God answers:—

I will triumph, I will divide up Shechem into portions,
And will measure out the valley of Succoth.
Gilead is mine, and Manasseh is mine,
Ephraim also is the strong covering of my head;
Judah is my staff of power.
Moab is my wash-pot; over Edom I will empty my shoe.
Shout aloud [O Jerusalem] over the Philistines.

At this time Judas had been fighting successfully in Gilead, while his brother Simon, after passing through Ephraim and Manasseh, was attempting to reduce Galilee. He was not wholly master of Shechem and the neighbouring valley of Succoth, against which the Psalmist directs his threats. For the watery Moab, and the sandy Edom, he has nothing but hatred and contempt.

The writer asks:—

Who will bring me into the besieged city?
Who will lead me into Edom?
Wilt not thou, O God, who hadst cast us off?
And wilt not thou, O God, go out with our armies?

And here we are tempted to conjecture that by the Be-

sieged City the Psalmist means the Castle of Jerusalem, which Judas had not yet been able to capture ; and that to this castle he gives the name of Edom. Judas, though defending himself against the Edomites, was not proposing to invade Edom. Nearly the same as this is Psalm cviii.

Psalm xliv., another Elohistie Psalm, has many of the same thoughts as Psalm lx., the last mentioned. After recording God's former kindness, it complains :—

But thou hast cast us off, and put us to shame,
And goest not forth with our armies.
Thou makest us to turn back from the enemy ;
And they that hate us plunder us for themselves.

Psalm xxii. belongs to some time after the Captivity, as it separates "those that fear Jehovah" from the seed of Jacob and Israel ; and also to a time when the nation's enemies were the Syrians and Edomites. This seems to fix it to the time of the Maccabee struggle. The Syrians are called Bulls and Bullocks, as in Isaiah xxxiv. ; thus :—

Many Bullocks have encompassed me,
Strong Bulls of Bashan have beset me round.
They gape upon me with their mouths,
As a ravening and roaring lion.

The Edomites of the south are called Dogs, which indeed is simply their name, Calebites ; thus :—

For the Dogs have encompassed me ;
The assembly of the wicked have gone round me ;
Like a lion [they tear] my hands and my feet.

In the same figurative way the writer speaks of their old enemies, whom they have now no more occasion to fear ; the Assyrians he calls Lions, and the Egyptians he calls Buffaloes, as other writers have done before him ; thus :—

Thou savedst me from the mouth of the Lion,
And didst answer me from the horns of the Buffaloes.

Psalm lxxxi. belongs to a time of oppression under foreign enemies, when, however, the people are yet able to celebrate the solemn feasts, and when sufferings had in some minds healed the jealousy which once divided northern Israel from Judah. The writer, who belonged to Ephraim or Manasseh, professes that those tribes also were under the care of Jehovah, saying :—

"The testimony was in his name Jeho-seph;" thus spelling the name of Joseph as if it were a Jehovistic name.

The few lines of Zechariah ix. 11—17, which tell us that both the northern and the southern tribes were united against the Greeks, can belong to no earlier time in our history. Jehovah is there made to say, "I have guided the aim of Judah for me; I have prepared the bow of Ephraim and have raised up thy sons, O Zion, against thy sons, O Greece, and made thee as the sword of a warrior." It was on the revolt of the Maccabees against the Greek kings of Syria that the Jews for the first time fought against Greeks. The Greeks have already been known to us in Ezekiel xxvii., and in Joel ii. 28—iii. 8, written about the time of Ezekiel, as people at a distance to whom the Tyrians sold the Jewish children as slaves; but not till the time of Alexander the Great do they play any part in Jewish history.

On the death of Judas the Maccabee, his brother Jonathan took the chief command in Judea, and a few years afterwards the civil war between two claimants for the crown of Syria, Demetrius and Alexander, gave a short truce to this unhappy country. This was in the year B.C. 152. The two kings both made offers to Jonathan with a view to purchasing his friendship. Demetrius promised to add to Judea three portions of Samaria and Galilee which Jonathan already held, and also a district round Ptolemais on the Phenician coast, and to remit all tribute; and gave consent for a body of thirty thousand Jews to be enlisted in his army, who were to be paid by him, and to be under the command of their own officers. Demetrius at the same time sent orders to the hostile party in the castle of Jerusalem to cease from any act of war, and to deliver up the hostages whom they had in their possession, which they accordingly did.

Jonathan then removed his seat of government from Michmash into Jerusalem, though the castle was still held by his enemies. He took upon himself the office of high priest, to the disappointment of Onias IV., the son of Onias III. Upon this Onias withdrew into Egypt; and there Ptolemy Philometor gave him permission to build a temple to Jehovah. Onias thereupon became the high priest of the Jews living in Lower Egypt, with a temple in rivalry to

that in Jerusalem, in the same manner and for the same reason that Manasseh had before made a rival temple in Samaria, because he had been deposed from the post of high priest in Jerusalem. Of the Jews in Egypt those who had settled among the Greeks in Alexandria, had very much adopted the Greek language. But there remained the old Jewish colony on the east of the Delta, where five cities, between the Pelusiac branch of the Nile and the desert, yet spoke the language of Canaan. There, in the city of Onion, Onias was allowed to build his temple.* This was, perhaps, the city before called On. It is Vicus Judæorum in the Roman Itinerary, and since it was ruined has been known as Tel Yahoud, *the mounds of the Jews*.

Jonathan put no trust in the promises made to him by Demetrius, and he made a treaty with Alexander, the rival claimant.† This struggle for the throne of Syria between these kings, and after their death by their successors, continued for about eight years, when, after various successes and defeats, Jonathan was taken prisoner in Ptolemais and slain.

Simon, Jonathan's brother, was then chosen by the people as their leader, and shortly afterwards, in the year B.C. 142, Demetrius Nicator made peace with him, and confirmed to him the privileges which the former Demetrius had before granted to Jonathan. He remitted as before all arrears of tribute. Simon was henceforth to be treated as an independent though tributary prince; and on that year the people of Israel dated their legal instruments and contracts, "In the first year of Simon the high priest, the governor and leader of the Jews."

Psalms x. and ix. cannot be dated with any certainty, since our history has shown so many occasions for mournful and for thankful strains; but they belong to a time after the Return from Captivity, and probably to this late time. Psalm x. complains:—

Why standest thou afar off, O Jehovah?
Thou hidest thyself in times of trouble.

And after praising the Almighty, it ends with the prayer:—

May the nations be destroyed out of His land.

* Joseph. Antiq. XIII. iii. 1; Isaiah xix.

† 1 Maccab. x.

Psalm ix., on the other hand, having perhaps been written a little later, is in thankfulness for relief from the oppressor ; saying,—

Thou hast rebuked the nations and destroyed the wicked ;
 Thou hast blotted out their name for ever and ever.
 The destruction of the enemy is wholly completed,
 And thou hast destroyed their cities.
 The memory of them is perished.

THE JEWS INDEPENDENT ; B.C. 142.—SIMON CHIEF PRIEST ;
 B.C. 141.

Now that danger from abroad was for the time removed, Simon was able to turn all his forces against those who yet resisted his power at home. The hostile party in the castle of Jerusalem were then pressed with a close siege, and in the next year the want of food forced them to open the gates. They had held the fortress against Judas, Jonathan, and Simon for three-and-twenty years, during the time that the struggle against Syria had lasted ; but now, at length, as they had lost the Greco-Syrian help, the castle that overhangs the temple is taken, and Jerusalem again becomes the capital of Judea.*

The strong wall, which Judas built against his enemies in the castle, had a sad religious effect which he certainly never intended. It cut off the court of the Gentiles in a yet more marked manner from the rest of the temple. The separation between the courts had been hitherto slight ; henceforth it was most solid and real. Well might the Apostle Paul call it the Middle Wall of Partition. At a later time, when the castle was no longer a cause of fear, doors were made in this wall. By one door the cattle could be brought to the altar ; by two others the true Jews might enter to witness the sacrifices ; by another the women might enter their court ; but the larger part of the population were shut out with jealous strictness from temple-services, which they were yet taught to think the only worship acceptable to their Maker. How far the outer court on the temple-hill had always been used as a market is unknown ;

* 1 Maccab. xiii. 51.

but we may be sure that from the first day that any part of the population were told that it was the place of worship appointed for their use, they must have been displeased at seeing it so defiled. The after act of Jesus, in attempting to drive the dealers out of this court, gives particular interest to the few last words, added at some unknown time to the Book of Zechariah, saying, "In that day there shall be no more a dealer in the House of Jehovah of Hosts."

There are coins now remaining which tell us that Simon in the first year of his reign as chief priest of the Jews, began to coin money in his own name as an independent prince. These are silver shekels and half shekels, the former weighing about two hundred and twenty grains, or nearly half an ounce. On one side is a cup, with the words "Shekel of Israel," and the letter A "for the year one," and on the other side is a flower with three heads, and the words "Jerusalem the holy." These words are written, not in the Hebrew square letters, but in the Samaritan letters.* This has given rise to the opinion that the Samaritan alphabet is the older of the two, because we now possess no Hebrew writing so old as these Maccabee coins. We cannot now produce Hebrew inscriptions, except, indeed, those at the foot of Mount Sinai, to support the square letters in their claim to be equally old, or to be those used at all times by the Jews in writing their holy books. The oldest manuscript of the Hebrew Bible was not written before the year A.D. 900. But this argument carries very little weight. The two alphabets may both have been in use at the same time. The square characters in Judea, and the Samaritan characters in the northern provinces. The Syrian king, indeed, gave to Simon the limited title of High Priest of the Jews; to have called him High Priest of Israel would have been to surrender much of his own dominion. But Simon, we have seen, did really hold a part of Galilee and a part of Samaria; his subjects were many of them not Jews, but Israelites, whom we now call Samaritans; he was born, not in Judea, but on the boundary between Dan and Ephraim; and the southern half of Judea including Hebron its capital, under the name of Idumæa, was in arms against him; hence we may imagine that he

* Madden's Jewish Coinage.

had very good reasons for making use of the Samaritan characters rather than of the Jewish. Moreover, Simon styled his coin a Shekel of Israel, not of Judah. When he began to coin he was not even master of Jerusalem. We need not, therefore, from these coins alone, suppose that the square Jewish characters had not yet come into use, while there are so many good reasons for thinking that the Jews have at no time made a change in the letters in which their scriptures were first written, other than that gradual and unnoticed change which everything human undergoes from day to day.

For the history of these struggles of the brave Maccabees against the Greek kings of Syria, we are indebted, not to Hebrew writers, but to Greek Jews living in Alexandria, where some of them held high political rank. Josephus says that Onias the priest, and Dositheus, whom we have before mentioned, commanded the army for Ptolemy Philometor against his brother Ptolemy Euergetes II. ; and he claims for the Jews the honour of bringing the civil war to an end, and saving the kingdom.* But that credit is rather due to the Roman name. For though the Romans had no forces in the country, yet when Antiochus was marching upon Alexandria, C. Popilius, the Roman ambassador, went forward to meet him, and ordered him out of the country. On Antiochus hesitating, Popilius drew a line round him on the sand with his stick, and told him that if he crossed that line, without promising to withdraw his army from Egypt, he would be declared the enemy of Rome.†

To this time of the nation's independence we may give Isaiah xviii. 7, in which it is said that the Jews of Abyssinia, who have been blamed, perhaps, for deserting their country, are to send their presents to the temple of Jerusalem.

To this time we must give Isaiah xix., written against Egypt. Here we read of an altar to Jehovah in Egypt, which may have been that built by Onias in the reign of Ptolemy Philometor ; of the Egyptians crying to Jehovah for help from their oppressors, and his sending them a saviour who shall rebuke and deliver them, meaning C. Popilius, whose threats saved them from the Syrian invasion under Antiochus ; of the Egyptians sending offerings to Jehovah,

* Against Apion, II. 5.

† Livy, xlv. 12.

or courting the Jewish alliance, as they did in those reigns ; of the Assyrians coming into Egypt, and the Egyptians going into Assyria, thus describing the wars between the Ptolemies and the kings of Syria, as in Daniel xi. ; and lastly, of Israel being a third with Egypt and Assyria, as it was for a short time when independent under the Maccabees. For the moment, thanks to the Roman power, the Jews are at peace with both their powerful neighbours ; and Jehovah blesses them both, saying, " Blessed be Egypt my people, and Assyria the work of my hands, and Israel mine inheritance."

The Pillar to Jehovah at the boundary of Egypt, which is here mentioned, may perhaps be the one remaining obelisk at Heliopolis, which can yet be seen by our travellers. The two were both standing when Jeremiah was in the Delta ; one may have been carried off by the Persian conquerors.

This chapter, relating to Egypt and the Jewish altar there, seems to be the last of the additions made to the Book of Isaiah. Much of it may have been written by Onias, or by one of the Jews frequenting his temple. But the Altar and Temple on the banks of the Nile were naturally very displeasing to the Jews of Jerusalem ; and they added to this chapter a few words to say that, of the five cities in Egypt inhabited by Jews, one shall be called the City of Destruction. This may have been Onion, with its rival altar ; or it may have been Heliopolis ; as the Hebrew word Destruction is nearly the same in sound as the word Sun. At any rate, the Jews of Egypt protected themselves from the reproach, as far as they could, by calling it, in their Greek Bible, the City of Righteousness.

We have now followed the history of the Hebrew nation in its fall as far as necessary to throw light upon the ancient Hebrew books, all of which, so far as we can put dates to them, were written before this time, with the exception, perhaps, of a chapter and a half in the Book of Daniel. For the sake of chapter ix., it will be necessary to run rapidly through the history of the next hundred years, during which time the high priesthood is changed into a monarchy, and then that monarchy is put down by the Romans, and the government by an aristocracy is established in its place.

The high-priest Simon, who gained for the nation independence, was basely murdered by his son-in-law, to whom he had given the post of governor of the valley of Jericho, a post made lucrative by the palm cultivation. Simon was succeeded, in the year B.C. 135, by his son John Hyrcanus, who governed the country for nine-and-twenty years with great prosperity. Under him we for the first time hear of the Pharisees and Sadducees, as two political parties, and we are thus able to justify the conjectures by which we have already connected these two names with the old parties in the state. John Hyrcanus at first favoured the Pharisees. They can only have been the country party who had supported his father Simon in the revolt against the Greco-Syrians. He afterwards took the other party, the Sadducees, into his favour. They must have been the party who had opposed his father, those who had held the castle of Jerusalem by force against him, those who had been willing to submit to Antiochus Epiphanes, and to adopt Greek manners and customs at the bidding of Antiochus—a party which, however strange it may seem, included the chief priests, the Sons of Aaron, or Sons of Zadok, as they were also called. Here, then, we have the two names explained, and the two parties identified. The old country party are now called Pharisees or *villagers*; and the city party, the party of the chief priest, the Sons of Zadok, are called Sadducees. Hitherto they have been divided in their political aims. Hereafter they will be known as sects, differing in religion.

John Hyrcanus, in his wars against the Greco-Syrian king, besieged and wholly destroyed the Samaritan town of Shechem, among other towns in the northern part of the country. Upon this the Samaritan temple on Mount Gerizim, once the rival to that of Jerusalem, was left desolate, and probably soon went to decay.

The government by a priest ended with John Hyrcanus. He was succeeded in B.C. 106 by his son, JUDAS ARISTOBULUS, who took the title of king. After a year, ALEXANDER JANNÆUS, a younger son of John Hyrcanus, came to the throne of Jerusalem. Then Alexander's widow, ALEXANDRA, governed during the years B.C. 78—69. Her son, HYRCANUS II., made himself high priest in B.C. 69, and then, in B.C. 65, her younger son, ARISTOBULUS II., set up his claim

to the throne against his brother, and began his reign jointly with his own son, Alexander II.*

Hyrcanus II. and Aristobulus II. by their quarrels brought into the country the Roman general Pompey, who, after making king Aristobulus his prisoner, besieged Jerusalem, and took possession of it in the year B.C. 63. Pompey then returned to Rome, carrying with him king Aristobulus as his prisoner, and leaving Hyrcanus and the young Alexander each at the head of an army and of a party in the state. Hyrcanus then for a short time gained possession of Jerusalem, and began to rebuild the walls which Pompey had thrown down; but Gabinius, the Roman general at that time commanding in Syria, brought his army down to Jerusalem, and declared the Jewish monarchy at an end. He deposed Hyrcanus, and gave to him the title of high priest, but with no civil power, and soon afterwards conquered Alexander, and made him prisoner, while Aristobulus still remained a prisoner in Rome. Gabinius changed the form of government into AN ARISTOCRACY. He divided what had been the kingdom into five parts, and appointed over each of these parts its own governing council. The city of Jerusalem remained in the hands of the Romans.†

It is to this time that the celebrated prophecy of the Seventy Weeks, in the ninth chapter of Daniel, seems to relate. It mentions the fortifications of the temple and of the city being repaired in sixty-nine weeks, or 483 years after the decree went forth that the Jews might return home from captivity; an anointed one being then cut off, namely the king Aristobulus; and the people of the Ruler who comes making a treaty with Many, or the Roman general setting up an Aristocracy in place of the monarchy. The whole passage is as follows:—

Seventy weeks [or 490 years] are determined for thy people and for thy holy city to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make atonement for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to put the seal upon the vision and the prophet, and to anoint the Holy of Holies. Know, therefore, and understand, that from the going forth of the command [given to Zerubbabel B.C. 538] to lead back home, and to build up Jerusalem, unto an anointed Ruler [Ezra], shall be seven weeks [or 49 years]. Then in sixty and

* Josephus Antiq. XIII. viii.—XIV. i.

† Josephus Antiq. XIV. i.—v; Wars, I. viii. 5.

two weeks [or 434 years] the Broad Place [of the temple] shall be built again [B.C. 55], and the ditch, even amidst the distress of the times. And after the sixty and two weeks shall an Anointed One [king Aristobulus] be cut off, and nothing shall remain to him. And the people of the Ruler [or Roman General] that shall come will destroy the city and the Holy Place; and the end thereof will be with a flood; and until the end of the war desolations are determined. And he will confirm a treaty with Many [or the Aristocracy] for one week. And in the middle of the week [B.C. 51] he will cause the sacrifice and the meal offering to cease, and upon the battlements shall be the abominations [or idolatrous ensigns] of desolation; even until the consummation, and that which has been determined, shall be poured out upon the desolator.

The only place in which the prophecy and history disagree is in the 49 years. If Ezra is the anointed Ruler who is first mentioned, the time should have been 59 years; as that was the interval between Cyrus's decree that the captives might return home and Ezra's being made Ruler of the country. This ninth chapter of Daniel, unlike the other chapters, calls the Almighty by the name of Jehovah.

This prophecy in Daniel ix. of a Messiah, or *anointed* ruler, and then of a Messiah, who was to be cut off, was probably well understood at the time, at least by those for whom it was written. But as days went on, it remained only as one more added to the list of dark hints by which the prophets, in the hour of danger, had warned the people, and from which the hopeful found encouragement to look for better times. With these words the people naturally joined the former prophecy in Isaiah xlv. 1, of a Messiah, meaning King Cyrus, who was to let the captives go free, and to build up the fortunes of the nation; and also the words of Isaiah xi. which promise a Rod from the Stem of Jesse, with many other passages pointing to Zerubbabel as the prince who was to make the people happy. Such half-understood words led the hopeful to look for a time when they would be fully explained.

Joined to these was another class of prophecies, which promised, or rather threatened, a coming Day of Jehovah. First, when the Assyrians invaded Judea, Joel had warned the people in burning words that the Day of Jehovah was at hand, a dreadful day of punishment, which should lead every one to fast and repent of his evil doings. When the Babylonians afterwards brought upon the nation a yet more dreadful misfortune, Ezekiel xiii. 5 speaks of that as the

Day of Jehovah. When Babylon was on the point of being conquered, and Israel's prospects brightened, a prophet in Isaiah xiii. 6 again declares that the Day of Jehovah is coming, a dreadful day, but of punishment only on their enemies. In Nehemiah's time the Life of Elijah was written, with the account of his being taken up to heaven in a chariot of fire; and then Malachi again foretells the great and dreadful Day of Jehovah, but adds that Elijah will first return to earth to give the people warning, and prepare them for it.

These scattered hints, when gathered together into one view, were a never failing cause of hope and fear; and their realization was naturally looked for when John the Baptist and Jesus of Nazareth began to call upon their hearers to repent.

The few words in Daniel vii. 9—14, are a very late addition. That chapter had ended with saying that at last the kingdom over all nations will be given to "the people, the holy ones of the Most High." But this addition interrupts the prophecy, and describes "one like a Son of Man coming in the clouds," to whom will be given an everlasting kingdom over all nations. These words were very probably added after the Christian era, after the Book of Revelation was written. They are in Chaldee. The volume, or rather series of volumes, was brought to a close, because the Hebrew language had gone out of use as a living tongue, and the Jewish writers would have found a difficulty in adding to it except in Syriac or Greek.

Josephus, in his Defence of the Jews against Apion, says that they have only twenty-two books, and these are justly thought to be divine. Five of these contain the traditions about the origin of mankind until the death of Moses; thirteen continue the history until the reign of Artaxerxes; and four are hymns and precepts for the conduct of life. The five, of course, are the Pentateuch. The thirteen may be—

Joshua, Judges, Ruth, Kings, Chronicles, Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther, Isaiah, Jeremiah with Lamentations, Ezekiel, Daniel, the XII. minor prophets. The four may be, Job, Psalms, Proverbs, Ecclesiastes.

As in this arrangement he follows the Greek, not the Hebrew, we may suppose that he also follows the Greek in

counting the Books of Samuel among the Books of Kings ; or with the Jews he may have called Ezra and Nehemiah one book, and then Samuel and Kings may be two. But in either way, we find no place in this list for Solomon's Song.

Of the Book of Enoch, the older and larger part was written about the same time with the ninth chapter of Daniel, but probably in Syriac. It is known to us only through an Ethiopic translation, and some fragments of a Greek translation. It professes to be written by Enoch, the seventh from Adam. It may be divided into four parts. The first part, in chapters i.—xxxv., relates Enoch's vision in heaven, whither he had been carried without dying. He foresees God coming down to Mount Sinai, and the Sons of God having children by the daughters of men, and the wicked race which sprang therefrom. With much that is not easily understood, he gives the names of the seven Watchers, or guardian angels, some of which we have in the Book of Daniel ; and also the names of the wicked angels, among whom is Azazel, perhaps the *scape-goat* of the Book of Leviticus. This portion of the book is quoted in the Epistle of Jude.

The second portion, in chapters xxxvii.—lxx., Enoch's second vision, is more modern, written probably after the Christian Era. It seems to be more modern than the Book of Revelation and Daniel vii. 9—14, because in those books "One like a son of man" is the description of a being seen in a vision in the heavens ; while in these chapters of the Book of Enoch, as in the Gospels, "the Son of Man" has become a proper name.

The third portion, chapters lxxi.—lxxxiii., is astronomical. Here the angel Uriel explains to Enoch the motions of the heavenly bodies, dividing the year into 364 days, and the day into 18 hours. From the length of the longest day, and of the shortest, we learn that this portion of the book, and probably the whole, was written to the north of Palestine, perhaps at Antioch in Syria.

The fourth and last portion of the Book of Enoch, chapters lxxxiv.—cv., is historical. Enoch relates his dream to his son Methuselah, running obscurely through the history of the nation, from Cain and Abel, Noah, Moses, the Judges, the Kings, the Captivity, the Second Temple, down to the twelve native princes after the revolt of the

Maccabees. This brings us to the time of Herod, and gives a date which may belong to three out of the four portions of our Book. The whole is of very little value, except to show how mystical were the opinions now becoming common, and how ready were the writers to put a false name upon their writings.

The Book of Enoch did not gain admission into the collection of Hebrew scriptures; and it very little deserved admission.

The Bible, however, in its Greek translation, continued to receive additions; these we now separate from the Hebrew books, under the name of the Apocrypha. Some of the Greek additions, indeed, had been written before this time; such as the First Book of Esdras; the Wisdom of Jesus the son of Sirach, a work resembling the Proverbs of Solomon; and the two Books of Maccabees, which we have made use of in the latter part of this History. The more modern writings are the Book of Tobit, dated at the time of the captivity of the ten tribes, but written perhaps in the reign of Herod; the Book of Judith, professing to relate events in the reign of Nebuchadnezzar, but written in the time of Vespasian, whom the writer points to covertly under the name of the Babylonian king; and the Wisdom of Solomon, which last seems to be a Christian work. The second book of Esdras, which also finds a place in the Apocrypha, is a Latin work, written after the death of the Roman Emperor Caracalla.

As the history of the Hebrew nation is chiefly valuable for the history of its religious books, we may here bring it to a close. It has shown us the nation in its rise and in its fall. It has shown, as all history does, the people's crimes and their virtues; and though from its baldness not very distinctly, it has shown sometimes the one and sometimes the other on the increase. But it has shown knowledge, and, what is chiefly to our purpose, religious knowledge, always on the increase. If the Israelites had ever had their religious feelings weakened by the worship of more gods than one, it was before the beginning of trustworthy history. When in later days their prophets reproach them with idolatry, the blame seems to be deserved only so far as they had consented to be called one nation with the mixed races in Canaan among whom they had settled. The

God whom they worshipped at the beginning of our history may have been thought by the less enlightened to have been the God of the Israelites only, while the nations around lived each of them under its own god. But even as early as David's reign, the Hebrew writers had taught that there was One only God, the maker of all things, who was to be feared and worshipped with sacrifices. After a time the prophets taught them that he did not ask for any other sacrifice than that they should cease to do evil, and learn to do well. The Book of Deuteronomy, near the end of the monarchy, had added that God was not only to be feared, but that they ought to love God with all their heart, and that when he afflicts or punishes, he does it as a father, for our improvement. The Book of Job, written after the Return from Captivity, argues that our knowledge of God's ways, even in easier matters, such as the seasons and the habits of animals, is so limited that we must not fancy that we can judge of his moral justice, or hope to understand why in each case he does so afflict us. Some years after the Return from Captivity, the latter chapters of Leviticus show that the nation had made another great step; they had learned that we should not only love God, but should also love our neighbour as ourselves. So also in the motives for avoiding sin and doing right which are put forward in the Hebrew writings, our history shows that a like change was taking place for the better. The Book of Exodus had threatened that God would visit sins upon the sinner's children to the third and fourth generation. Some centuries later, the Book of Ezekiel taught that the son would not have to bear the sins of the father, but "the soul that sinneth he shall die." The latter chapters of Leviticus add a higher motive for shunning wickedness, saying, "Be ye holy, as I Jehovah am holy." And lastly, the twelfth chapter of Daniel, in the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes, while adding a new reason for right actions, yet further removed their difficulties as to God's bestowal of rewards in this life, by promising them a state of being after death, "when some will arise to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt." Such is the history of the Jewish religion, as shown in the Hebrew Scriptures, a religion which, when released from the bonds of the ceremonial law, became the forerunner of Christianity.

ADDITIONS.

Page 86, line 22. Ptolemy Philadelphus gave to the port the name of his mother, the queen Berenice; and to distinguish it from other cities of that name, it was called Berenice Panchrysos, or *all gold*.*

Page 90, line 16. The queen of Sheba probably lived at the Arab city now called Medina, from whence there is a well frequented route for caravans to Damascus. Strabo places the Sabæi (her people) on the middle of the eastern coast of the Arabian Gulf, saying that their country produced myrrh, frankincense, and cinnamon, with which they traded to Syria; and that their chief city was Mariaba.† This name, when written in Hebrew, would be Ameh-rabah, *the great metropolis*, and was, no doubt, the same place as that afterwards called Medina, *the city*, when the language became less like Hebrew. For a short time, when Egypt was disturbed by the civil war which overthrew the power of Thebes, and before the trade on the Red Sea had begun, Sheba had the profit of carrying the Nubian gold to purchase such commodities as Damascus and Tyre supplied.

Page 149, line 2. At this early stage of the world's progress towards civilization, History had not yet taught by examples, nor had Foreign Travel gleaned facts upon which to reason. But we can now see the mistake made by Israel and Judah in regard to Assyria. Had they known, first, the vast power of the Assyrians, and the cruelty with which they treated those whom they conquered; and secondly, that the place in which the advance of the Assyrians could be most easily checked was at the passage from the valley of the Orontes to Damascus, they would have united their forces to defend the Syrians, and would have known that, as soon as the Assyrians had gained Damascus, Israel and Judah were both at their mercy.

Page 149, bottom line. Before the end of Jotham's reign, the troubles from the invasion by Syria and Israel began, but, as they belong more particularly to the reign of his son Ahaz, we shall speak of them presently. Jotham's name is shortened from Jehotham, meaning *Jehovah is per-*

* Pliny vi. 34.

† Strabo XVI. iv. 2 and 19.

fect, or upright; and the words in Psalm xviii. 25 seem to be meant as a compliment to him:—

With the merciful Thou showest thyself merciful;
With the *upright man* Thou showest thyself upright.

This is a Psalm of thanksgiving for deliverance from enemies; and the Assyrians, who have hitherto been unknown to the Jews, seem to be here pointed to:—

Thou deliverest me from the strivings of the people,
And Thou makest me the head of nations.
A people whom I did not know shall serve me,
When the ear heareth, they shall be obedient to me.
The sons of foreigners shall fawn before me.
The sons of foreigners shall fade away,
And shall tremble within their border fastnesses.

Page 175, line 16. Mardoc-empadus, or Baradach-baladan, king of Babylon, who, in the year B.C. 714, the eighth of his reign, had thrown off the Assyrian yoke, reigned only for six months after he had gained his independence. He was then slain by Elibus. Elibus, or Belibus, reigned for three years, while Sennacherib's armies were overrunning Judea with a view to the conquest of Egypt. At the end of that time, Sennacherib had withdrawn his forces from Judea, and returned home to grapple with the Babylonian difficulty. He then conquered Elibus, and left his son Esarhaddon in Babylon to secure its obedience.* When Babylon was conquered, he was at leisure to require payment of the Jewish tribute; and though the historians have not mentioned Hezekiah's return to obedience, we may notice it in his changed policy.

Page 192, line 17. Amon and his father Manasseh did not bear Jehovistic names; they were both opposed to the policy of the priests. Neither did king Ahaz, who like them governed the kingdom in a spirit opposed to the priests of Jerusalem. Had he been less unpopular, the historians would probably have given to him the full name of Ahaz-iah. But with those three exceptions every king of Judah, since the rise of the priestly power in Jehoshaphat's reign, bore a name either beginning with the syllables Jeho-, or ending with -jah.

Page 219, line 8. At the same time the few words, in

* Alex. Polyhistor, in Armin. Chron. of Eusebius.

chap. xxxi. 9—13, may have been added to close the book. They direct that every seventh year, at the feast of Tabernacles, this book of the Law shall be read to the assembled people in The Place which Jehovah shall choose. Thus the Book of Deuteronomy, at the fall of the monarchy, may have been limited to chap. iv. 44—xviii. 8, containing a correction of the Levitical law ; chap. xxviii—xxx., containing threats and promises which enforce the law ; and chap. xxxi. 9—13, the closing words, which agree with the opening words in chap. iv. 44. The book contained no mention of Joshua, nor perhaps of Moses's death.

Page 237, line 13. The caravan routes, which ran to the Persian Gulf and the Red Sea, may have brought the Persians and Arabs to stand beside the Africans in the motley garrison of Tyre.

CORRECTION.

Page 327. Lines 28—38 should be removed to page 288, line 29 ; that is, Numb. xii. 1—15, should be given to the time of Ezra ; because Miriam's punishment for blaming Moses's marriage is referred to in Deut. xxiv. 9, and this we have placed in page 293.

THE HEBREW CHRONOLOGY.

IN these pages the writer ventures on no opinion about the age of the world, or the number of years that it has been inhabited by man, nor even attempts to decide the date of the Exodus of the Israelites out of Egypt, under Moses. His aim is merely to show at what times the Hebrew writers place those events. He has simply taken out the spaces of time mentioned in the Bible, and placed them together in a series till they come down to the recorded eclipses. Modern science tells us with certainty how many years before our own time these eclipses happened ; and thus, to the Table of years which had been made by counting forward, we are able to put our own more usual and more convenient dates by counting backwards, from the Christian era. Thus, if an eclipse is known to have taken place 2593 years before this present year, which we call A.D. 1872, we deduct 1872 from the above number, and say that it happened B.C. 621.

The chronology of the Old Testament may conveniently be divided into two parts, the traditional chronology and the historical chronology.

The first is formed by adding together the age of each of the patriarchs at the time of the son's birth, from which we

learn that Abraham left Haran in Syria in A.M. 2023 ; that the Exodus of the Israelites from Egypt took place in A.M. 2668 ; and that Solomon, in the fourth year of his reign, built the temple of Jerusalem in A.M. 3148. Here the traditional chronology may be said to end ; and, after this time, the dates are recorded with so much greater care, and with such an evident aim at exactness, that we may safely consider that we have entered upon historical chronology. From this we learn that the building of the temple took place in the year B.C. 973. We thus gain the opinion of the Hebrew writers that Adam was created in the year B.C. 4121 ($= 3148 + 973$).

The received chronology places the creation of Adam in the year B.C. 4004, or 4000 years before the birth of Jesus ; and it will be not uninteresting to examine the reasons for its doing so. The Epistle of Barnabas mentions an opinion held by the Jews, that the world was to be destroyed at the end of 6000 years from its creation, because, according to Genesis chap. i., it was created in six days, and according to 2 Peter iii. 8, "one day with the Lord is as a thousand years." On comparing this with our chronology, it will be seen that the Promises were given to Abraham in A.M. 2023, and that Jesus was born in A.M. 4121. Hence, a very little alteration of the dates will make the Bible seem to declare that mankind had lived 2000 years before the Promises, 2000 more before the Gospel ; and this adjustment of the chronology, to make it agree with a fanciful opinion, has been made in the margin of the authorized English Bibles. This opinion also led to the natural prophecy, among those who are fond of such fanciful interpretations, that the world is to last 2000 years under the Gospel, and to come to an end in A.D. 2000, or more exactly, in A.D. 1996, because modern criticism has made it probable that Jesus was born in the year B.C. 4.

TABLE OF THE TRADITIONAL CHRONOLOGY FROM THE CREATION TO SOLOMON'S REIGN.

GENESIS.							A.M.	
V.	3	Adam,	when 130 years old, begat	Seth	-	-	130	
	6	Seth,	" 105 " " "	Enos	-	-	235	
	9	Enos,	" 90 " " "	Cainan	-	-	325	
	12	Cainan,	" 70 " " "	Mahalaleel	-	-	395	
	15	Mahalaleel,	" 65 " " "	Jared	-	-	460	
	18	Jared,	" 162 " " "	Enoch	-	-	622	
	21	Enoch,	" 65 " " "	Methuselah	-	-	687	
	25	Methuselah,	" 187 " " "	Lamech	-	-	874	
	28	Lamech,	" 182 " " "	Noah	-	-	1056	
	32	Noah,	" 500 " " "	Shem	-	-	1556	
VII.	6	"	" 600 " " "	The Flood	-	-	1656	
XI.	10	Two years after the Flood, Shem begat Arphaxad					1658	
	12	Arphaxad	when 35 years old,	"	Salah	-	1693	
	14	Salah,	" 30 " " "	"	Eber	-	1723	
	16	Eber,	" 34 " " "	"	Peleg	-	1757	
	18	Peleg,	" 30 " " "	"	Reu	-	1787	
	20	Reu,	" 32 " " "	"	Serug	-	1819	
	22	Serug,	" 30 " " "	"	Nahor	-	1849	
	24	Nahor,	" 29 " " "	"	Terah	-	1878	
	26	Terah,	" 70 " " "	"	Abram	-	1948	
XII.	4	Abram,	" 75 " " "	left Haran		-	2023	
XXI.	5	When 100 years old, 25 years later, begat Isaac					2048	
XXV.	26	Isaac,	when 60 years old,	"	Jacob	-	2108	
XLVII.	9	Jacob,	" 130 " " "	settles in Egypt		-	2238	
EXODUS.								
XII.	40	After 430 years, they leave Egypt					-	2668
1 KINGS.								
VI.	1	480 years after the Exodus is the 4th of Solomon					3148	

ON THE BOOK OF JUDGES.

THE above-mentioned period of 480 years, which the writer of 1 Kings vi. 1 places between the Exodus and the building of the Temple by Solomon, would seem to have been learned by adding together the times mentioned in the history. In the Books of Joshua and Judges there are periods amounting to 460 years. If we continue, in the same way, to think

none of the events contemporaneous, we must add to this sum :—

1 year from the Exodus to the espying of the land.—
Numb. x. 11.—xiii. 2.

40 years of David's reign.

3 years of Solomon's reign to the building of the Temple ; making a total of 504 years. How the writer lessened this down to 480 it is in vain to conjecture. Sound criticism would lead us to lessen it much more by considering many events in the Book of Judges as contemporaneous.

Thus, in chapters vi.—xii. we have a continuous history, limited for the most part to the middle tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh, though sometimes we find Gad, Issachar, and Zebulun joined to them. This describes an invasion and conquest of their country by the Midianites and others from the east of the Jordan, and then the reigns of Gideon and Abimelech, and the judgeships of Tola and Jair (chap. x. 1, 4). These quiet reigns are followed by a second great invasion and conquest of the land. This is by the children of Ammon from the east, and by the Philistines from the south, and it is followed by the judgeships of Jephthah, Ibzan, Elon, and Abdon. The whole occupies 144 years ; namely, 95 years before the second invasion, and 49 years after it. It seems probable that these two portions embrace the whole period of time which the Book of Judges covers, and that the other invasions relate to other parts of the country which sometimes had judges of their own. Thus the wars of Benjamin against the Moabites, and the conquest of Moab, in chap. iii. 14—30, and the wars of the northern tribes against the Syrians, in chap. iii. 8—11, and against the Canaanites, in chap. iv., v., may have taken place during the first of these periods ; and Samson's wars against the Philistines, in chap. xiii.—xvi., may have been included in the second period of time. This shortening of the chronology of this book will make it better agree with the genealogies ; for, since Moses is the fourth in descent from Jacob, and David the eleventh, we cannot allow more than four, or at most five, generations of men to the time occupied by the Book of Judges:

On the other hand, the Book of Judges, in chap. xi. 26, has preserved a tradition, relating to a yet earlier time, that the Israelites had dwelt for 300 years on the east of the

Jordan, between the time of the Exodus and the time of Judges ruling in Canaan. This very probable statement is expressly contradicted in Numbers xxxii. 12, xxxiv. 17, and Joshua iii.

THE CHRONOLOGY OF THE SEPTUAGINT.

WHEN the Greek Jews made the Septuagint version, in the reigns of the Ptolomies, they seem not to have been content with the very moderate antiquity for their nation and the human race given in the Hebrew books ; and, accordingly, they added 1466 years to the age of the world, by making the patriarchs older at the birth of their sons. They thus add 586 in Genesis v.—vii., and 880 in Genesis xi., xii. They probably meant to add an exact Egyptian cycle of four times 365, or 1460 years. The difference of six years may be an error of the scribe. On comparing the Greek chronology with the Hebrew, sound criticism will certainly lead us to conclude that the Hebrew is what the writers originally wrote. However mistaken we may think them in supposing that the world had only been peopled with mankind for such a small number of years, yet we cannot accept the Greek chronology as the original. It is evidently a correction, an attempted improvement on the Hebrew. And even as an improvement it is of very little value, since even with its help we by no means carry back the creation of man to a time early enough to satisfy the reasonable requirements of science.

A second improvement proposed by the Greek translators was to shorten the time of the Israelites' residence in Egypt—the time between Jacob's bringing his family into Egypt and Moses leading them out. This, in the above table, is quoted from Exodus xii. 40, as 430 years. But in the Greek, this period of 430 years is said to include their residence in Canaan as well as their residence in Egypt, commencing with Abraham's leaving Haran ; and it thus shortens the residence in Egypt by 215 years. This certainly agrees better with the genealogies ; but it cannot be accepted as what the writer originally wrote.

THE SECOND OR HISTORICAL PORTION OF THE HEBREW CHRONOLOGY.

THIS is calculated backwards from the eclipse in the 5th of Nabopulassar, B.C. 621, by the help of the years mentioned in Ezekiel, Jeremiah, and the Books of Kings. In the Books of Kings we often meet with contradictory statements. The length of the reign, as there stated, does not always agree with the length as we should calculate it to be, when the writer gives us a date for its ending, and also a date for the end of the previous reign. The latter mode of determining the length seems to be of the two the more trustworthy. The contradiction can be reconciled only upon the supposition that many of the kings reigned jointly with their fathers, and had thus been nominally reigning several years before their real reign began. This is the supposition of many of the best Biblical critics. Our Table thus makes the reign of Solomon about thirty-nine years more modern than the received chronology, which, on the other hand, supposes each king of Judah to have counted his years from his father's death. Thus with us it becomes unnecessary to place an interregnum between Jeroboam II. of Israel and his son Zachariah, and a second interregnum between Pekah of Israel and Hosea, who dethroned him.

The received chronology, which may be seen in the margin of most Bibles, is formed by simply adding up together the length of every king's reign, overlooking the difficulty caused by the double method of reckoning employed in the Books of Kings, and overlooking the fact, certain in some cases, and probable in others, that a king's years were reckoned, not from his father's death, but from when he was associated with his father on the throne. If we had nothing to guide us but the Books of Chronicles, we should be driven to that mode of reasoning. But the Books of Kings teach us otherwise, and thus lead us to shorten the sum of the kings' reigns by thirty-nine years.

When the reigns of the Jewish kings come to an end, the Table is continued forwards by the help of Claudius Ptolemy, to the seventh year of Cambyzes, which is again fixed by an eclipse; and to the second year of Darius, when the Jews had leave to rebuild the Temple.

The quotations from the historians, by which the Table is formed, are placed in the Notes at the end of it.

TABLE OF HEBREW CHRONOLOGY

FROM THE REIGN OF DAVID TO THE REBUILDING OF THE TEMPLE.

B.C.	JUDAH.	ISRAEL.
1016	David in Hebron [1]	Ish-bosheth or Ish-baal
1008	DAVID	
976	SOLOMON [2]	
936	1 of Rehoboam - - -	1 of Jeroboam -
935	2 - - - -	2 - - -
934	3 - - - -	3 - - -
933	4 - - - -	4 - - -
932	5 - - - -	5 - - -
931	6 - - - -	6 - - -
930	7 - - - -	7 - - -
929	8 - - - -	8 - - -
928	9 - - - -	9 - - -
927	10 - - - -	10 - - -
926	11 - - - -	11 - - -
925	12 - - - -	12 - - -
924	13 - - - -	13 - - -
923	14 - - - -	14 - - -
922	15 - - - -	15 - - -
921	16 - - - -	16 - - -
920	17 - - - [3]	17 - - -
919	(18) 1 of Abijah - [4]	18 - - -
918	(19) 2 - - - -	19 - - -
917	(20) 3 . 1 of Asa - [5]	20 - - -
916	(21) 2 - - - -	21 . 1 of Nadab [6]
915	(22) 3 - - - -	22 . 2 . 1 of Baasha [7]
914	(23) 4 - - - -	2 - - -
913	(24) 5 - - - -	3 - - -
912	(25) 6 - - - -	4 - - -
911	(26) 7 - - - -	5 - - -
910	(27) 8 - - - -	6 - - -
909	(28) 9 - - - -	7 - - -
908	(29) 10 - - - -	8 - - -
907	(30) 11 - - - -	9 - - -

B.C.	JUDAH.				ISRAEL.			
906	(31)	12	of Asa	-	10	of Baasha	-	-
905	(32)	13	-	-	11	-	-	-
904	(33)	14	-	-	12	-	-	-
903	(34)	15	-	-	13	-	-	-
902	(35)	16	-	-	14	-	-	-
901	(36)	17	-	- [8]	15	-	-	-
900	18	-	-	-	16	-	-	-
899	19	-	-	-	17	-	-	-
898	20	-	-	-	18	-	-	-
897	21	-	-	-	19	-	-	-
896	22	-	-	-	20	-	-	-
895	23	-	-	-	21	-	-	-
894	24	-	-	-	22	-	-	-
893	25	-	-	-	23	-	-	-
892	26	-	-	-	24 . 1	of Elah	[9]	
891	27	-	-	-	2 . 1 . 1	of Omri &		
890	28	-	-	-	2 . 2	Tibni -	[10]	
889	29	-	-	-	3 . 3	-	-	-
888	30	-	-	-	4 . 4	-	-	-
887	31	-	-	-	5 . 5	-	-	-
886	32	-	-	-	6	of Omri alone	-	
885	33	-	-	-	7	-	-	-
884	34	-	-	-	8	-	-	-
883	35	-	-	-	9	-	-	-
882	36	-	-	-	10	-	-	-
881	37	-	-	-	11	-	-	-
880	38	-	-	-	12 . 1	of Ahab -	[11]	
879	39	-	-	-	2	-	-	-
878	40	-	-	-	3	-	-	-
877	41 . 1	of Jehoshaphat	[12]		4	-	-	-
876	2	-	-	-	5	-	-	-
875	3	-	-	-	6	-	-	-
874	4	-	-	-	7	-	-	-
873	5	-	-	-	8	-	-	-
872	6	-	-	-	9	-	-	-
871	7	-	-	-	10	-	-	-
870	8	-	-	-	11	-	-	-
869	9	-	-	-	12	-	-	-
868	10	-	-	-	13	-	-	-
867	11	-	-	-	14	-	-	-

B.C.	JUDAH.	ISRAEL.
866	12 of Jehoshaphat - -	15 of Ahab - -
865	13 - - - -	16 - - - -
864	14 - - - -	17 - - - -
863	15 - - - -	18 - - - -
862	16 - - - -	19 - - - -
861	17 - - - -	20 . 1 of Ahaziah [13]
860	18 - - - -	21 . 2 . 1 of Jeho- [14]
859	19 - - - -	22 . 2 ram - -
858	20 - - - -	3 - - - -
857	21 - - - -	4 - - - -
856	22 . 1 of Jehoram - [15]	5 - - - -
855	23 . 2 - - - -	6 - - [16]
854	24 . 3 - - - -	7 - - - -
853	25 . 4 - - - -	8 - - - -
852	5 - - - -	9 - - - -
851	6 - - - -	10 - - - -
850	7 - - - -	11 - - - -
849	{ 8 . 1 of Ahaziah - [17] 1 of Athaliah - [19]	{ 12 - - - - 1 . of Jehu - [18]
848	2 - - - -	2 - - - -
847	3 - - - -	3 - - - -
846	4 - - - -	4 - - - -
845	5 - - - -	5 - - - -
844	6 - - - -	6 - - - -
843	7 . 1 of Jehoash - [20]	7 - - - -
842	2 - - - -	8 - - - -
841	3 - - - -	9 - - - -
840	4 - - - -	10 - - - -
839	5 - - - -	11 - - - -
838	6 - - - -	12 - - - -
837	7 - - - -	13 - - - -
836	8 - - - -	14 - - - -
835	9 - - - -	15 - - - -
834	10 - - - -	16 - - - -
833	11 - - - -	17 - - - -
832	12 - - - -	18 - - - -
831	13 - - - -	19 - - - -
830	14 - - - -	20 - - - -
829	15 - - - -	21 - - - -
828	16 - - - -	22 - - - -
827	17 - - - -	23 - - - -

B.C.	JUDAH.	ISRAEL.
826	18 of Jehoash - - -	24 of Jehu - - -
825	19 - - - -	25 - - - -
824	20 - - - -	26 - - - -
823	21 - - - -	27 - - - -
822	22 - - - -	28 - - - -
821	23 - - - -	1 of Jehoahaz [21]
820	24 - - - -	2 - - - -
819	25 - - - -	3 - - - -
818	26 - - - -	4 - - - -
817	27 - - - -	5 - - - -
816	28 - - - -	6 - - - -
815	29 - - - -	7 - - - -
814	30 - - - -	8 - - - -
813	31 - - - -	9 - - - -
812	32 - - - -	10 - - - -
811	33 - - - -	11 - - - -
810	34 - - - -	12 - - - -
809	35 - - - -	13 - - - -
808	36 - - - -	14 - - - -
807	37 - - - -	15 . 1 of Jehoash [22]
806	38 . 1 of Amaziah - [23]	16 . 2 - - -
805	39 . 2 - - - -	17 . 3 - - -
804	40 . 3 - - - -	4 . 1 of Jeroboam
803	4 - - - -	5 . 2 II. jointly
802	5 - - - -	6 . 3 with his
801	6 . 1 of Azariah - [25]	7 . 4 father
800	7 . 2 when 16 years old,	8 . 5 - - -
799	8 . 3 jointly with his	9 . 6 - - -
798	9 . 4 father - - -	10 . 7 - - -
797	10 . 5 - - - -	11 . 8 - - -
796	11 . 6 - - - -	12 . 9 - - -
795	12 . 7 - - - -	13 . 10 - - -
794	13 . 8 - - - -	14 . 11 - - -
793	14 . 9 - - - -	15 . 12 - - -
792	15 . 10 - - - -	16 . 13 of Jerobam II.
791	16 . 11 - - - -	14 - - alone [24]
790	17 . 12 - - - -	15 - - - -
789	18 . 13 - - - -	16 - - - -
788	19 . 14 - - - -	17 - - - -
787	20 . 15 - - - -	18 - - - -

B.C.	JUDAH.	ISRAEL.
786	21 . 16 of Amaziah and	19 of Jeroboam II.
785	22 . 17 Azariah - -	20 - -
784	23 . 18 - - -	21 - - -
783	24 . 19 - - -	22 - - -
782	25 . 20 - - -	23 - - -
781	26 . 21 - - -	24 - - -
780	27 . 22 - - -	25 - - -
779	28 . 23 - - -	26 - - -
778	29 . 24 of Azariah or Uzziah	27 - - -
777	25 alone - [26]	28 - - -
776	26 - - -	29 - - -
775	27 - - -	30 - - -
774	28 - - -	31 - - -
773	29 - - -	32 - - -
772	30 - - -	33 - - -
771	31 - - -	34 - - -
770	32 - - -	35 - - -
769	33 - - -	36 - - -
768	34 - - -	37 - - -
767	35 - - -	38 - - -
766	36 - - -	39 - - -
765	37 - - -	40 - - -
764	38 - - -	41 . 1 of Zachariah [27]
763	39 - - - }	1 of Shallum [28]
762	40 - - - }	1 of Menahem [29]
761	41 - - - }	2 - - [30]
760	42 - - -	3 - - -
759	43 - - -	4 - - -
758	44 - - -	5 - - -
757	45 - - -	6 - - -
756	46 - - -	7 - - -
755	47 - - -	8 - - -
754	48 - - -	9 - - -
753	49 - - -	10 - - -
752	50 - - -	(11?) - - [30]
751	51 - - -	1 of Pekahiah [31]
750	52 - - -	2 - - -
749	1 of Jotham - [33]	1 of Pekah - [32]
748	2 - - -	2 - - -
747	3 - - -	3 - - -
		4 - - -

B. C.	JUDAH.	ISRAEL.
746	4 of Jotham - - -	5 of Pekah - -
745	5 - - -	6 - - -
744	6 - - -	7 - - -
743	7 - - -	8 - - -
742	8 - - -	9 - - -
741	9 . 1 of Ahaz - -	10 - - -
740	10 . 2 - - -	11 - - -
739	11 . 3 - - -	12 - - -
738	12 . 4 - - -	13 - - -
737	13 . 5 - - -	14 - - -
736	14 . 6 - - -	15 - - -
735	15 . 7 - - -	16 - - -
734	16 . 8 - - [34]	17 - - -
733	(17). 9 - - -	19 - - -
732	(18). 10 - - -	18 - - -
731	(19). 11 - - -	20 - - -
730	(20). 12 - - -	1 of Hoshea - [35]
729	13 - - -	2 - - -
728	14 - - -	3 - - -
727	15 . 1 of Hezekiah - [36]	4 - - -
726	16 . 2 - - -	5 - - -
725	3 - - -	6 - - -
724	4 - - [37]	7 - - -
723	5 - - -	8 - - -
722	6 - - [38]	9 Shalmanezzer king of
721	7 - - [39]	Assyria.
720	8 - - -	Sennacherib.
719	9 - - -	
718	10 - - -	
717	11 - - -	
716	12 - - -	
715	13 - - -	
714	14 - - -	Sennacherib's overthrow.
713	15 - - -	Berodach Baladan's
712	16 - - -	embassy.
711	17 - - -	
710	18 - - -	
709	19 - - -	
708	20 - - -	
707	21 - - -	

B.C.	JUDAH.	ASSYRIA.
706	22 of Hezekiah - -	Sennacherib.
705	23 - - -	
704	24 - - -	
703	25 - - -	
702	26 - - -	
701	27 - - -	
700	28 - - -	
699	29 - - -	
698	1 of Manasseh - [40]	
697	2 - - -	
696	3 - - -	
695	4 - - -	
694	5 - - -	
693	6 - - -	
692	7 - - -	
691	8 - - -	
690	9 - - -	
689	10 - - -	
688	11 - - -	
687	12 - - -	
686	13 - - -	
685	14 - - -	
684	15 - - -	
683	16 - - -	Esarhaddon
682	17 - - -	
681	18 - - -	
680	19 - - -	
679	20 - - -	
678	21 - - -	
677	22 - - -	
676	23 - - -	
675	24 - - -	
674	25 - - -	
673	26 - - -	
672	27 - - -	
671	28 - - -	
670	29 - - -	
669	30 - - -	
668	31 - - -	Sardanapalus
667	32 - - -	

B.C.	JUDAH.	ASSYRIA.
666	33 of Manasseh - -	Sardanapalus
665	34 - - - -	
664	35 - - - -	
663	36 - - - -	
662	37 - - - -	
661	38 - - - -	
660	39 - - - -	
659	40 - - - -	
658	41 - - - -	
657	42 - - - -	
656	43 - - - -	
655	44 - - - -	
654	45 - - - -	
653	46 - - - -	
652	47 - - - -	
651	48 - - - -	
650	49 - - - -	
649	50 - - - -	
648	51 - - - -	
647	52 - - - -	
646	53 - - - -	
645	54 - - - -	
644	55 - - - -	
643	1 of Amon - - [41]	
642	2 - - - -	
641	1 of Josiah - - [42]	
640	2 - - - -	
639	3 - - - -	
638	4 - - - -	
637	5 - - - -	
636	6 - - - -	
635	7 - - - -	
634	8 - - - -	
633	9 - - - -	
632	10 - - - -	
631	11 - - - -	
630	12 - - - -	
629	13 - - [43]	
628	14 - - - -	
627	15 - - - -	

B.C.	JUDAH.				BABYLON.			
626	16 of Josiah	-	-	-	1 of Nabopolassar	-	-	-
625	17	-	-	-	2	-	-	-
624	18	-	-	-	3	-	-	-
623	19	-	-	-	4	-	-	-
622	20	-	-	-	5	An eclipse	-	-
621	21	-	-	-	6	recorded [44]	-	-
620	22	-	-	-	7	-	-	-
619	23	-	-	-	8	-	-	-
618	24	-	-	-	9	-	-	-
617	25	-	-	-	10	-	-	-
616	26	-	-	-	11	-	-	-
615	27	-	-	-	12	-	-	-
614	28	-	-	-	13	-	-	-
613	29	-	-	-	14	-	-	-
612	30	-	-	-	15	-	-	-
611	31	-	-	-	16	-	-	-
610	{ 1 of Jehoahaz 1 of Jehoiakim }	[45]			17	-	-	-
609	2	-	-	-	18	-	-	-
608	3	-	-	-	19	1 of Nebuchad-	-	-
607	4	-	-	[46]	20	2 - nezzar	-	-
606	5	-	-	-	21	3	-	-
605	6	-	-	-	22	4	-	-
604	7	-	-	-	23	5	-	-
603	8	-	-	-	24	6	-	-
602	9	-	-	-	25	7	-	-
601	10	-	[Captivity	[47]	26	8	-	-
600	11	1 of Jehoiachin	or	of	27	9	-	-
599	2	1 of Zedekiah	-	[48]	28	10	-	-
598	3	2	-	-	29	11	-	-
597	4	3	-	-	30	12	-	[49]
596	5	4	-	-	31	13	-	-
595	6	5	-	-	32	14	-	-
594	7	6	-	-	33	15	-	-
593	8	7	-	-	34	16	-	-
592	9	8	-	-	35	17	-	-
591	10	9	-	-	18	-	-	[50]
590	11	10	-	-	19	-	-	-
589	12	11	1 of City destroyed	[51]	20	-	-	-
588	13	2	-	-	21	-	-	-
587	14	3	-	-				

B.C.	JUDAH.		BABYLON.
586	15 of Captivity	4 of City	22 of Nebuchad-
585	16 - - -	5 destroyed	23 nezzar
584	17 - - -	6 - -	24 "
583	18 - - -	7 - -	25 "
582	19 - - -	8 - -	26 "
581	20 - - -	9 - -	27 "
580	21 - - -	10 - -	28 "
579	22 - - -	11 - -	29 "
578	23 - - -	12 - -	30 "
577	24 - - -	13 - -	31 "
576	25 - - -	14 - [52]	32 "
575	26 - - -	15 - -	33 "
574	27 - - -	16 - -	34 "
573	28 - - -	17 - -	35 "
572	29 - - -	18 - -	36 "
571	30 - - -	19 - -	37 "
570	31 - - -	20 - -	38 "
569	32 - - -	21 - -	39 "
568	33 - - -	22 - -	40 "
567	34 - - -	23 - -	41 "
566	35 - - -	24 - -	42 "
565	36 - - -	25 - -	43 "
564	37 Jehoiachin re-	26 - -	44 . 1 of Evil [53]
563	leased from	27 - -	45 . 2 Merodach
562	prison	28 - -	46 . 3 "
561		29 - -	47 . 4 "
560		30 - -	48 . 1 of Neriglis-
559		31 - -	49 . 2 sor
558		32 - -	50 . 3 "
557		33 - -	51 . 4 "
556		34 - -	52 . 5 "
555		35 - -	53 . 1 of Na- [54]
554		36 - -	54 . 2 bonned
553		37 - -	55 . 3 "
552		38 - -	56 . 4 "
551		39 - -	57 . 5 "
550		40 - -	58 . 6 "
549		41 - -	59 . 7 "
548		42 - -	60 . 8 "
547		43 - -	61 . 9 "

B.C.	JUDAH.	BABYLON.
546	44 of City de-	62 of Nebuchad-
545	45 stroyed	63 nezzar or of
544	46 - -	64 Jeremiah's
543	47 - -	65 prophecy
542	48 - -	66 - -
541	49 - -	67 - -
540	50 - -	68 - -
539	51 - -	69 - -
538	52 Prince	70 - [55]
537	53 Zerub-	1 of Cyaxares II.
536	54 babel	2 or Darius the
535	55 - -	3 Mede and of
534	56 - -	4 Cyrus in Ba-
533	57 - -	5 bylon [56]
532	58 - -	6 "
531	59 - -	7 "
530	60 - -	8 "
529	61 - -	9 "
528	62 - -	1 of Cambyses
527	63 - -	2 "
526	64 - -	3 "
525	65 - -	4 "
524	66 - -	5 "
523	67 - -	6 "
522	68 - -	7 An eclipse re-
521	69 - -	8 corded [57]
520	70 - -	1 of Darius [58]
		2 "
516	The Temple finished - -	6 of Darius [59]
483	Esther made queen of Persia -	3 of Xerxes I. [60]
479	Ezra comes to Jerusalem - -	7 of Xerxes I. [61]
468	Eliashib chief priest - -	[62]
445	Nehemiah comes to Jerusalem -	20 of Artaxer-
433	Nehemiah returns to Susa -	32 [64] xes [63]

NOTES,

CONTAINING THE AUTHORITIES FOR THE FORE-
GOING TABLE OF THE KINGS OF JUDAH,
ISRAEL, AND BABYLON.

(1.) DAVID reigned forty years, namely, seven years and six months in Hebron over Judah, and then in Jerusalem thirty-three years over both Israel and Judah; 2 Samuel v. 5.

(2.) Solomon reigned forty years over all Israel; 1 Kings xi. 42. Some small portion of this may have been jointly with his father David.

(3.) Rehoboam, the son of Solomon, reigned seventeen years over Judah; 1 Kings xiv. 21.

(4.) Abijah or Abijam, the son of Rehoboam, began to reign in the eighteenth year of Jeroboam, and reigned three years over Judah; 1 Kings xv. 1.

To this reign, said to be of three years, we can only allow two; and the same dropping of a year will be observed in many other cases. This is explained in the Mishna, in treatise Rosh Hashanah, chap. i., where we read that the years of a king's reign were said to end with the New Year's day; and thus the first year of every reign may have consisted of only a few weeks, or even a few days. The same, of course, was the case with the last year of a reign. Thus the last year of one king and the first of his successor together only filled twelve months. This mode of reckoning the regnal years was used throughout Egypt, Babylonia, Syria, and Asia Minor, even for the Greek kings and Roman emperors who afterwards reigned over those countries; and

it will have to be attended to when we meet with authors who lived in those countries dating the baptism and crucifixion of Jesus by means of the years of an Emperor's reign.

(5.) Asa, the son of Abijam, began to reign over Judah in the twentieth year of Jeroboam, and reigned forty-one years; 1 Kings xv. 9.

(6.) Nadab, the son of Jeroboam, began to reign over Israel in the second year of Asa king of Judah, and reigned two years; 1 Kings xv. 25. This was in the twenty-first year of his father, and it contradicts 1 Kings xiv. 20, where we are told that Jeroboam reigned twenty-two years, unless we suppose that father and son reigned jointly.

(7.) Baasha slew Nadab, and began to reign over Israel in the third year of Asa; and he reigned in Tirzah twenty-four years; 1 Kings xv. 33.

(8.) In the thirty-sixth year of Asa, Baasha makes war against him; 2 Chron. xvi. 1. Here the years of Asa are probably counted in continuation of those of his grandfather, as Baasha died in the twenty-sixth year of Asa; 1 Kings xvi. 8.

(9.) Elah, the son of Baasha, began to reign in the twenty-sixth of Asa, and he reigned for two years; 1 Kings xvi. 8.

(10.) In the twenty-seventh of Asa, Zimri slew Elah, and reigned for seven days over Israel; 1 Kings xvi. 15. We have omitted his name from the table. Then Omri and Tibni divided the kingdom of Israel. Omri reigned twelve years, for the first six in Tirzah, and for the last six in Samaria, the new capital of Israel; 1 Kings xvi. 23. Tibni reigned five years, dying in the thirty-first of Asa, leaving Omri to reign for seven years over all Israel; 1 Kings xvi. 22.

(11.) Ahab, the son of Omri, began to reign in the thirty-eighth of Asa, and reigned over Israel in Samaria twenty-two years; 1 Kings xvi. 29.

(12.) Jehoshaphat, the son of Asa, began to reign over Judah in the fourth year of Ahab, and reigned twenty-five years; 1 Kings xxii. 41.

(13.) Ahaziah, the son of Ahab, began to reign over Israel in the seventeenth of Jehoshaphat, and reigned two years; 1 Kings xxii. 51. This contradicts 1 Kings xvi. 29, by

shortening Ahab's reign, unless we suppose that the son reigned jointly with his father, which is very possible, though not allowed by 1 Kings xxii. 40, which says he reigned in his stead.

(14.) Jehoram, the son of Ahab, succeeded his brother in the eighteenth year of Jehoshaphat, and reigned twelve years over Israel; 2 Kings iii. 1. The first two years of his reign were also jointly with his father, unless, as before remarked, we shorten the father's reign.

(15.) In the fifth year of Joram king of Israel, Jehoram, the son of Jehoshaphat, began to reign over Judah while his father was yet alive. He reigned eight years; 2 Kings viii. 16, 17. As the father and son are here said to have reigned jointly, as did David and his son Solomon, it is not unreasonable to suppose that it may have been the same with other kings, when the historian has not expressly said so.

(16.) We read in 2 Kings i. 17, that in the second year of Jehoram king of Judah, Jehoram of Israel succeeded to his brother Ahaziah. But this date can in no way be reconciled with what we have learned from other passages. See notes (14) and (15).

(17.) Ahaziah king of Judah began to reign in the eleventh year of Joram king of Israel, 2 Kings ix. 29, or in the twelfth year, according to 2 Kings viii. 25. This latter date seems the more probable. He reigned one year. He is called Jehoahaz in 2 Chron. xxi. 17.

(18.) Jehu, who had slain Jehoram king of Israel, reigned twenty-eight years; 2 Kings x. 36.

(19.) Ahaziah king of Judah was slain at the same time as Jehoram king of Israel, 2 Kings ix. 27, and he was succeeded by his mother Athaliah, who reigned seven years; 2 Kings xi. 4. In the verse before we are told that the child, the rightful king, was hidden for only six years. This may be explained by note (4), where we learn that six years may easily get counted for seven regnal years.

(20.) In the seventh year of Jehu, Jehoash began to reign over Judah. He reigned forty years; 2 Kings xii. 1.

(21.) In the twenty-third year of Jehoash, Jehoahaz, the son of Jehu, began to reign over Israel, and reigned seventeen years; 2 Kings xiii. 1.

(22.) In the thirty-seventh year of Jehoash of Judah,

Jehoash, the son of Jehoahaz, began to reign over Israel, and reigned sixteen years ; 2 Kings xiii. 10.

(23.) In the second year of Jehoash of Israel, Amaziah, the son of Jehoash of Judah, began to reign, and he reigned twenty-nine years ; 2 Kings xiv. 1 : he survived Jehoash of Israel fifteen years ; 2 Kings xiv. 17. Then his son began in the so-called twenty-seventh of Jeroboam ; 2 Kings xv. 1.

(24.) In the fifteenth year of Amaziah, Jeroboam began to reign over Israel, and reigned forty-one years ; 2 Kings xiv. 23. This can only be reconciled with other quotations by supposing that he then began to reign alone, after having reigned thirteen years jointly with his father.—See note (26). Here, then, we shorten the usual chronology.

(25.) Azariah, or Uzziah, son of Amaziah, reigned fifty-two years over Judah ; 2 Kings xv. 2. We place his beginning in the sixth year of his father's reign. If we followed the usual chronology, and made him begin in the twenty-seventh of Jeroboam, we should have to place an interregnum of twelve years in Israel between Jeroboam and his son Zachariah, as is done in the margin of the Authorized Version of the Bible.

(26.) In the twenty-seventh year of Jeroboam, says the historian, Azariah began to reign ; 2 Kings xv. 1. This was fifteen years after the death of Jehoash of Israel ; 2 Kings xiv. 17. Hence it is clear that Jeroboam had reigned twelve or thirteen years jointly with his father. Our Table agrees also with Josephus, who says, in *Antiq.* IX. ix. 3, that Uzziah, or Azariah, began to reign in the fourteenth year of Jeroboam. Josephus in neither case counts the years which they had reigned with their fathers.

(27.) In the thirty-eighth year of Azariah, Zachariah began to reign over Israel. He reigned for six months ; 2 Kings xv. 8. He succeeded on the death of Jeroboam his father ; 2 Kings xiv. 29 ; but the usual chronology places an interregnum between them.

(28.) In the thirty-ninth year of the reign of Uzziah, Shallum reigned for one month over Israel ; 2 Kings xv. 13.

(29.) Also in the thirty-ninth year of Azariah, or Uzziah, Menahem began to reign over Israel, and he reigned ten years ; 2 Kings xv. 17.

(30.) The forty-ninth year of Azariah is unaccounted for in Israel. Perhaps Menahem reigned eleven years.

(31.) In the fiftieth year of Azariah, Pekahiah, the son of Menahem, began to reign over Israel, and reigned two years; 2 Kings xv. 23.

(32.) In the fifty-second year of Azariah, Pekah, having slain Pekahiah, began to reign in Israel. He reigned twenty years; 2 Kings xv. 27.

(33.) In the second year of Pekah, Jotham, the son of Uzziah, began to reign over Judah, and reigned sixteen years; 2 Kings xv. 32.

(34.) In the seventeenth year of Pekah, Ahaz, the son of Jotham, began to reign, and reigned sixteen years; 2 Kings xvi. 1. This must be understood to mean that he then began to reign alone at the death of his father, after having reigned seven years as his colleague. This is confirmed by the quotations in the next note, and makes it unnecessary to place an interregnum between Pekah and Hoshea who slew him, as is done in the margin of the Authorized Version.

(35.) Hoshea began to reign over Israel in the twelfth year of Ahaz, and reigned nine years; 2 Kings xvii. 1. He slew his predecessor, Pekah, in the twentieth year of Jotham; 2 Kings xv. 30. The two dates mean the same year; though Jotham had been dead four years, his years were still used in dating events.

(36.) In the third year of Hoshea, Hezekiah began to reign over Judah, and reigned twenty-nine years; 2 Kings xviii. 1. But we place the beginning of his reign one year later, agreeably with the two following quotations.

(37.) The fourth year of Hezekiah was the seventh of Hoshea. In that year Shalmanezzer, king of Assyria, besieged Samaria; 2 Kings xviii. 9.

(38.) The sixth year of Hezekiah was the ninth of Hoshea. In that year the monarchy of Israel came to an end; 2 Kings xvii. 6; xviii. 10.

(39.) The year B.C. 721 was the first year of Mardoc Empadus king of Babylon, by an eclipse of the moon observed in Babylon, and recorded by Claudius Ptolemy. He is called Berodach Baladan in the Hebrew; and he sends an embassy to Hezekiah, perhaps about fifteen years before the death of the latter, or about B.C. 713; 2 Kings xx. 6—12. Mardoc Empadus died B.C. 709.

(40.) Manasseh succeeded his father, or perhaps grandfather, Hezekiah, and reigned fifty-five years; 2 Kings xxi. 1. Henceforth we have no kings of Israel for the historian to make use of their years in dating the kings of Judah; hence we are left in doubt whether the first year of Manasseh is to be counted as the same year as the last of Hezekiah, or as following it. The same remark applies to the first year of Amon, and to the first year of Josiah; and thus it would be equally correct to make the accession of Solomon more modern by one, by two, or by three years.

(41.) Amon succeeded his father Manasseh, and reigned two years; 2 Kings xxi. 19.

(42.) Josiah succeeded his father Amon, and reigned thirty-one years; 2 Kings xxii. 1.

(43.) Jeremiah begins to prophesy in the thirteenth year of Josiah; Jerem. xxv. 3.—See note (46).

(44.) The year B.C. 621 was the fifth year of Nabopolassar, king of Babylon, by an eclipse of the moon, recorded by C. Ptolemy.

(45.) Jehoahaz, called also Shallum, succeeded Josiah, and reigned three months; and then Jehoiakim, called also Eliakim, reigned eleven years; 2 Kings xxiii. 31, 36.

(46.) The fourth year of Jehoiakim was the first of Nebuchadnezzar, and the twenty-third from the thirteenth of Josiah; Jerem. xxv. 1. The Captivity in Babylon was to come to an end in seventy years from this time.

(47.) Jehoiachin, called also Jeconiah and Coniah, reigned three months, and was then carried into captivity in the eighth year of Nebuchadnezzar; 2 Kings xxiv. 8—12. His series of years, we shall see, was continued under the name of "the Captivity." Some writers make the first year of "the Captivity" follow the first year of Jehoiachin; but this is contradicted by these several passages.

(48.) Zedekiah, called also Mattaniah, reigned eleven years, while Jehoiachin was a captive in Babylon; 2 Kings xxiv. 18.

(49.) The fifth year of the Captivity is the year 30 of an era not named; Ezek. i. 1, 2. This is obviously of Nabopolassar.

(50.) The tenth year of Zedekiah is the eighteenth of Nebuchadnezzar; Jerem. xxxii. 1.

(51.) The city of Jerusalem was destroyed in the twelfth

year of the Captivity, Ezek. xxxiii. 21; and in the nineteenth of Nebuchadnezzar; 2 Kings xxv. 8. This shows that the years of "the Captivity" were counted from the king's accession, not from his being carried captive. Ezekiel, in chap. iv., says that Judah shall be punished for forty years, and Israel for three hundred and ninety years; meaning that Israel's guilt began three hundred and fifty years before that of Judah. Our Chronology places Israel's Revolt three hundred and thirty-six years before the Captivity, and three hundred and forty-seven years before the City and the Temple were destroyed. We thus differ either three or fourteen years from Ezekiel's reckoning.

(52.) The twenty-fifth year of the Captivity is the fourteenth of the City destroyed; Ezek. xl. 1.

(53.) Evil Merodach began to reign in the thirty-seventh year of the Captivity; 2 Kings xxv. 27.

(54.) The Nabonned of Cl. Ptolemy seems to be the colleague on the throne, and perhaps the father, of the Belshazzar of the Book of Daniel.

(55.) The Desolation of seventy years, mentioned in Jeremiah xxv. 11, came to an end in the first year of Cyrus; 2 Chron. xxxvi. 21; Ezra i. 1. The Jewish captives in Babylon then returned home under Prince Zerubbabel.

(56.) Xenophon, in his "Cyropædia," makes Cyaxares II. of Media the conqueror of Babylon; and the Book of Daniel says that it was Darius the Mede who overthrew the Babylonian monarchy. By some these two kings are thought to be the same; but by some their very existence is denied; and Cl. Ptolemy makes Cyrus of Persia the immediate successor of the last king of Babylon. But in favour of there having been such a Median conqueror, we may remark that Jerem. li. 11, and Isaiah xiii. 17, which are later additions to those books, both speak of the Medes as the conquerors of Babylon; and in Isaiah xxi. 2, those nations are spoken of as the joint conquerors. Cyrus reigned nine years.

(57.) The year B.C. 523 was the seventh of Cambyses, by an eclipse of the moon recorded by Cl. Ptolemy. Cambyses reigned eight years.

(58.) In the second year of Darius, Jerusalem had been punished seventy years; Zechariah i. 7, 12.

The years of the Babylonian kings, after the overthrow of

the Assyrians and before their own overthrow, are in Cl. Ptolemy fewer by one than in our table ; thus—

	As above.	In Cl. Ptolemy.
Nabopulassar .	18 years.	20 years.
Nebuchadnezzar .	43 „	43 „
Evil Merodach .	4 „	2 „
Neriglissor .	5 „	4 „
Nabonned .	17 „	17 „
	<hr/> 87	<hr/> 86

(59.) The building of the second Temple was finished in the sixth year of Darius (Ezra vi. 15) by Prince Zerubbabel ; Zechariah iv. 9.

(60.) Esther is made queen in Susa, the capital of Persia, by Ahasuerus, who reigned over one hundred and twenty-seven provinces, from India to Ethiopia ; Esther i. This was in the third year of his reign. He was probably Xerxes I. Her influence may have obtained for Ezra permission to return to Jerusalem.

(61.) In the seventh year of Artaxerxes, Ezra comes to Jerusalem as the Persian governor of the city ; Ezra vii. 8. This was probably in the reign of Xerxes I., called Ahasuerus in the Book of Esther. This was fifty-nine years after the Decree of Cyrus which allowed the first return of the Jews. See Daniel ix. 25, where forty-nine years only are allowed to what seems to be meant for this space of time.

(62.) Eliashib is chief priest ; Paschal Chronicle ; and Nehem. iii. 1.

(63.) In the twentieth year, probably of Artaxerxes Longimanus, Nehemiah comes to Jerusalem ; Nehemiah ii. 1.

(64.) Nehemiah returns to Susa, in the thirty-second year of Artaxerxes ; Nehem. xiii. 6.

BIBLICAL INDEX.

	PAGE
GENESIS i.—ii. 3. The Creation by Elohim, <i>God</i>	92
ii. 4—iv. The Creation by Jehovah God ; the Garden of Eden ; the temptation by the Serpent and the Fall ; Cain kills Abel ; Lamech descended from Cain	71
iv. 25, and part of 26, unite the two narratives	72
v.—xi. The genealogy of Lamech from Seth ; Noah and the Flood ; the Descent of the Nations, the genealogy of Abraham through Shem from Lamech	93
vi. 1—8. The Sons of God marry the daughters of men	98
vii. 1—5, and viii. 20—22. Noah sacrifices to Jehovah	140
ix. 26, 27. Japheth shall dwell in the tents of Shem	338
x. 22—xi. 9. Shem the father of the Semitic nations ; the Tower of Babel, and the confusion of tongues	180
xii.—xxv. 18. The Life of Abraham ; he pays tithes to Melchizedek ; the sacrifice on mount Moriah ; he buys the cave of Machpelah ; is the father of the Arab tribes	72
xii. 7. He builds an altar to Jehovah at Shechem	139
xii. 8. He builds an altar to Jehovah at Beth-el	163
xii. 10—xiii. 4. He visits Egypt	188
xiv. 1—16. The defeat of the four Kings	182
xvii. The covenant of circumcision ; Elohistie	74
xix. 29—38. Against Moab and Ammon	149
xx. xxi. Abraham dwells in Beer-sheba	182
xxi. 33. The grove at Beer-sheba	188
xxv. 1—6. The Arab children of Abraham	181
xxv. 19—xxxvi. 8. The lives of Isaac, Jacob, and Esau ; the Israelites descended from Jacob's sons	68
xxxvi. Isaac's altar at Beer-sheba	188
xxxvii. part of 40. Edom revolts	97
xxxviii. 10—22. Jacob promises to pay tithes to Jehovah in Beth-el	163
xxxvi. 9—43. The Edomites and the list of their kings	97
xxxvii. 2—1. The Life of Joseph ; Jacob's description of his sons	66
xxxviii. The birth of Pharez and Zarah	210
xlx. 29—32, and l. 13. Jacob buried in the cave of Machpelah	75

EXODUS. The laws written mostly between the reigns of Solomon and Jehoshaphat . . .	126
i. 8—ii. The sufferings of the Israelites in Egypt . . .	34
iii.—xi. Aaron and the plagues of Egypt . . .	98
v. 6—14. The task in making bricks.	34
vi. 2—9. The name of Jehovah not known to Abraham . . .	71
xii. 1—28 and 43—51. The feast of the Passover appointed . . .	98
xii. 37—39. The Israelites journey from Rameses to Succoth . . .	34
xiii. 17—20. They avoid the Philistines	34
xv. 1—21. The song of Moses at the Red Sea	127
xv. 22—xvi. 1. The desert of Shur and Sin	34
xvi. 16—30. The Sabbath to be kept	307
xvii. 8. The battle with Amalek	34
xviii. Elders appointed to help Moses in judging	126
xix. 1. Encampment in the desert of Sinai	34
xix. 2.—8. At the mount of God	34
xx. 1—17. The Ten Commandments	26
xx. 24—26. The altar of unhewn stones	81
xxi.—xxiii. 19. The Judgments	126
xxiii. 20—33. The treatment of the Canaanites	127
xxiv. 1—11. Seventy elders; Jehovah on a throne of sapphire	314
xxv.—xl. The heave offerings ordered and brought.	132
xxx. 11—16. The poll-tax of half a shekel	133
xxxii. 12—17. The Sabbath to be kept	307
xxxii. Aaron's golden calf; the Tables broken	106
xxxiv. 1—9. New Tables of the Law	106
xxxv. 1—3. The Sabbath to be kept.	307
LEVITICUS i.—xi. Ceremonial laws, addressed to Aaron and his sons	134
xii.—xv. The law of leprosy; leprosy in a house	145
xvi. The Scapegoat; the atonement	175
xvii. All sacrifices to be at one Place	176
xviii.—xx. and xxiii.—xxvii. Moral laws addressed to the people of Israel	305
xxi., xxii. Ceremonial laws addressed to Aaron and his sons	134
xxiii. The day of atonement	306
xxv. Levitical cities	306
NUMBERS i.—xxi. After the rise of priestly power	136
vii., viii. Gifts to the altar; the Levite's age for duty lowered	183
ix. 1—14. The passover in the second month	183
x. 29—32. The Israelites ask for a guide	34
xi. 16—30. Seventy elders appointed	314
xi. 34, 35. Journey to Burial-place of Taavah and village of Paran	34
xii. 1—15. Moses's foreign marriage defended	327
xii. 16. To the desert of Paran	34
xiii. 21—24. The spies go to Hebron	34
xv. 22—31. Sins of ignorance	137
xv. 32—36. The Sabbath to be kept	314
xvi. Korah the Levite's presumption	183
xx. 1. To Kadesh in the desert of Zin	34

	PAGE
NUMBERS xx. 14—22. The Edomites refuse a passage . . .	34
xxi. 4, and 10—20. The journey round Edom.	34
xxi. 5—9. Moses's copper serpent.	153
xxi. 14—18. The Book of the Wars, a lost poem . . .	36
xxi. 21—xxii. 1. The conquest of the land of the Amorites and of Bashan	35
xxi. 27—30. A poem on Sihon's victories over Moab . . .	4
xxii.—xxiii. 26. The history of Balaam	184
xxiii. 27—xxiv. 14. Balaam's third poetical speech . . .	292
xxiv. 14—19. Balaam's fourth poetical speech. The star to rise out of Jacob	292, 363
xxiv. 21, 22. The Kenites wasted by Ashur	364
xxiv. 23, 24. Ships from Chittim afflict Ashur	364
xxvi. 4—62. The noble families are registered	204
xxviii., xxix. National celebration of the Passover and other Feasts	203
xxxiii. The Journeys of the Israelites	182
xxxiv.—xxxvi. Cities given to the Levites	307
DEUTERONOMY i—iv., 43. Introduction	309
iv. 44.—xviii. 8, and xxviii.—xxx. Of Josiah's reign . . .	200
x. 6, 7. Part of the march out of Egypt	203
xiv. 22—29, a correction of xii. 18	218
xv. 1—18. Debtors are to be released	218
xvii. 14—20. The manner of the kingdom	100
xviii. 9—xxvii. Improved moral laws	293
xx. Law relating to war and conquest	100
xxvii. The altar near Shechem	295
xxvii. 4. Altered as to "Mount Ebal"	333
xxviii.—xxx. Added to under Zedekiah	218
xxxi. 9—13. The close of the Book in Zedekiah's reign . . .	382
xxxi. 16—22, and 30—xxxii. 44. The Song of Moses . . .	296
xxxiii. Moses's blessing	295
The Samaritan Pentateuch	333
JOSHUA, in continuation of Deuteronomy	220
vii. The son of Zarah's mean theft	210
viii. 30—35. The altar on Mount Ebal	335
xiv., xv. 13—19. Caleb the son of Jephunneh	308
xv. 2—4. The Boundary of the Land	308
xx.—xxii. The Levitical cities. The altar near Gilgal . . .	308
JUDGES ii. 6—iii. 6, in continuation of Joshua	308
iii. 7—xii., xvii., xviii. The oldest portion of the Bible . .	32
v. Deborah's Song	9
vi. The altar to Baal destroyed	140
xiii.—xvi. The history of Samson	16
xix.—xxi. Civil war against Benjamin	19
RUTH. David descended from a Moabitess	327
1 and 2 SAMUEL	289
1 SAMUEL. Its composition, the Books of Nathan and Gad . .	64
Book of SAMUEL	99
2 SAMUEL i. 19—27, from the Book of Jasher	65
1 and 2 KINGS	289
The history of Elijah and Elisha	316

	PAGE
1 KINGS xiii, the altar at Beth-el cursed	218
1 and 2 CHRONICLES	310
1 CHRONICLES v. 1, 2. The birthright belonged to Joseph not to Judah	364
EZRA, the Book of	288
iv. 6, an addition, not in 1'Esdras	289
iv. 7—vi. 18, and vii. 12—26, after Nehemiah's time	288
NEHEMIAH, the Book of	313
vii. 6—73. A quotation from Ezra	313
viii. 1—12. A quotation from 1 Esdras	313
viii. 13—18. A quotation, but not in Ezra or Esdras	313
xii. 1—26. Genealogies to the time of Alexander	337
xiii. 7—end. Nehemiah's second governorship	313
ESTHER, the Book of	296
JOB, after the return from the Captivity	264
PSALMS, the Book of	64
ii. Discontent of subject tribes	96
iv. The enemies are Sons of Men	323
ix. Thankfulness on relief from oppression	369
x. Complaint on oppression	368
xi. The writer refuses to leave the city.	171
xiv. By a captive	233
Verse 3 in the Greek, borrowed from Romans iii. 13—18	342
xvi. Future life	324
xviii. Jotham's thanksgiving for victory	381
xix. 7—14. Mentions Sins of Ignorance	263
xxii. Under Greco-Syrian oppression	366
xxiv. 7—10. The Ark is brought into the Temple	280
xxv. Alphabetic	262
xxxi. Perhaps by Jeremiah	228
xxxii. A penitential hymn	345
xxxiv. Alphabetic	262
xxxv. After the Captivity	262
xxxvi. The word Naham; Sons of Adam	292, 324
xxxvii. Alphabetic	262
xxxviii. During the Captivity	235
xxxix. During the Captivity	235
xl. Quotes Isaiah i. 11	262
xlii. and xliii. By a captive	234
xliv. Under Greco-Syrian oppression	366
xlv. On Solomon's Marriage	96
xlvi. On Hezekiah's Pool and Conduit	176
xlviii. On the Retreat of the Assyrians	177
xlix. Sons of Adam and Sons of Men	324
li. 18, 19. On Building the City Walls	321
liii. By a captive; the same as xiv.	233
lx. Under the Maccabees	365
lxi. By a captive, perhaps of Israel	156
lxii. Sons of Adam, and Sons of Men	323
lxiii. By a captive, perhaps of Israel	156
lxvi. Sons of Adam and Sons of Men	323
lxviii. On the Defeat of the Syrians on Mount Zalmon	124

	PAGE
PSALM lxix. Zion is to be rebuilt	258
lxx. Part of Psalm xl.	262
lxxii. In praise of Solomon	95
lxxiv. Under Antiochus Epiphanes	355
lxxv. Hopes for the recovery of Jerusalem	364
lxxvi. On the overthrow of Sennacherib's army	177
lxxviii. After the Captivity of Northern Israel	177
lxxix. Under Antiochus Epiphanes	356
lxxx. By a captive of Israel	235
lxxx. Under oppression ; Joseph spelt Jeho-seph	366
lxxxiii. In the reign of Hezekiah	176
lxxxiv. On the journey home from captivity	255
lxxxv. After the captivity	356
lxxxvii. Egypt called the Boaster	184
lxxxix. Egypt defeated ; Judah in affliction	234
xcvi. Praise to Jehovah	280
cii. The city in ruins	258
cvi. The captives better treated	237
cviii. The same as Psalm lx.	366
cix. Borrows from Zechariah	283
cx. David not to go out to battle	75
cxi. Alphabetic	262
cxii. Alphabetic	262
cxv. "They that fear Jehovah"	322
cxviii. "They that fear Jehovah"	322
cxix. Alphabetic	262
cxx. After the return home	261
cxxvi. Joy on the return, a song of the Steps	255
cxxvii. On rebuilding the temple	280
cxviii. The ark placed in the temple	280
cxv. "They that fear Jehovah"	322
cxv. On the dedication of the temple	281
cxv. By a captive in Babylon	245
cxlv. Taken from Psalms viii., xviii., and others	345
cxlv. Alphabetic	262
cxlvii. On the walls of Jerusalem	322
THE PROVERBS, i.—ix. Introduction	263
x.—xxii. 16. The Proverbs of Solomon in couplets	94
xxii. 17—xxiv. 22. The words of the Wise Men	95
xxiv. 23—34. Further words of the Wise Men	95
xxv.—xxix. Copied out for Hezekiah	185
xxx. The words of Agur	292
xxxi. 1—9. The words of king Lemuel	292
xxxi. 10—31. Alphabetic ; in praise of a virtuous woman	296
ECCLESIASTES, with Sadducean Philosophy	343
SONG OF SOLOMON, its versification	347
ISAIAH, i.—x. 4. In the reign of Ahaz	157
ii. 1—4. On the return from the Captivity	257
iv. 2—6. On the return from the Captivity	257
vii. 8. Further ruin of Ephraim	190
x. 5—34. In the reign of Hezekiah	178
xi. and xii. On the return from Captivity	245
xiii.—xiv. 23. During the Captivity	240

	PAGE
ISAIAH xiv. 24—xvii. In the reign of Hezekiah . . .	179
xvii. 4—11. After the Captivity . . .	261
xviii. The Jews in Abyssinia' . . .	261
xviii. 7. Abyssinia will send tribute . . .	371
xix. Under the Maccabees. . .	371
xx. Egypt conquered by Antiochus Epiphanes . . .	351
xxi. On the fall of Babylon . . .	244
xxii., xxiii. In the reign of Hezekiah . . .	178
xxiv.—xxvii. On the destruction of Babylon . . .	244
xxviii.—xxxi. In the reign of Hezekiah . . .	178
xxxii.—xxxv. With a quotation from chap. xiii. . .	241
xxxvi.—xxxix. Historical, in the Books of Kings . . .	179
xl.—lv. Joy on the return from Captivity . . .	253
lvi. 1—8. In the time of Nehemiah . . .	315
lvi. 9.—lix. Disappointment after the Return . . .	283
lx.—lxii. The walls may be rebuilt . . .	315
lxiii. 1—6. The destruction of Edom . . .	315
lxiii. 7—lxvi. Under Antiochus Epiphanes . . .	357
JEREMIAH i.—xvii. 18. Under Josiah and Jehoiakim . . .	224
iv., v. The Scythian'inroad . . .	197
x. 1—16; a verse written in Chaldee . . .	345
xiii. 1—11. Perhaps by Ezekiel . . .	224
xvi. 14, 15. After the return from the Captivity . . .	256
xvii. 19—27. In the time of Nehemiah . . .	314
xviii.—xx. In the reign of Jehoiakim . . .	225
xxi. In the reign of Zedekiah . . .	226
xxii. In the reign of Zedekiah . . .	225
xxiii. 1—8. After the return from the Captivity . . .	256
xxiii. 9—xxiv. In the reign of Zedekiah . . .	226
xxv. 1—14. The prophecy of 70 years . . .	256
xxv. 15—38. Against the Nations . . .	238
xxvi. In the reign of Jehoiakim . . .	225
xxvii.—xxix. In the reign of Zedekiah . . .	226
xxvii. 7. After the Captivity . . .	256
xxix. 10—14. On the return after 70 years . . .	256
xxx. When return from the Captivity seemed probable . . .	244
xxxi. 1—26. Vision on the return of Ephraim to Zion . . .	298
xxxi. 27—40. On rebuilding the city . . .	298
xxxii. 1—35. In the reign of Zedekiah . . .	226
xxxii. 36—xxxiii. On the return from the Captivity . . .	256
xxxiv. In the reign of Zedekiah . . .	226
xxxv., xxxvi. In the reign of Jehoiakim . . .	225
xxxvii., xxxviii. In the reign of Zedekiah . . .	226
xxxix.—xliii. Jerusalem taken by Nebuchadnezzar . . .	227
xliv. After the accession of Evil-Merodach . . .	238
xl.—xlix. 33. Written down by Baruch . . .	232
xlix. 34—li. On the Conquest of Babylon by the Medes . . .	243
li. 15—19. Repeated from ch. x. 12—16 . . .	244, 345
lii. Jerusalem taken by Nebuchadnezzar . . .	227
THE LAMENTATIONS i.—iii. Alphabetic . . .	228
iv. Edom to be punished. Alphabetic . . .	246
v. Perhaps under Antiochus Epiphanes . . .	358
EZEKIEL i.—xiv. 11. His visions . . .	223

	PAGE
EZEKIEL xiv. 12—23. Daniel and Job are praised with Noah	274
xv. xvi. Against Jerusalem and Judea	223
xvii. xviii. Zerubbabel ; God's justice	274
xix. A lament for Jehoahaz and Jehoiakim	212
xx. xxv. The nation is to be punished	223
xxvi., xxvii., and xxix.—xxxii. 16. Tyre and Egypt to be conquered by Babylon	235
xxvii. The trade of Tyre	236
xxviii. Tyre and Sidon to be conquered by the Persians	275
xxix. 1—12. Against Egypt for not helping Judea	223
xxxii. 17—32. Against Egypt ; hell is described	223
xxxiii.—xxxvii. Against the Shepherds of Israel	275
xxxiii. 21, 22. The city is destroyed	224
xxxviii., xxxix. Gog is threatened	241
xl.—xliv. The temple is described	277
xlvi.—xlviii. The land is divided	279
DANIEL i. The prophet in Babylon	272
ii.—vi. Under Nebuchadnezzar, Belshazzar and Darius	352
vii. Under Belshazzar ; the four beasts	353
vii. 9—14. After the Christian Era	354, 376
viii. The ram ; the he-goat ; its mean horn	354
ix. Under Darius ; the seventy weeks	374
x.—xii. Under Cyrus ; the wars of Alexander's successors	354
HOSEA, in the reign of Hezekiah	187
JOEL, on the invasion by Tiglath-pileser	153
ii. 28—iii. 8. On the return from the captivity	257
iii. 18—21. Egypt and Edom threatened	241
AMOS, in the reign of Ahaz	162
ix. 11—15. On the return from the Captivity	257
OBADIAH, during the Captivity	231
JONAH, in forgiveness of Nineveh	328
MICAH, i—vi. In the reign of Hezekiah	186
i. 15, and ii. 13. The flight of the king	170
iv., v. After the return from Captivity	257
vii. The godly man hath perished	284
vii. 11—13. On the rebuilding of the city walls	314
NAHUM, on the destruction of Nineveh	205
HABAKKUK, the Book of	211
ZEPHANIAH i. and ii.	212
iii. 1—13. Jerusalem is pardoned	242
iii. 14—20. The return from Captivity is expected	242
HAGGAI, in the reign of Darius	283
ZECHARIAH i.—viii. In the reign of Darius	281
ix., x. In the reign of Hezekiah	186
ix. 11—17. Against the Greeks of Syria	367
xi. In the reign of Menahem	147
xii.—xiv. After the death of Josiah	213
xiv. 21. Dealers in the temple are blamed	370
MALACHI, in the time of Nehemiah	319
THE SEPTUAGINT, or Greek Translation	339
THE APOCRYPHA, the additions to the above	378
The Wisdom of Jesus the son of Sirach	348
ESTHER xi.—xvi.	352

ON THE JOURNEYS AND EPISTLES

OF THE

APOSTLE PAUL

BY

SAMUEL SHARPE.

P R E F A C E.

THE following pages have been printed because the author thinks that the usual opinion about the order in which the Epistles were written is erroneous. From the order in which they have been placed in the more popular lives of St. Paul, critics have found an inconsistency in the mention of many of the personal events, and in the apostle's change of opinion as to the Jews. They have thus thrown doubts upon the genuineness of some of the Epistles, and grave charges against the trustworthiness of the Acts of the Apostles, even when the writer is stating facts within his own personal knowledge. These doubts, the Author thinks, may be wholly removed, and agreement with the Acts restored, by placing the Epistles in a different order.

As what he considers the error has arisen from a few mistranslated and misunderstood passages in the New Testament, it will be best to consider these first, before going to our main purpose. These passages are the following :—

1. In 1 Thess. iii. 5, the little word “also” has been dropped in the Authorized Version. Here the apostle, after stating that, on being driven away from Thessalonica by the riots, he had sent back Timothy “to establish and comfort” them about their faith, adds, “I also,” that is, a second time, “sent to know your faith, whether the tempter have tempted you, and lest our labour should have been in vain.” We should thus place this Epistle not so early as when Timothy first rejoined Paul from Thessalonica, which was at Corinth (Acts xviii. 5), but two or three years later, after he

had been sent into Macedonia a second time (Acts xix. 22), and had rejoined Paul at Philippi (Acts xx. 4).

2. In 1 Thess. ii. 18, we may make a trifling correction, and for "once and again" we should read, with greater exactness, "both once and also a second time"—thus pointing to two occasions when Paul was in Macedonia, and was hindered from visiting Thessalonica.

3. In Galat. ii. 1, instead of "Then, fourteen years after, I went up again to Jerusalem," we should read, "Then, in the course of fourteen years, I again went up to Jerusalem." Thus Paul puts no date to this second journey to Jerusalem, but rather puts a date to the Epistle; it was written fourteen years after the visit to Jerusalem mentioned in chap. i. 18. The misunderstanding this passage has led many critics to charge a want of accuracy upon the writer of the Acts, who does not put so long a time as fourteen years between the visits to Jerusalem.

Another passage, which needs a similar correction, in rendering the same preposition, is Acts xxiv. 17, where, instead of "Now, after many years, I came to bring alms to my nation," we should read, "Now, during several years, I came, bringing alms." Paul says that, not once, but several times, he brought alms to Jerusalem. These journeys with alms are mentioned in Acts xi. 30, xviii. 22, and xxi. 17.

There are eight other places in the New Testament where the same Greek preposition is, in the same way, followed by a noun of time in the genitive case; and in all these places the A. V. avoids the above mistakes, except in Mark ii. 1, where we have "after some days," instead of the more correct rendering, "in a few days." But here, as the time is indefinite, the meaning is the same in either case.

4. In Acts xx. 3, the A. V. has, "As he was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia." Here we lose the information that the apostle changed his purpose; and we should read, "As he was about to have sailed to Syria, it became his purpose to return through Macedonia;" and he accordingly went by land as far as Philippi.

5. In Acts xx. 4, the A. V. has, "And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians Aristarchus, &c." This should not be "into Asia," but "as far as Asia;" and it certainly means, "until he took ship for

Asia," which he did at Philippi. Moreover, the sentence is ungrammatical, and should be left so; thus, "And there went with him Sopater of Berea as far as Asia." The others sailed, either before him or with him, to Asia; while Sopater turned back at Philippi.

6. In 1 Cor. v. 9, as in v. 11, ix. 15, and elsewhere, we should read, "I have written," meaning, in this Epistle; not "I wrote," as if in a former Epistle. There are several other passages which support us in saying that Paul sometimes uses the Aorist for the Preterperfect tense; and it is thus unnecessary to suppose that we have lost an earlier Epistle to the Corinthians.

7. Another important change which should be made is one not of translation, but of comment. It consists in separating, from the Epistle to the Romans, chapters xii.—xv. 7 and xvi. 1—20, which appear to have been parts of an epistle sent to friends at Ephesus, and which, when removed, leave the Epistle to the Romans complete. The date of the Epistle to the Romans has usually been fixed by words in these Fragments to Ephesus. When they are removed, another and a much earlier date may be given to the Epistle.

Those who consider that no such division is to be made in the Epistle, and that the friends to whom Paul sends greetings, in chap. xvi., were living at Rome, are driven to the violent conjecture that Aquilas and Priscilla, after leaving Rome (Acts xviii. 2) and sailing with Paul to Ephesus (Acts xviii. 18), where they were living when the First Epistle to the Corinthians was written (xvi. 19), had gone back to Rome to receive Paul's greetings there in this Epistle to the Romans, and had again returned to Ephesus to receive his greetings when Paul wrote from Rome to Timothy at Ephesus (2 Tim. iv. 19). They are also met with the difficulty that, when Paul was carried prisoner to Rome, he found no friends there (Acts xxviii).

The Fragments to Ephesus are distinguished by being written to old friends and disciples, some of whom had suffered violence with Paul in that city; and not to strangers of Jewish origin, as was the Epistle to the Romans. In these Fragments there is a correction to be made, according to the best MSS., namely, "Epinetus, who is the first fruits of Asia;" that is, of Ephesus, not "of Achaia," as in the A. V.

The result of these criticisms is to place the Epistle to the Romans much earlier than it has lately been placed, namely, during the apostle's first visit to Corinth, before he had heard of the Jews being driven out of Rome (Acts xviii. 1); and to place the Epistles to the Thessalonians much later than they have been placed, namely, during the last visit to Philippi (Acts xx. 3, 6).

These changes are important. They make the apostle's efforts, as described in his Epistles, agree with his efforts as described in the Acts. We thus learn that his feelings towards the Jews were always changing gradually, and in the same direction. Both the Epistles and the Acts show that he began his ministry hopeful of being able to persuade the Jewish Christians that they were wrong in requiring Gentile converts to Christianity to submit to the Jewish ordinances; and both tell us that he found his arguments very much wasted on the Jews.

Another result is, that we find a perfect agreement in the biographical details of the apostle's life, as gathered from his own writings. We have no need to suppose that there was another Epistle to Corinth, now lost, or another journey to Greece, not mentioned in the Acts, or another imprisonment in Rome. There is, of course, some difference in the line of argument between those Epistles written to Jews, and those to Gentile converts; and between those Epistles written before the Jews had made an attempt upon his life, and had put him in prison in Jerusalem, and those written from Rome after that ill-treatment; and between those written to churches and those written to his young companions, Timothy and Titus; but no difference appears beyond what the case required. Equally satisfactory is it as removing some contradiction between Paul's Epistles and that part of the Acts which relates to Paul. The mistranslation of Galat. ii. 1 and Acts xxiv. 17 had made a serious difference between them as to the facts.

It is almost unnecessary to remark, that the Author does not class the Epistle to the Hebrews among those written by Paul.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Introduction, dates of the public events, the custom of translating names	- 423
Paul's conversion to Christianity (Acts ix. 1—9)	- 424
He dwells at Damascus (Acts ix. 10—22)	- 426
His journey from Damascus to Jerusalem ; he is brought to Antioch (Acts ix. 23—xi. 26)	- 426
His second journey to Jerusalem, and return to Antioch (Acts xi. 27—xii.) A.D. 44	- 427
His first missionary journey to Cyprus (A.D. 48), to Pamphylia, Pisidia, and Lycaonia ; his return to Antioch (Acts xiii. xiv.)	- 427
His third visit to Jerusalem ; the council ; his return to Antioch (Acts xv. 1—35)	- 428
His second missionary journey ; to Cilicia, Phrygia, Galatia, Macedonia, and Corinth (Acts xv. 40—xviii. 1)	- 429
<i>The Epistle to the Romans</i>	- 430
His stay at Corinth (A.D. 52) (Acts xviii. 2—18)	- 431
He sails to Ephesus, and then to Cæsarea ; his fourth visit to Jerusalem, and his return to Antioch (Acts xviii. 18—22)	- 432
His third missionary journey ; to Galatia and Phrygia, and return to Ephesus (Acts xviii. 23 ; xix. 1)	- 432
His stay at Ephesus (Acts xix.)	- 433
<i>The First Epistle to the Corinthians</i>	- 434
His fourth missionary journey ; the second to Greece (Acts xx. 1—4.)	- 435
<i>The Fragment to Ephesus</i> (Rom. xii. — xv. 7, and xvi. 1—20)	- 437
His stay at Philippi (Acts xx. 4, 5,)	- 437
<i>The second Epistle to the Corinthians</i>	- 438
<i>The first Epistle to the Thessalonians</i>	- 438

	PAGE
<i>The second Epistle to the Thessalonians</i> - -	- 439
<i>The Epistle to the Galatians</i> - - -	- 440
His fifth journey to Jerusalem (Acts xx. 6—xxi. 17.)	- 441
His imprisonment at Jerusalem and Cæsarea (Acts xxi. 17—xxvi.) - - - -	- 442
His voyage to Rome (Acts xxvii. xxviii. 16) -	- 443
His imprisonment at Rome (Acts xxviii. 16—31.) -	- 444
<i>The Epistle to the Ephesians</i> - - -	- 444
<i>The Epistle to Philemon</i> - - - -	- 445
<i>The Epistle to the Colossians</i> - - -	- 446
<i>The Epistle to the Philippians</i> - - -	- 447
His release from prison - - - -	- 447
<i>The Epistle to Titus</i> - - - -	- 447
<i>The second Epistle to Timothy</i> - - -	- 448
He leaves Rome and goes to Ephesus and Macedonia	- 449
<i>The first Epistle to Timothy</i> - - -	- 449

INTRODUCTION.

As a first step towards rightly understanding Paul's Epistles, and the workings of his mind during his eventful life, we should begin by placing the Epistles in the order in which they were written. We must do this by comparing the circumstances and places mentioned in each, with the Apostle's journeys as mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles. As neither in the Epistles nor in the Acts is there much mention of time, we must be guided less by the years of his life than by the map of his travels.

The public events which happened during the time of Paul's ministry are fixed with great probability, as below, by Messrs. Conybeare and Howson, in their work on the Apostle, and it is unnecessary to repeat their arguments, which are founded on a variety of authorities:—

- A.D. 44. King Herod Agrippa I. dies.
- „ 52. The Emperor Claudius expels the Jews from Rome.
- „ 54. Nero becomes Emperor on the death of Claudius.
- „ 60. Porcius Festus succeeds Felix as governor of Judea.
- „ 64. The fire at Rome ; Nero persecutes the Christians.

Unfortunately, the years when Sergius Paulus was proconsul of Cyprus, and Gallio proconsul of Achaia, are not so certainly known.

By these dates, but chiefly by the year when Porcius Festus came into Judea as governor, the years of Paul's life are to be fixed. But as we are never told in history how many months were spent on each journey, and are only once or twice told how long the Apostle dwelt at each place, the

intervals of time can only be stated by rather uncertain conjecture. It is, however, sufficiently clear that he became a Christian shortly before A.D. 40, and that we lose sight of him before A.D. 64.

The Romans, when in Judea and in other parts of the East, very much used the Greek language; and the Jews when using that language were in the habit of giving to their names a European form, and they often translated them into Greek names of the same meaning. Thus Saul of Tarsus is usually known by his Roman name of Paulus, or Paul. Among the translated names is that of the Apostle Cephas, *a rock*, which in Greek is Petrus, or Peter, having the same meaning; and in the same manner Jacobus, or James, becomes Cleopas, both meaning *a supplanter or thief*. Other names in the New Testament are shortened in familiarity; thus Epaphras is the same person as Epaphroditus, Sopater as Sosipater, Prisca as Priscilla, and when the slave Onesimus becomes a friend he receives the longer name of Onesiphorus. So Silas is the same as Sylvanus, and Lucius as Luke and Lucas.

From these examples of the playful change of names we see that the Roman name Sylvanus, derived from Sylva, *a wood*, may very possibly be the same as Lucius, derived from Lucus *a grove*; and thus Silas, who travelled with Paul, may be the same person as Sylvanus, who is joined with him in the Epistle to the Romans, as Lucius, who is mentioned by Tertius in Rom. xvi. 21, and as Luke the beloved physician. Lucius of Cyrene was probably a different person. This allows us to consider Luke the reputed author of the Third Gospel, and also of the Acts, as the same person as Silas, who shows himself to be the writer of the Acts in the narrative.

PAUL'S CONVERSION TO CHRISTIANITY (Acts ix. 1-9).

Paul's conversion to Christianity took place on his journey from Jerusalem to Damascus, whither he was going to persecute the Christians. He describes it in his Second Epistle to the Corinthians, chap. xii., as a revelation from heaven; and we naturally ask what was then revealed to him, what was the great truth at which he then arrived? It was nothing that could be proved to be true by human testimony; for in his First Epistle to the Corinthians he

quotes the apostles and disciples as witnesses for the asserted facts relating to Christ; and in his Epistle to the Galatians he says that he learned his Christianity from no apostle. He learned it by a voice from heaven, that is, from his own conscience. He was going to be a persecutor, and the voice from within, or from heaven, told him that he was going to do wrong. He had been educated most strictly as a Jew, fully believing that the Jews alone were God's people; and the voice from within told him that God's care reached to all his creatures, or in Jewish language, that the Gentiles also, if they had faith in God, might become children of Abraham. He knew that Christ had taught that God was the Father of all mankind, and that the Gentiles, when willing, ought to be allowed to share the Jews' advantages. As he tells us, he did not learn the truth of this from the apostles. He recognized the full truth of what Jesus had been teaching, from his own conscience, and more truly than did the other apostles, who would not all give up their old prejudices. This new view, that he had been brought up in error, that the exclusive policy of the Pharisees was narrow bigotry, came upon him like a voice from heaven. He did not, however, reject the teachings of the Scriptures; but he thought that he saw a hidden meaning in them, a mystery which he could explain. He says in the Epistle to the Ephesians that God had made known to him the mystery of His will, namely, that from the beginning he had purposed in the fulness of times to gather under one head all men, those living and those already dead.

When this new light broke upon Paul he saw two tasks before him. One was to persuade the Gentiles to put away their idol-worship, and the sensual vices which that worship encouraged, and to embrace the religious truths of Judaism, unencumbered with its ceremonial law. The other was to persuade the Jews, the possessors of these purer religious truths, to admit the Gentiles to join with them in worship without requiring them to come under the bondage of the Levitical Law, and the Tradition which was heavier than the Law. In the former task we shall note Paul's success as we follow him in his missionary journeys among the Gentiles. For the latter task we shall read, more particularly in the Epistle to the Romans, the arguments which he made use of; but in the course of his ministry we shall discover fewer signs of his success among the Jews.

It is unfortunate for that religion of which Paul was so able and earnest an advocate, that the power which he shows in his controversial Epistles has led his admirers to look to them for his religious opinions, rather than to those Epistles in which he had no other aim than to set forth the truths of Christianity.

PAUL DWELLS AT DAMASCUS (Acts ix. 10-22).

Paul had fallen to the ground and lost his sight on his journey to Damascus; and he dated his conversion and change of character to the moment of this misfortune. On reaching Damascus he was three days before he recovered (Acts ix. 1-9).

He then retired for some time into the neighbouring parts of Arabia, and again came to Damascus (Gal. i. 17).

He was well received there by the brethren whom he came to persecute, and he joined them in preaching Christianity boldly (Acts ix. 22); and there he lived for three years (Gal. i. 18).

PAUL'S FIRST JOURNEY TO JERUSALEM. HE SETTLES AT ANTIOCH (Acts ix. 23—xi. 26).

After three years spent in preaching at Damascus, Paul went up to Jerusalem to see the Apostle Peter. There, however, he only spent fifteen days (Gal. i. 18). Barnabas brought him to the Apostles, and told them of his success in preaching Christianity (Acts ix. 27).

He had left Damascus because the Jews sought to kill him; and when he came to Jerusalem he had to leave that city because there the Grecians sought to kill him (Acts ix. 23-29). His new character made him hateful in Damascus, and his former character in Jerusalem. His friends then brought him to Cæsarea on the coast, where he took ship and sailed for Tarsus in Cilicia, his place of birth (Acts ix. 30).

At this time the persecution of the Greek Jews, who had more readily accepted Christianity than the Hebrews, had driven the Grecians out of Jerusalem, as it had before led to the death of Stephen. When thus scattered they had preached among the Jews of Phenicia, Cyprus, and Antioch with great success. The Apostles, hearing of this success, had sent Barnabas down to Antioch, and he, knowing how useful Paul could be to them, went to Tarsus to fetch him, and thus brought him to Antioch. There he spent a year (Acts xi. 26).

PAUL'S SECOND JOURNEY TO JERUSALEM (Acts xi. 27—xii.).

On hearing of a scarcity of food in Judea, the brethren at Antioch sent Barnabas and Paul with relief to the poor of Jerusalem (Acts xi. 30). They took with them Titus, a young Greek, whom Paul engaged as a servant and companion in his work. Paul circumcised him as a convert, not, as he says, because it was necessary, but because of the false brethren who were jealous of their claiming liberty from the bondage of the law. At Jerusalem there was some difference of opinion, which led to James and Peter and John agreeing that Peter should go out as an apostle to the Jews, and that Barnabas and Paul should go to the Gentiles (Gal. ii. 1-10).

About this time King Herod Agrippa I., who had been a persecutor of the Christians, died (Acts xii.). This was, perhaps, in A.D. 44. Christianity continued to spread widely.

Barnabas and Paul returned from Jerusalem to Antioch, bringing with them John Mark (Acts xii. 25), and no doubt the young Titus, who seems usually to have accompanied Paul, though he is not often mentioned. Mark was the nephew or cousin of Barnabas (Col. iv. 10).

PAUL'S FIRST MISSIONARY JOURNEY (Acts xiii. xiv.).

The disciples at Antioch sent forth Barnabas and Paul to spread Christianity. They took with them John Mark as companion to Barnabas, and no doubt Titus as companion to Paul. From Seleucia, the port of Antioch, they sailed for the island of Cyprus, where Barnabas was among friends. There, at the town of Paphos, the Roman governor, Sergius Paulus, bearing the title of proconsul, was converted from Paganism by the Apostle's preaching (Acts xiii. 12).

From Paphos they sailed to Perga in Pamphylia; and there John Mark left them, and returned to Jerusalem (Acts xiii. 13).

They preached throughout Pamphylia, Pisidia, and Lycaonia, in every place addressing themselves both to Jews and Gentiles. By the Gentiles they were listened to favourably, but some of the Jews were stirred up to anger against them. Both from Antioch in Pisidia, and from Iconium, they were driven away by the Jews, and in the latter place Paul was attacked with stones. They fled to Lystra and

Derbe; and there also they were well received by the Greeks, but pursued by the Jews. They then returned to Antioch in Syria, and gave to their friends an account of their success among the Gentiles (Acts xiv. 27). This journey may have occupied the whole of one summer.

At Antioch they stayed some time (Acts xiv. 28). While they were there Peter came down to them from the Apostles at Jerusalem. At first he made no objection to Paul's conduct in admitting Gentiles to Christian fellowship without requiring them to submit to the Jewish rites. But James, and probably John, had not adopted such a view of Christianity; and when messengers from James came down to Antioch, Peter separated himself from Paul and Barnabas and the Gentile converts; he would no longer eat with the Gentiles (Gal. ii. 11-14).

In order to heal this sad dispute they determined that Paul and Barnabas and Peter should go up to Jerusalem to learn the opinion of the apostles and elders at the capital (Acts xv. 2).

PAUL'S THIRD VISIT TO JERUSALEM; THE COUNCIL. (Acts xv. 1-35).

As Paul and his companions passed through Phenicia and Samaria, they caused great joy to the brethren by declaring the ready conversion of the Gentiles. At Jerusalem a council of the apostles and elders was held, and after hearing an account of the numbers who had been converted by Paul and Barnabas, they resolved not to check this good work by requiring the Gentile converts to come under any other part of the Jewish ceremonial law than to abstain from meat which had been offered to idols, and from meat which had been killed by strangling, and thus had the blood in it.

This resolution of the Council was sent to Antioch by the hands of Judas, surnamed Barsabas, and Silas. These two went down with Paul and Barnabas to Antioch (Acts xv. 30). Silas, who had only come to Antioch as a messenger, now thought proper to remain there, and with Paul and Barnabas and others continued teaching and preaching the word of the Lord (Acts xv. 35).

After some time so spent at Antioch Paul proposed to Barnabas that they should make a second journey to the cities which they had before visited. But when Barnabas pro-

posed to take with them John Mark, Paul objected, because Mark on the former journey had quitted them in Pamphylia. So they agreed to go different ways ; and Barnabas took Mark and sailed for Cyprus (Acts xv. 39).

PAUL'S SECOND MISSIONARY JOURNEY (Acts xv. 40—
xviii. 1).

Paul chose Silas for his companion, and we shall be able to discover that Silas was the writer of the Book of Acts by the greater fulness of the narrative, when he says that Silas was present with the Apostle. They went northward through Syria, and then eastward through Cilicia, confirming the churches before planted there. They then came to Derbe and Lystra in Lycaonia, places which they had visited before. There Paul took into his service the young Timothy, and circumcised him because his mother was a Jewess, although his father had been a Greek (Acts xvi. 3).

They passed through Phrygia, Galatia, and Mysia, and came to Troas, the port whence vessels sailed for Europe (Acts xvi. 11).

Sailing from Troas they came to the island of Samothracia, and next day to Neapolis, where they landed, and went up to Philippi, a chief city of Macedonia (Acts xvi. 12).

At Philippi they made some little stay. There was probably no synagogue or body of Jews there. But they preached to the Greeks, and Paul's preaching gave such offence to some who made a profit by soothsaying, that a disturbance arose, and Paul and Silas were thrown into prison and beaten with rods. When they were allowed to depart they left the city (Acts xvi. 40).

They then passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia and came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue ; and there he preached ; but he made more converts among the Greeks (Acts xvii. 4).

The Jews who did not join him were very angry with him, and made an assault upon the house in which he dwelt, and drew Jason, the owner, before the magistrates, and Paul with his friends had to leave the city by night (Acts xvii. 10).

Thence they went to Berea, where also there was a synagogue. There the Jews received him more favourably ; but

when the less friendly Jews of Thessalonica came there after him he had to leave Berea also (Acts xvii. 13).

From Berea he sent back Silas and Timothy to Thessalonica to continue the work he had been forced to leave undone (1 Thess. iii. 2), and directed them to follow him to Athens (Acts xvii. 15).

At Thessalonica and Berea he had, however, made some valuable friends, of whom we shall hear more hereafter. Among these were Jason and Sosipater, who probably accompanied him to Athens and Corinth (Rom. xvi. 21). Whether they went by land or by sea is doubtful, as Silas the writer of the narrative, was not with him; but they probably went by sea.

At Athens Paul preached to the Greeks on Mars' Hill, but without making many converts (Acts xvii. 22).

From Athens he came to Corinth. There Timothy and Silas rejoined him (Acts xviii. 5); and there he stayed a year and six months, teaching the word of God among them (Acts xviii. 11).

At Corinth the sight of ships sailing for Italy may naturally have raised in the Apostle's mind the wish to visit Rome; and at Corinth he seems to have written his Epistle to the Romans.

THE EPISTLE TO THE ROMANS,

Omitting Chap. xii.—xv. 7, and xvi. 1-20.

ITS DATE.

This Epistle was written after Paul had travelled widely, preaching from Jerusalem to Illyricum (xv. 19); after he had lately visited Macedonia and Achaia in order to receive their collections for the poor of Jerusalem, which he was then carrying to that city (xv. 26); while Jason and Sosipater were with him, who may have accompanied him from Macedonia, and also Timothy and Lucius, whom we suppose to be the same person as Silas (xvi. 21). That it was written from Corinth we judge because Erastus, who is styled Chamberlain of the city, dwelt at Corinth (2 Tim. iv. 20).

It was written before he had heard of the Jews being driven out of Rome by the Emperor Claudius, as Paul was never again in Corinth after the Jews had permission to return to Rome.

It was written before he found how hopeless was the task

of persuading the Jews to admit the Gentile converts into their fellowship, as he soon found at Corinth (Acts xviii. 6), and at Ephesus (Acts xix. 9), and as he declares in his First Epistle to the Thessalonians.

ITS CONTENTS.

Paul writes to the Jews of Rome as to strangers, his equals, with whom he should reason, not as to his disciples, whom he may teach. He grants to the Jews a superiority over the Gentiles, but asks that the Gentiles on following moral righteousness may be admitted to their fellowship. He endeavours to avoid wounding Jewish pride while showing that the Law is rather a stumbling-block to them, "for where there is no [ceremonial] law, there is no [ceremonial] transgression" (iv. 15). Abraham received the promises before the Law was given. Abraham was to be the father of many nations; and thus the Gentiles by faith may become children of Abraham, though they are not children of Israel. God's righteousness comes by faith in Christ without a law (iii. 21, 22). But scarcely for a [legally] righteous man would one die, though for a good man one would readily even dare to die (v. 7). The arguments are addressed wholly to men whose minds were entangled in the words of the Hebrew Scriptures, and had been led by their slavery to the letter almost to confound moral rectitude with ceremonial righteousness. Hence there is a wide difference between this Epistle, and those which were addressed to such Gentile churches as had no leaning towards Judaism. Those readers treat Paul very unfairly who look for his religious opinions to his controversial epistles only.

PAUL AT CORINTH (Acts xviii. 2-18).

At Corinth Paul met with Aquilas and his wife Priscilla, two Jews who left Rome in consequence of the decree issued by the Emperor Claudius in A.D. 52, requiring all Jews to leave that city. Hence the Epistle to the Romans was written before the arrival of Aquilas at Corinth.

At Corinth Paul preached in the synagogue, but, as elsewhere, few of the Jews would listen to him. We may suppose that the arguments which he addressed to the Jews in the synagogue were those which he uses in his Epistle to the Romans. But they did not convince his hearers. He

shook his clothes at them, and said, "Henceforth I go to the Gentiles." He then withdrew, and preached in the house of Justus, a Greek convert. Two heads of the synagogue however followed him, namely Crispus and Sosthenes; and these, with Paul, were brought by the angry Jews before the Roman pro-consul on the charge of teaching a false religion.

At this time, Annæus Gallio was pro-consul of Achaia, an amiable enlightened man; and he would not help the Jews to persecute Paul. He was the brother of the philosopher Annæus Seneca, who was half a Christian, and he was uncle to Annæus Lucanus, the Roman poet. Gallio would not listen to the charges against Paul, and he had him released (Acts xviii. 17).

While living at Athens Paul's wants were in part supplied by wealthy friends who had accompanied him from Macedonia (2 Cor. xi. 9); probably by Jason of Thessalonica, and Sopater of Berea. He stayed at Corinth a year and a half, and then sailed with Aquilas and Priscilla from Cenchreæ to Ephesus (Acts xviii. 19).

At Ephesus he reasoned with the Jews in the synagogue, but he made no long stay there. He left his friends Aquilas and Priscilla there, and probably left there the writer of the Acts. He himself sailed for Cæsarea, from whence he went up, and made his fourth visit to Jerusalem, and from thence returned to Antioch (Acts xviii. 22).

PAUL'S THIRD MISSIONARY JOURNEY AND RETURN TO EPHESUS (Acts xviii. 23—xix. 1).

After some time spent at Antioch, Paul made a second journey through Galatia and Phrygia, strengthening the disciples whom he had before made there (Acts xviii. 23). We are not told who accompanied him on this journey; probably Titus, perhaps Timothy, but not the writer of the Acts, who was at this time at Ephesus.

While Paul was on this journey a certain Jew, named Apollos, a man learned in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus. He preached boldly in the synagogue, understanding only the teaching of John the Baptist. When Aquilas and Priscilla heard him, they taught him more perfectly the way of God; and then sent him forward on his journey to Achaia, with letters to the brethren at Corinth (Acts xviii. 27).

His philosophical opinions were not the same as those of Paul. He was an Alexandrian Jew, while Paul had been educated among the Pharisees of Jerusalem. His teaching made a schism in the church at Corinth, as will appear in Paul's First Epistle to that city; but it made no jealousy between him and Paul; they were in agreement as opposed to the more strictly Jewish party.

PAUL AT EPHEBUS (Acts xix.).

When Paul returned to preach at Ephesus he suffered much ill-treatment from the Jews and Jewish Christians. The latter denied to him the title of an apostle, and they were afterwards praised by the Apostle John for so doing, so high did the quarrel between the two parties run (Rev. ii. 2). Paul at length had to separate himself from the synagogue, as he had done at Corinth, and he gathered together his followers in the school-room of one Tyrannus, where he preached for two years (Acts xix. 10).

During this time the Emperor Claudius had died in A.D. 54, and the young Nero was made Emperor at the age of seventeen. Though his vices had already made him odious, yet his government was conducted at first with wisdom and justice by his tutor, the eminent philosopher Seneca; and the Jews were again allowed to live at Rome. At this time Paul's wish to visit that city revived, and he proposed to himself a second journey through Macedonia to Corinth, and thence to go to Rome (Acts xix. 21).

Stephanas, Fortunatus, and Achaicus, three Corinthians, came to Ephesus, bringing with them a supply for Paul's wants (1 Cor. xvi. 17). They may also have brought him news from that city which gave him some trouble. Apollos also came to Ephesus, perhaps travelling with these friends, and he then, for the first time, became known to Paul, and so far was the schism at Corinth, which was founded on their difference of opinion, from making any separation between them, that Paul begged him to visit Corinth again, and Apollos promised to do so as soon as he should be at leisure (1 Cor. xvi. 12).

Paul then, in preparation for his own journey to Macedonia and Achaia, sent off Timothy and Erastus, meaning to follow them shortly (Acts xix. 22). Erastus was an inhabitant of Corinth, and was returning to his own home,

where he remained during the rest of our history (2 Tim. iv. 20). They probably visited Thessalonica in their way to Greece, at least we shall find that Timothy did (1 Thess. iii. 5). They no doubt carried with them Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians.

Paul's preaching among the Jews had caused him to be turned out of the synagogue, and his preaching among the Greeks roused the anger of those who traded in silver shrines of the goddess Diana. For this Paul and his friends at Ephesus, Gaius and Aristarchus, suffered some violence from the people, who were further roused to anger against him by Alexander, one of the unfriendly Jews (Acts xix. 33). But he made many warm friends in that city, as we learn from the greetings sent to them in the fragment of an Epistle, written as we must suppose to Ephesus, though now joined to the end of the Epistle to the Romans. The writer of the Acts was all this time with Paul at Ephesus.

THE FIRST EPISTLE TO THE CORINTHIANS.

ITS DATE.

This Epistle was written from Ephesus (xvi. 8), after one visit to Corinth (ii. 1), when Paul hoped to pay a second visit to that city (xvi. 5), after Apollos had been there (iii. 6), and after Timothy, or at the time when Timothy had been sent there (xvi. 10).

ITS CONTENTS.

The Apostle reproves the Corinthians for their differences. The Judaizing party called themselves followers of Cephas, or Peter; the more philosophical, who perhaps allegorized in their reading the Scriptures, were followers of Apollos; and others, more particularly the Gentile converts, were followers of Paul (i.-iv.). He charges them to put away from among them a man who had been guilty of marrying his step-mother (v.). They had written to him asking his opinion about several matters. These questions he answers. The first is as to marriage. This he permits, but rather dissuades from it (vii.). The next is about eating meat which had been sacrificed to idols. He quotes their letter (viii. 4-6), and reproves their conceit of superior knowledge, and warns them that by eating such meat they may mislead those who are less enlightened (viii.). He justifies himself

and Barnabas for living upon bounty while preaching (ix.); and again warns them against eating anything which will give offence to others (x.). He orders the women to wear a veil, called a Power, when in the synagogue; and the Lord's Supper is not to be made a meal for satisfying hunger (xi.). About usefulness in spiritual matters, each must be useful in his own way (xiii.); but above all they must love one another (xiv.). He rehearses the evidence for Christ's having been raised from the dead, and argues from that that we also shall be raised, and not with our animal body, but with a spiritual body (xv.). Aquilas and Priscilla are with him in Ephesus, and the church meet for worship in their house (xvi.).

In this First Epistle to the Corinthians, written about twenty-five years after the Crucifixion of Jesus, there are three passages which make it probable that already some writings were in circulation among the disciples containing some of the words of their Master. Thus, in vi. 3, Paul says, "Know ye not that ye shall judge angels?" meaning those who have risen after death. He seems to refer to words which we find in Matt. xix. 28, where Jesus says that his apostles "will sit on twelve thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel." When, in vii. 10, he says, "Unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband," he may be quoting words which we find in Matt. xix. 9. When, in xiii. 2, he says, "Though I have all faith so that I could remove mountains," he may be referring to words now in Matt. xvii. 20, or xxi. 21. When we come to the Epistle to the Thessalonians we shall see still further reasons for thinking that the Sayings of Jesus had already been put in writing, and were in the hands of his followers, and that they afterwards were made part of the First Gospel.

PAUL'S FOURTH MISSIONARY JOURNEY:

The Second Visit to Greece; his Return to Philippi (Acts xx. 1-4).

When Paul left Ephesus for this journey he did not take the writer of the Acts with him; and hence we have no particulars of it. We only learn that Paul went through Macedonia into Greece, where he stayed three months, that from thence he wished to have sailed to Syria, but as the

Jews laid wait for him, he changed his purpose and returned through Macedonia to Philippi (Acts xx. 2, 3).

He probably did not go beyond Athens, as the historian does not use the word Achaia, the name which he gives to the province in which Corinth was situated, and whither Paul had purposed to go (Acts xix. 21). Here, and here only, does he use the word Hellas, or *Greece*.

To this scanty information we are able to add something from the Epistles.

First. Paul did not enter the city of Corinth, although he was in the neighbourhood. He had promised in 1 Cor. xvi. that he would visit them on this journey, but in the meantime he had received unfavourable accounts of them, and hence he would not see them until he heard of their repentance (2 Cor. i. 23).

Secondly. He met Titus in Macedonia, whom he had sent to Corinth on this sad business (2 Cor. vii. 6). He had sent him in haste with directions to return immediately, and he was disappointed at not meeting him at Troas, when he started on this journey (2 Cor. ii. 13). Titus may very possibly have been sent from Ephesus with Timothy and Erastus ; but they were to make some stay in Macedonia, while Titus was to go to Corinth and return as soon as he could.

Thirdly. Though Paul passed twice through Macedonia, yet neither on going to Greece nor on his returning did he visit Thessalonica. He wished to go there, but on both occasions he was hindered by fear of the Jews (1 Thess. ii. 18).

Fourthly. Neither Timothy nor Silas accompanied him on this journey, for after saying to the Thessalonians, "We wished to come unto you," that is, we, Paul, Sylvanus, and Timothy, whose names are at the head of the Epistle, he corrects himself, and says, "That is, I Paul did" (1 Thess. ii. 18).

Lastly. Though, while in Greece, Paul did not venture to take ship at Cenchreæ because of the Jews who laid wait for him, yet he did send off from that port, by the hands of Phœbe, a servant of the church there, an Epistle to Ephesus, of which we have a fragment now joined to the Epistle to the Romans.

THE FRAGMENT TO EPHESUS (Romans xii.—xv. 7, and xvi. 1-20).

ITS DATE.

This Epistle was written after Aquilas and Priscilla had made Ephesus their home, after Paul's visit to that city (Acts xviii. 19), after Paul had made a long stay in that city, and had made many friends there, with some of whom he had suffered imprisonment from the rulers (Acts xix.). It was sent from Cenchreæ, on the isthmus of Corinth. It mentions no friends as being with Paul.

ITS CONTENTS.

He charges his friends when ill-treated not to avenge themselves, to be obedient to the rulers, not to despise those who have scruples of conscience as to meats, or as to days. No food is unclean of itself, "but it is neither good to eat flesh nor drink wine, nor anything whereby thy brother [a Jew] stumbleth." "We that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak." Thus this is written to a church formed for the most part of Gentile converts. To them Paul speaks as with authority, in a manner very unlike that in which he speaks to the Jews of Rome.

PAUL AT PHILIPPI (Acts xx. 4, 5).

On his return from this hurried, and perhaps in some measure unsatisfactory, journey, Paul tarried for the winter at Philippi. He had with him there Sopater, of Berea, who had accompanied him from Macedonia, also Aristarchus and Secundus of Thessalonica, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timothy, who had rejoined him with news from Thessalonica. Tychicus and Trophimus, two Ephesians, were there also, with the writer of the Acts, whom Paul had before left at Ephesus (Acts xx. 4, 5). Sopater then turned homewards, and very possibly went to Corinth, whither, at that time, Paul again sent Titus, carrying his Second Epistle to the Corinthians. As Paul tells the Corinthians that with Titus he has sent "the brother whose praise in the Good Tidings is throughout all the churches" (2 Cor. viii. 16-18), we are tempted to conjecture that by this honourable name he means Sosipater, who was probably a man of wealth, and one of Paul's best friends and most powerful supporters on his journeys.

THE SECOND EPISTLE TO THE CORINTHIANS.

ITS DATE.

This was written when Paul had paid one visit to Corinth, and had made a second journey to Greece, but had, for reasons of his own, not entered Corinth a second time (i. 23), though he is willing, for their sake, to make the journey a third time (xii. 14). It was written when Timothy was with him (i. 1), after he had in Macedonia met with Titus, and heard from him about Corinth (vii. 5, 6). At no later time, after this stay at Philippi, do we find an opportunity for this Epistle to have been written. We have shown that it could not have been written earlier.

ITS CONTENTS.

Paul explains that it was because he would not come to Corinth in anger that he avoided their city on his second journey to Greece (i. ii.). He will speak plainly; the Israelites are blind, and when reading the Old Covenant, they do not understand it (iii.); but having himself received Christ's ministry he fears not, though he is troubled at the state of affairs (iv. v.). He charges them not to be yoked to unbelievers (vi.). In Macedonia, on his last journey, he was troubled on all sides; but when Titus came to him he was cheered by hearing of their obedience to his letter (vii.). He gives directions about the bounty which they are collecting for the poor of Jerusalem (viii. ix.). To a certain person who was unwilling to obey, who thought Paul only powerful in his letters, he promises to be equally powerful when he comes (x.). He boasts that he has not been a burden to them; his friends from Macedonia [Sopater and others] supplied his wants (xi.). He declares that he is as much a minister of Christ as the others, and he recounts his sufferings and his self-denial to prove it.

From Philippi also, at about the same time, was written the First Epistle to the Thessalonians.

THE FIRST EPISTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS.

ITS DATE.

This was written while Sylvanus [the writer of Acts] and Timothy were with Paul (i. 1); after Paul had been driven out of Thessalonica by the Jews and been sorely

persecuted by them; after he had once and a second time been hindered from visiting them as he passed through Macedonia, and after he had a second time sent Timothy to them, and Timothy had a second time rejoined him (ii. 17; iii. 6).

ITS CONTENTS.

Paul praises the Thessalonians for having turned to God from idols (i.). He reminds them of his care for them, and says that God's wrath has fallen upon the Jews for their forbidding him to convert the Gentiles (ii.). He speaks of his twice sending Timothy to them, once as mentioned in Acts xvii. 14, when he waited at Athens for him, and a second time from Ephesus, as mentioned in Acts xix. 22. He assures them of the pleasure with which he hears of their faith (iii.). He exhorts them to holiness, and to await the coming of the Lord, when the dead in Christ will arise, and those who are alive will be caught up into the clouds (iv.). They have no need to know when this will be, for the day of the Lord cometh as a thief in the night (v.).

In this Epistle, as before remarked on the First Epistle to the Corinthians, we seem to meet with evidence that the disciples already had in their hands some writings containing the Sayings of Jesus as reported in the First Gospel. When Paul says, in chap. v. 2, "You yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord cometh as a thief in the night," he tells us that his readers were familiar with words which we now meet with in Matt. xxiv. 43.

The Thessalonians seem to have sent an answer to this Epistle, showing that they were much frightened at its contents, at its warning as to the coming of Christ to earth; so much so that Paul thought it possible that they had also received some other Epistle written in his name. He therefore at once, and from the same place, wrote for their comfort a Second Epistle.

SECOND EPISTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS.

ITS CONTENTS.

He praises them for their patience under persecution (i.). He begs them not to be troubled by any letter which they may receive as if written by him, saying that the day of the

Lord is at hand. For there must be a falling off from the faith, and then the Man of sin must be laid bare, and be consumed by the breath of the Lord's mouth (ii.). Lest there should be any mistake about the Epistle he adds the greeting in his own handwriting (iii.).

Whom Paul meant by the Man of sin we do not know. We know of no one of those who were at the time opposing the spread of Christianity, who was of such importance as to be so spoken of. Before this time the Emperor Claudius, who drove the Jews out of Jerusalem, had died, and the young Nero, under the advice of the philosopher Annæus Seneca, was governing mildly; he had not yet begun to persecute the Christians.

Another Epistle, probably written at this time from Philippi, was that to the Galatians.

THE EPISTLE TO THE GALATIANS.

ITS DATE.

This Epistle seems to have been written about seventeen years after Paul left Damascus (i. 17—ii. 1). But it contains no names of Paul's friends who were with him, nor of greetings to friends by name in Galatia, nor names of places which he had come from or was going to. But when he was at Philippi, and sending messengers to Troas, it may have been a suitable time for sending to Galatia.

ITS CONTENTS.

Of course Paul, when he visited Galatia, had taught in the spirit of his own writings, that the Jewish law was not binding upon Gentile converts to Christianity. But we find that since he had been in those parts some teacher from the church in Jerusalem had been teaching them somewhat differently, and from the tone of Paul's present Epistle we learn that the opinions they had lately been taught were strictly those set forth in the Epistle of James. If we suppose for a moment that James's Epistle is an answer to that of Paul to the Romans, and again that this to the Galatians is a reply to James, we shall best understand the argument. Paul had said that works, meaning ceremonial works, were worthless, and that faith, or trust in God, was what was required of us; and James had said that faith, meaning belief,

was worthless without works, meaning good deeds. Each may have misunderstood the other's use of the words Faith and Works, or may have thought that such use of the words would lead to error.

Paul, after greeting the churches of Galatia, regrets that they have turned from the Good Tidings which he had taught, towards Judaizing opinions. He says that he also was once a zealous Jew until God called him by his grace to preach to the Gentiles (i.); that he had very little intercourse with the apostles in his first and second visit to Jerusalem after his conversion; that Peter, when he came to Antioch, had been willing to eat with the Greeks until certain persons came down from James, when he separated himself; and then Paul charged him with dissembling (ii.). He says that Abraham's faith was counted for righteousness; that as many as have faith are sons of Abraham; that the Galatians had been idolaters, and that to return to be under a ceremonial law is to return to bondage (iii.). He argues with great ingenuity that the Jews of Jerusalem, being in bondage to the Law, must be considered as children of Hagar, Abraham's bondmaid; and that the Gentile converts, who are free from such bondage, are the children of the free-woman, Abraham's wife Sarah (iv.). He exhorts them to stand fast in the freedom that Christ had given them, to crucify the flesh and live by the spirit (v.). The Epistle is written with his own hand (vi.).

PAUL'S FIFTH VISIT TO JERUSALEM (Acts xx. 6—xxi. 17).

Paul, before sailing from Philippi, sent on Tychicus and Trophimus, and they waited for him at Troas (Acts xx. 5). Five days later Paul, with Aristarchus and Secundus of Thessalonica, Gaius of Derbe, and Timothy and the writer, followed them, probably in a hired vessel, which could sail or wait at their pleasure. They overtook their friends at Troas, where they abode seven days (Acts xx. 6).

From Troas Paul sends his friends by the ship round the promontory to Assos, intending to go there himself on foot (Acts xx. 13).

At Troas he left with Carpus his bag, containing among other things books and blank parchments (2 Tim. iv. 13). It was probably by a mistake that these things were not put into the ship.

At Assos he joined his friends and sailed to Mitylene, to the island of Samos, to Trogyllium, and to Miletus (Acts xx. 14, 15).

From Miletus he sent to Ephesus for the elders of the church, who came to him there, and received his advice (Acts xx. 17-38).

Thence, sailing by Coos and Rhodes, they came to Patara, where they left the ship which had brought them there, which they had probably hired for their own use, and sailed in another ship, a merchant vessel, which was going to Tyre (Acts xxi. 3).

From Tyre they went to Ptolemais, and then to Cæsarea (Acts xxi. 7, 8). From thence they went to Jerusalem (Acts xxi. 17).

PAUL AT JERUSALEM AND CÆSAREA (Acts xxi. 17—xxvi.).

At Jerusalem Paul went through the ceremony of purifying himself after his journey, before entering the courts of the Temple, and with some others he proceeded to offer an offering every day for seven days to signify the accomplishment of the days of purification. But before these days were ended the Jews stirred up a riot against him, charging him with having brought Trophimus, who was a Greek, into the Temple; and they would have killed him, if the captain of the Roman troops had not come down with soldiers from the castle of Antonia and saved him.

The captain chained him with two chains, probably to a soldier on each side of him, and thus led him towards the castle. When he reached the steps which led from the court of the Gentiles into the castle, he obtained leave of the captain to speak to the people, which he did in the Hebrew tongue.

He was then taken into the castle, and with the cruelty usual among the Romans towards all accused persons of foreign birth, he would have been at once scourged, had he not been able to plead that he was born a Roman citizen (Acts xxii.).

The next day the captain called upon his accusers to say what they had against him; but on learning that his life was in danger in Jerusalem he sent him with a guard to the proconsul Felix at Cæsarea. There Paul spent two years in prison, as Felix hoped that Paul's friends would bribe him to loose him (Acts xxiv.).

While in prison at Cæsarea, Porcius Festus, the new proconsul, arrived to take the place of Felix, who had been recalled by the Emperor Nero for misconduct. This was in A.D. 60. Festus asked Paul if he were willing to go back to Jerusalem to be tried by the Jews, as he was accused of an offence against the Jewish law ; but Paul, well knowing what his fate would be in Jerusalem, appealed as a Roman citizen to be tried by the Emperor (Acts xxvi.). He was accordingly given in charge to a centurion who was taking to Rome a number of prisoners for the same purpose. Though it was a rare thing for a Jew to have the privilege of appeal, every criminal of Roman birth had that valuable privilege.

PAUL'S VOYAGE TO ROME (Acts xxvii., xxviii. 16).

The vessel in which the centurion sailed with Paul and his other prisoners was a merchant ship, going to Adramyttium, in the province of Asia, carrying other passengers ; and thus any of Paul's friends were at liberty to accompany him, and several did so. The young Titus went to wait on him ; his very good friend Aristarchus of Thessalonica, and the writer of the Acts, went also ; and also Trophimus, and probably Tychicus. There may have been others (Acts xxvii. 2).

From Josephus the historian's Life of Himself, we judge that he sailed as a passenger in the same vessel. Josephus indeed says that he was then twenty-six years of age, and he thus places his voyage to Rome three years later than that of the Apostle. But we can correct this by his own narrative, which says that the Jewish prisoners, with whom he sailed and was shipwrecked, were sent to Rome by Felix the procurator of Judea.

The vessel touched at Sidon, sailed under shelter of the island of Cyprus, then over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia to Myra in Lycia (Acts xxvii. 5).

There the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing for Italy, and put his prisoners therein (Acts xxvii. 6). The other passengers also went on board that ship.

As the wind was against them they sailed slowly along the coast for many days till they came to Cnidus, in Asia (Acts xxvii. 7). There we must suppose that Trophimus of Ephesus was put on shore, as he had been with Paul

in Jerusalem, and afterwards Paul says that he left him at Miletus sick (2 Tim. iv. 20). Miletus is a few miles to the north of Cnidus, and about the same distance to the south of Ephesus.

From thence they sailed towards Crete, and as the wind was still against them, they with difficulty passed the point of Salmone, and reached Fair Havens, near the city of Lasæa (Acts xxvii. 8).

There Paul left Titus to appoint elders in each city, and otherwise order the churches (Titus i. 5).

After they left Crete the wind rose on the very first day into a furious storm, blowing for fourteen days together, from the east-north-east. They first lowered the sail; the next day they began to throw the cargo overboard, and on the third day they threw over the mast and mainsail (Acts xxvii. 19). They feared that the wind would have carried them on to the coast of Africa, but having yet a small foresail they contrived to steer a little northward, and so ran upon the island of Malta, where the vessel was wrecked, but all on board were saved. They had been driven forward in a straight course for fourteen days.

After the shipwreck on the island of Malta, where they stayed for three months, they sailed away in another ship, which had wintered there, and they reached Puteoli in safety, and thence went on to Rome (Acts xxviii. 16).

PAUL AT ROME (Acts xxviii. 16-31).

On arriving at Rome the prisoners were delivered to the captain of the Pretorian camp, within which fortified place Paul was allowed to dwell by himself with a soldier that kept him. For this and his other expensive comforts he was probably indebted to his friend Aristarchus.

It would seem that he found no acquaintance at Rome; nor was he very favourably received by the Jews there; but he dwelt for two years in his own hired house, and had leave to preach to all who came to him (Acts xxviii.). From Rome Paul wrote several Epistles; perhaps the earliest of these is that to the Ephesians.

THE EPISTLE TO THE EPHESIANS.

This may have been a general epistle to the churches in

Asia, as in some MSS. the title "To the Ephesians" is omitted, and in Coloss. iv. 16, it is spoken of as if written to the Laodiceans.

ITS DATE.

The apostle says that he is a prisoner. Timothy is not joined with him in the introductory verse; but as the Epistle is to be sent by a messenger, who also carries other Epistles, of which Timothy was the writer, it may have been written very shortly before Timothy came to Rome. Timothy may have arrived between the time when the Epistle was written and when it was sent.

ITS CONTENTS.

He says that God had made known to him the mystery of His wise purpose, that in the fulness of time the Gentiles should be gathered in to be one with the Jews in Christ (i.). [This would seem to be the great truth which came upon him on the road to Damascus.] He reminds his readers that they were Gentiles, but are now fellow-citizens with the saints (ii.), and that to him it was intrusted to preach this truth to the Gentiles (iii.). He adds much valuable advice of a general character, as was natural in an Epistle which is to be read by several churches. It is to be sent by Tychicus, but whether Tychicus had accompanied him from Jerusalem, or had joined him since, does not appear (vi.).

Before this Epistle was sent off, Timothy and a number of other friends had arrived in Rome, and among them Epaphroditus, who had brought him a gift from Philippi, and with them Onesimus, a slave, who had escaped from his master, Philemon. Onesimus came to Rome as the safest place of refuge, and meeting with Paul, whom he had known as his master's friend, offered himself into his service. He gave Paul some news of Philemon's family, and that Philemon's son Archippus had devoted himself to the spread of Christianity. Under Paul's advice he now returns to his master, and carries the following Epistle.

EPISTLE OF PAUL TO PHILEMON.

ITS CONTENTS.

Paul and Timothy greet Philemon and his wife Apphia,

and their son Archippus, whom Paul styles a fellow-labourer, and the church which meets for worship in their house. He entreats Philemon to receive back Onesimus, and to forgive him ; and if he has wronged him aught, Paul promises to repay it, writing the Epistle with his own hand to make the promise binding. Epaphras, Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke are now with him. Paul hopes soon to be released and to come to Philemon.

At the same time was written

THE EPISTLE TO THE COLOSSIANS.

ITS DATE.

It is sent by the same messenger as the Epistle to the Ephesians. Paul is a prisoner at Rome, the friends last mentioned are with him.

ITS CONTENTS.

He thanks God for the hope which is laid up in heaven for the Gentiles through Christianity, as they have been taught by Epaphras. This is the mystery which has been hidden for ages, but is now made manifest (i.). He warns them not to be robbed by philosophy which is after the rudiments of religion, and not after Christ ; and to let no man judge them in respect to meats and drinks, or new moons and sabbaths [as the Judaizers would], or to beguile them into voluntary humility and angel worship [as possibly Barnabas would] (ii.). He adds some good advice, writing as to disciples, and sends to them Tychicus and Onesimus with greetings from Aristarchus, Justus, Epaphras, Luke, Demas, and Mark the nephew of Barnabas. Of Barnabas he has given commands, probably warnings as to his teaching ; but he bids them rather coldly to receive him. This Epistle, when read, is to be sent on to the church of Laodicea, and they are to read that which will be sent them from Laodicea, meaning our Epistle to the Ephesians (iv).

After a time Paul's prospects of a release from his imprisonment seem brightening. He had asked Philemon to prepare a lodging for him. He had gained some friends in the Emperor's household. This introduction he may have received through Josephus, the historian, who was ac-

quainted with Aliturus, a Jew, an actor of plays in Nero's service. Josephus in his *Life* boasts that before he left Rome he had obtained a promise from the Empress Poppea that the prisoners whom he had accompanied to Rome should be set at liberty. He does not mention Paul's name, but he was a time-serving man, and when he wrote his *Life*, nearly fifty years later, he thought it prudent to know nothing about the Christians. Poppea became Nero's wife in A.D. 59, two years before Paul arrived in Rome.

Epaphras, who had brought Paul some needful supplies, was now returning home, and by him he sends

THE EPISTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

ITS CONTENTS.

He thanks the Philippians for their bounty. His imprisonment has been a means of spreading Christianity through the Pretorian camp where he was living (i.) He is still uncertain of his fate, and how long his imprisonment may continue, and means soon to send Timothy to inquire after their welfare; but in the mean time he sends back their messenger, Epaphroditus, with this Epistle.

After sending Tychicus to Ephesus and Epaphras to Philippi with these Epistles, Paul next sent Timothy to Ephesus to take charge of the church in that city (2 Tim. iv. 19). Or perhaps Timothy left Rome at the same time as those two friends.

PAUL IS RELEASED FROM PRISON.

Soon after this time the charge against Paul, for which he had appealed to the Emperor, had been heard, and he had been "delivered out of the lion's mouth" (2 Tim. iv. 17). He is now free to leave Rome, and he proposes to do so before the winter. His plan seems to have been to go to Brundisium in the south of Italy, and from thence to cross the Adriatic Gulf to Nicopolis, and there to winter with Titus, who is to meet him there. From Nicopolis he could pass through Macedonia, and from thence sail for Asia to his friend Philemon, as he had promised. With this plan he writes to Titus to meet him at Nicopolis.

THE EPISTLE TO TITUS.

This seems to have been written to Crete, where Paul had

dropped Titus on the voyage to Rome. He hopes to be able to send Artemas or Tychicus to him, perhaps as bearer of this Epistle. He desires him to go to Nicopolis. He does not say what friends are with him, though he sends their greetings. He gives him advice about the church which is under his care, and directs him to avoid foolish questions about the Law, and about genealogies, meaning perhaps such as those at the beginning of Matthew and Luke.

We saw in Paul's Epistle to Philemon that he looked forward to a favourable issue when his appeal was heard; yet at the moment it must have come upon him by surprise, or he would hardly have sent off Timothy; and he now writes his last Epistle from Rome, called, in mistake, the Second Epistle to Timothy, in which he relates to him his present circumstances, and presses him to return to Rome before the winter.

THE SECOND EPISTLE TO TIMOTHY.

He writes to Timothy with great affection and full trust in his good conduct; but in a melancholy tone, as if worn out by the struggle and difficulties which he has gone through. Of his intimate friends Luke alone is with him. He desires him to come to him before the winter, and to bring Mark with him, as he shall find him useful to him in his missionary efforts. He sends greetings to Aquilas and Priscilla. He mourns over Phygellus and Hermogenes, two Ephesians, who had turned from his views of Christianity. The latter was probably one of the two persons whom, under the more familiar names of Hermas and Hermes, he had greeted as friends in the Fragment to Ephesus (Rom. xvi. 14). Hymenæus and Philetus are two other Ephesians who have strayed from the truth, whom Timothy is advised to shun, but he is particularly to be on his guard against Alexander the coppersmith, who did Paul much harm, and was spokesman for the opposing Jews during the riot in the theatre at Ephesus, as related in Acts xix. Titus is gone to Dalmatia, so he had received news of him since writing to ask him to meet him at Nicopolis. Though some friends had deserted him, he had made some new friends: Linus, who was afterwards a bishop of the church in Rome, Pudens

with his British wife Claudia, who had been both warmly praised by the poet Martial on their marriage.

We have no knowledge of the Apostle's last days in Rome. When he left Italy he probably went, as he proposed, to Nicopolis, and thence to Colossæ. This is made probable from our finding that he went to Ephesus, which was on the way to Colossæ. He afterwards went to Macedonia (1 Tim. 13). There we lose sight of him, and do not know from what place he wrote his last Epistle, called in mistake the First Epistle to Timothy.

THE FIRST EPISTLE TO TIMOTHY.

ITS CONTENTS.

Paul again warns Timothy against Hymenæus and Alexander, whom he had mentioned in his former Epistle. He had lately been at Ephesus, where he had found Timothy, and where he left him. Paul had then gone into Macedonia. But from what place this Epistle is written does not appear.

He charges Timothy to persevere in the course of duty on which he has entered, and expresses full trust in him. He gives directions about the duties of the various persons in the church, and about Timothy himself as the overseer, or bishop.

After this we lose all further trace of the Apostle in the pages of the New Testament. He had been sent a prisoner to Rome after Midsummer A.D. 60. He had reached Rome in the spring of A.D. 61. He lived there for two years. He may have left Rome in the autumn of A.D. 63. In the very next year there broke out in that city a memorable fire, for which the Emperor Nero laid the blame on the Christians, and began a cruel persecution against them. This may explain why we then meet with a blank in the history of Christianity for some few years, and why we are left in uncertainty about the Apostle Paul's end.

THE END.



t
 r
 r
 t
 B
 a
 w
 D
 n
 n
 E
 i
 r
 r
 e
 e
 c

HJews
S5325h

112395.

Author Sharpe, Samuel.

Title The history of the Hebrew nation. Ed. 3.

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO
LIBRARY

Do not
remove
the card
from this
Pocket.

Acme Library Card Pocket
Under Pat. "Ref. Index File."
Made by LIBRARY BUREAU

